The Alpha and Omega of Creation

Teachings from Heaven

Volume 10: The Spiritual Journey of the Soul

Preserved and presented by
Samuel Ronci

The Alpha and Omega of Creation
Teachings from Heaven

Volume 1: Secrets of Creation

Volume 2: The Soul and Life of Adam

Volume 3: The Childhood of Jesus

Volume 4: The Public Life and Passion of Jesus Christ

Volume 5: Holy Spirit & End Time Vineyard Workers

Volume 6: The Church of Christ

Volume 7: God Corrects Misguided Teachings and Errors

Volume 8: End Time Prophesies

Volume 9: The Apocalypse and Beyond

Volume 10: The Spiritual Journey of the Soul

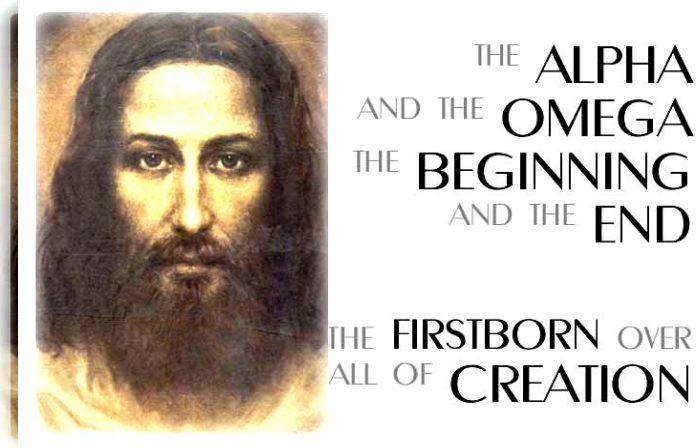
Volume 11: The Last Seven Years of Earth

Volume 12: Advanced Teachings from Heaven

Visit www.alphaandomegaofcreation.org
for a free download of all volumes.

Last update 8/10/2025

The Alpha and Omega of Creation Series



The Alpha and Omega of Creation Series: reveals the journey of the soul from the beginning of creation to its end where God the Father reveals, in great detail, His Divine plan of salvation that leads the soul back to God.

1. **Vol_1_Secrets of Creation:** Reveals the Mysteries of the Primordial God, God's Only Begotten Son, The Secret of Creation, The World of Thought, Life of Spirits and Cosmic Life, Can Man See God? Mystery of the Holy Trinity, What are Angel? The Real Original Sin, The Cause and Origin of Creation, My Father's House, Stars a Dwelling Place for Souls, God Creates Man. . .

2. **Vol_ 2_The Soul and Life of Adam:** Immortality of the Soul, Relationship between Body, Soul and Spirit, What is Man? The Purpose and Reason of Earthly Life, Pre-Adamites, The Creation of Other Human Beings, The Descendants of Adam, Death Enters the World, Where do Prehistoric Animals Come From? How did the Black Race Begin? Adam and Cains Experiments with Genetic Manipulation, Cain's Curse and Fight, The Real Consequences of Original Sin, Man Begins Again and much more. . .

3. **Vol_3_The Childhood of Jesus:** The Messianic Cycle Begins, The Immaculate Conception of Mary, Mary is betrothed to Joseph, God enters the world in the visible image of Jesus, The Star of Bethlehem, The Three Wise Men, Herod's Plot to Kill Jesus, The Family Flees to Egypt, The Childhood of Jesus, The Miracle Work of Jesus, Jesus journey to the Temple, Jesus is Examined in the Temple, Jesus three days in the temple, The Arrival of Joseph and Mary in the Temple, The Death of St Joseph. . .

4. **Vol_4_The Public Life and Passion of Jesus Christ:** Gospel verses explained through the Sermons of Jesus Christ**,** The Transfiguration of Christ, The Spiritual Significance of the Glorification of Christ, Who is to be the Christ? The Earth as an Altar, Farewell to the Mother, The Passover Supper, The

Washing of the Feet, The Parable of the Last Supper and the Bread of Life, Jesus' Victory over Death, The Descent of the Holy Spirit. And, The Passion of Christ, Jesus Descended into the Abyss, The Resurrection and Eternal Life, The Ascension of Jesus, The Coming of the Holy Spirit…

5. **Vol**._5_**The Holy Spirit and End Time Vineyard Workers**: Conditions and Prerequisites for the Outpouring of the Holy Spirit, The Workings of the Spirit, When the Holy Spirit is Present, Gifts of the Spirit, Workings of the Spirit, Wrong Interpretation of the Scriptures, Prerequisites for Hearing God's Voice, Dialogue with the Father, God's Appointed Servants, Laborers for God's Kingdom, Task to Spread the Truth, The Church of Christ. . .

6. **Vol_6_The Church of Christ:** The Vision of St Stephan, Martyrdom of the Apostles, History of the Ancient Church, Christians of the First Century, The Church of Christ in its Beginning, The Church Becomes an Institution, The Baptism of Jesus, A Great Truth about Salvation, Prophecies of the Blessed Mother, Satan Attacks the Church, The Second Vatican Council and the Fate of the Roman Catholic Church. . .

7. **Vol_7_God Corrects Misguided Teachings and Errors:** Doubting God's Existence, Wrong Images of God, Questioning God's Perfection, False Doctrine about the Trinity, Wrong Interpretations of the Bible, Elimination of a Near End, Distorted Divine Word, Doubting God's Revelations, Wrong Concept of Church, Infallibility of the Head of the Church, Sacraments – Wrong Interpretation of Jesus' Words, Mans Lack of Spiritual Knowledge. . .

8. **Vol_8_End Time Prophesies:** Our Lady Speaks about 5 Signs, Secularism, Rationalism, Sin Causes War, Battle Between Heaven and Hell, They Will Desecrate the Church, The Stars Will Fall from the Sky, A Generation Without God, Mary's Tears of Blood, St Malachy the 112 Pope, Earths Time, Signs of the Great Tribulation, Climate Change, The World will Crash Down in the End. . .

9. **Vol_9_ The Apocalypse and Beyond**: Satan's Century, Progress of Man, Science / Knowledge, Satan Splits and Divides, UFO's, The Nature and Purpose of the Moon, NASA's Project Blue Beam, Space Travel, Inhabitants of Other Worlds, The Huge Red Dragon, The Woman Clothed with The Sun, The Keys that Open the Abyss, WW III, The Earth is Changing, The Fall of Babylon, The Holy Remnant, the New Banishment. . .

10. **Vol_10_The Spiritual Journey of the Soul:** Every Soul is an Original Spirit, The Souls Process of Pre-Development, Composition of the Soul, Spiritual Rebirth, The Path of Return to God, Overcoming Matter, Immortality of the Soul, The Death Phenomenon, The Souls Fate in the Beyond, Sequence of

Events when the Soul Leaves the Body, Beyond the Threshold, Entering the Kingdom of Light. . .

11. **Vol_11_The Last Seven Years of Earth**: The Journey of the Primordial God to the Man God, The Last Seven Years of Earth, The Three Days of Darkness, The Rapture Explained, The Cult World of Freemasonry. The Keys of Peter. . .

12. **Vol._12_ Advanced Teachings from Heaven:** Knock and the Door Shall be Opened, Secrets of Life, The Spiritual Sun, The Kingdom of Darkness and Unbelief, A Visit to the Carmelites, The Seven Words of Christ on the Cross

"Lord, I place my hands upon Your Word. I ask you to imprint Your Word upon my heart and give me the wisdom to understand it and the grace to live it. Take my life Lord this day and every day of my life. Lead me in the path of light and righteousness so that I may be with You now and forever, Amen." Ref: Christina Gallagher Aug 2016

In Honor of The Holy Spirit

May the Holy Spirit descend upon you and fill you with love and wisdom, as you journey through space and time, to discover the wonders of creation as the Father reveals His Divine Plan for mankind. May the Magnificat of the Blessed Mother's "yes" be your "yes" as you open your heart and mind to receive knowledge, truth, and understanding that only the Holy Spirit can give.

"When the Paraclete comes, the Spirit of truth who comes from the Father – and whom I Myself will send from the Father – He will bear witness on My behalf. He will guide you to all truth."

(John 15, 26-27; 16:13)

The Spirit of Truth Prayer

Holy Spirit baptize me with the fire of your love. I have surrendered to you the best of my ability, and now I want to activate Your Spirit of Love within me. I need Your power in my life. Please fill me now. I believe that as I yield and ask, You will release Your strength, wisdom, healing, and love to meet the needs of the hour. Work in me in a powerful way. I want every purpose God has for my life to be fulfilled, and I need you, mighty Spirit of God, to bring that purpose to fulfillment. Release Your Spirit within me, Amen.

They shall all be taught by God

John 6:41-51

Acknowledgement

Very special thanks for the works of all those that were quoted in this book, and for the dedication and support of those that helped make these books possible.

In Matthew's Gospel, Matthew starts out by defining the Genealogy of Jesus. It took 42 generations of people to prepare the way for the coming of the Lord. Some had a big part to play and others had a smaller part, all of which were necessary. It's when you put all these works together that the tapestry of God's plan for mankind can be seen more clearly. Are we in fact preparing the way for the return of Jesus in Glory?

Come, Holy Spirit, fill the hearts of Thy faithful and enkindle in them the fire of Thy love. Send forth Thy Spirit and they shall be created, and Thou shall renew the face of the earth. O God, Who didst instruct the hearts of the faithful by the light of the Holy Spirit, grant us in the same Spirit to be truly wise, and ever to rejoice in His consolation through Christ our Lord. Amen.

The Holy Spirit is alive in everyone, and He guides and directs us along our earthly journey. Pray to the Lord every day so that His Spirit will lead the Truth to your heart of love.

Become an Apostle of Truth

Truth only comes from God and before the world can come to an end, as we know it, the truth must be revealed. How will this be done? The Lord will accomplish this by using his prophets; the same way He used the prophets in the Old Testament which also contains the Book of the Prophets.

This work presents the teachings that were given, by the Lord, to the prophets of our time that are located throughout the world. When these teachings are brought together, they present a clear picture of the events that will lead us to the return of Jesus in Glory and the end of a period of salvation.

Jesus is speaking: "All the strands of this Mission are being drawn together to form a pattern. Then, when the various parts are linked and fitted together, like the pieces of a jigsaw, when all the pieces begin to merge, the final picture will become clear." Ref: MDM message Jan 24, 2014

The 'final picture' has been assembled and presented in the twelve volumes of the Alpha and Omega of Creation Series

Become an Apostle of truth by passing on the Lord's teachings to family and friends. The Lord has revealed the past, the present and the future. You can't even begin to comprehend His love for you unless you understand the very beginning, only then will you understand who you really are and how great is His love for you.

God Bless
Samuel Ronci

The Spiritual Journey Of the Soul – overview

Jesus is speaking: You asked Me for three words and, it goes without saying, for their explanation. Well, I gave you these three significant words: heaven, hell and earth. Now we will see what can be extracted from these three words that may be elevating, edifying and instructive for you, as well as for mankind as a whole:

The Journey of the Soul is broken-down into six chapters:

Chapter 1: The Spiritual Journey of the Soul: First Created Being, Act of Creating, Process of Creation and Apostasy of the Beings, The Fall of Angels, The Process of Creation has taken Eternities, Development of the Soul, Immortality of the Soul, God's Plan for Man, The Soul's Process of Development, Composition of the Soul, The Human Beings task on Earth, The Soul and The Spiritual Spark in the Human Being, Incarnation, Earthly Task Volition And much more….

Chapter 2: Continuation of Life after Death: Continuation of Life after Death, Belief in the Soul's Continuation of Life, Early Death – God's Mercy – Old Age, Fear of Death, Fear of Dying – beholding the spiritual kingdom, Consider the Time of Death, Hour of Death – explanation of suffering, Hour of Death Without Fear – readiness, The Soul's Change of Abode . . .

Chapter 3: The Resurrection Event: The Resurrection of the Body, "Youngest Judgement", The Sequence of Events when the Soul Leaves the Body, The Two Resurrections, God Leads Man to Eternal Bliss, The Path of Return to God, Love is the Key to the Spiritual Kingdom. . .

Chapter 4: The Souls Fate in the Beyond: About Life and Death in the Beyond, Different Spheres in the Spiritual Kingdom, A Death Experience, The Sleep of the Soul – misguided teaching, The Appearance of a Spirit, Experiences in the Beyond, The Soul's Fate in the Beyond, Helplessness in the Beyond, the Souls' Great Darkness in the Beyond, God's Justice Demands Atonement, Needy Souls Beg for Prayers, The Souls Fate after Death Varies. . .

Chapter 5: Beyond the Threshold - Death bed scenes: A Famous Man. A Scholar, A Rich Man, A Young Lady of Fashion, A General, A Pope, A Minister, A Poor Man, Bishop Martin, and Reunion in the Great Beyond . . .

Chapter 6: Entering the Spiritual Kingdom: The Soul's Entry into the Kingdom of Light, In My Father's House are many Mansions, "Eye has not seen," Spiritual Creations – Beatitude – Eye has not seen, Land of Peace, Other Worlds, Diversity of Stars, Stars – dwelling place for souls, Activity in the Beyond, Separate Worlds, Androgynous Beings – beyond . . .

SPECIAL TESTIMONY: Gloria Polo Ortiz - Gloria Polo died after being terribly burned by a lightning bolt on May 5, 1995, in Bogotá, Colombia; she was judged, and then came back to life.

Table of Contents

Table of Contents

THE ALPHA AND OMEGA OF CREATION SERIES **3**

ACKNOWLEDGEMENT **7**

BECOME AN APOSTLE OF TRUTH **8**

THE SPIRITUAL JOURNEY OF THE SOUL – OVERVIEW 9

TABLE OF CONTENTS **11**

PRIVATE REVELATION **17**

NEW REVELATIONS – REASON - BIBLE 17
A WORD ABOUT PRIVATE REVELATION 18
REASON FOR THE PROFOUND KNOWLEDGE 19
INFILLING OF THE HOLY SPIRIT PRAYER 22

CHAPTER 1: THE SPIRITUAL JOURNEY OF THE SOUL **23**

INTRODUCTION - HEAVEN, HELL AND EARTH 24
FIRST CREATED BEING - LIGHT BEARER - APOSTASY FROM GOD 32
ACT OF CREATING THE SPIRITUAL BEINGS 35
PROCESS OF CREATION AND APOSTASY OF THE BEINGS 38
THE FALL OF THE ANGELS – 1 40
THE FALL OF THE ANGELS - 2 41
CAUSE AND ORIGIN OF CREATION 43
CREATION IS GOD'S WORK 45
THE PROCESS OF CREATION HAS TAKEN ETERNITIES. 46
THE TRANSFORMATION OF THE ORIGINAL SPIRIT INTO CREATIONS 48
DEVELOPMENT OF THE SOUL - ORIGINAL SPIRIT 50
EVERY SOUL IS AN ORIGINAL SPIRIT – THE SOUL OF JESUS 51
SELF-AWARENESS OF THE ORIGINAL SPIRIT 53
IMMORTALITY OF THE SOUL 54
GOD'S PLAN FOR MAN 55
THE SOUL'S PROCESS OF DEVELOPMENT BEFORE EMBODIMENT 57
COMPOSITION OF THE SOUL - MINIATURE CREATION 58
THE SOUL'S PROCESS OF PRE-DEVELOPMENT 59
PROCESS OF MANS DEVELOPMENT ON EARTH 60
DEVELOPMENT OF EARTH AND HUMAN BEING 62
THE HUMAN BEING'S TASK ON EARTH - CHILDSHIP TO GOD 64
BECOMING GOD'S 'CHILDREN' - CHILDSHIP TO GOD 65
WHO WAS EMBODIED IN ADAM? 66

God Breathed a Living Soul into Adam 68
The Soul - The Spiritual Spark in the Human Being 69
Life - Awakening the Divine Spark in the Person 70
Spiritual Rebirth 71
Further Explanation Regarding the Soul 72
Incarnation – Instincts - Preliminary stages 75
Will for Descendants - waiting souls 76
The Soul - Recreate and Super-create 77
Everything that Happens Serves to Perfect the Soul 78
The Purpose and Reason of Earthly Life - A 79
The Purpose and Reason of Earthly Life - B 80

CHAPTER 2: CONTINUATION OF LIFE AFTER DEATH 83

Continuation of Life after Death 84
Belief in the Soul's Continuation of Life 84
Immortality of the Soul - 1 85
Immortality of the Soul - 2 85
Consider the End 86
Serious Admonition to consider the Life after Death 87
Early Death - God's Mercy - Old Age 88
Death 89
The Death Phenomenon 89
Death can be Easy or Difficult 90
Fear of Death 91
Fear of Dying - Beholding the Spiritual Kingdom before Death 92
Consider the Time after Death 93
Hour of Death - Explanation of Suffering 94
Hour of Death without Fear - Readiness 95
The Soul's change of Abode - Death of the Body 96
Cremation - Accelerated Disintegration Process 97
Burial or Cremation - Why Decompose Slowly 98
Why Decompose Slowly 98
The Burning and Embalming of Dead Bodies 100
Earthly Task: Volition - Wrong Endeavour 101

CHAPTER 3: THE RESURRECTION EVENT 103

The Resurrection Event - 1Cor15:50 104
The Resurrection of the Body in the Eyes of the Catholic Church and According to New Revelation 104
The Gospel of Luke and the 'Youngest Judgement' 106
The Sequence of Events when the Soul Leaves the Body 109
The Two Resurrections – the body joins the soul 110
God Leads Man to Eternal Bliss – the resurrection of the body 111
The Sleep of the Soul - Misguided Teaching 112
Return to God necessitates Sincerity of Will 113
The Path of Return to God 114
Duration of Returning to God 115
Overcoming Matter - Spiritual Kingdom 117
Union with God - The Human Being's Goal 118
Love is the Key to the Spiritual Kingdom 119
Jesus Christ, Leads us on the Right Path 120
Jesus, the good Shepherd 121

CHAPTER 4: THE SOULS FATE IN THE BEYOND 123

About Life after Death and in the Beyond 124

Different Spheres in the Spiritual Kingdom 124
A Death Experience 126
Do not Forfeit your Eternal Life 128
God Offers Himself to You in the Eucharist – My Word 129
Death in the Mystical Body 131
How Difficult is it to Repent in the Beyond 131
The Appearance of a Spirit 133
Experiences in the Beyond 133
Guidance in the Beyond 135
The Souls' Fate in the Beyond 137
Helplessness in the Beyond 138
The Souls' Great Hardship in the Beyond 139
The Souls' State of Darkness in the Beyond 141
God's Justice Demands Atonement 142
Fate in Eternity Corresponds to Will - Love of Matter is Wrong 143
Fate in the Beyond 144
Involuntarily Premature Deceased People - Beyond 145
Suicide - Fate in the Beyond 146
Intercessions for Poor Souls 147
Prayers for Souls in the Beyond 147
Strength of Intercession 148
Needy Souls Beg for Prayers 149
Appeals for a Gift of Strength for the Souls of the Deceased 150
State of Twilight in the Beyond 152
Remorse in the Beyond - Ascent 153
Transference of Light in the Beyond 154
Doctrine of Re-incarnation - Misguided teaching - Celestial bodies 155
The Souls' Fate after Death Varies 157

CHAPTER 5: BEYOND THE THRESHOLD 161

Introduction: 162
The Transition from the Material to the Spiritual Life 162
Death Bed Scenes: 163
A Famous Man 163
A Scholar 165
A Rich Man 169
A Dandy 172
A Young Lady of Fashion 174
A General 176
A Pope 178
A Minister 180
Bishop Martin 183
The Poor Man 188
Reunion in the Great Beyond 200

CHAPTER 6: ENTERING THE KINGDOM OF LIGHT 207

The Soul's Entry into the Kingdom of Light 208
In My Father's House are many Mansions 209
'Eye Has Not Seen' 210
Spiritual Creations – Beatitude - 'Eye hath not seen' 211
Land of Peace – Gabriel 212
Other Worlds 213
Diversity of Stars 213
Stars - dwelling place for Souls 215
Activity in the Beyond - Effect on the Uninformed 215
Separate Worlds - Various Heavenly Bodies 216

ANDROGYNOUS BEINGS - BEYOND 218
EXAMPLES OF LIFE ON OTHER WORLDS 219
A Visit to a Star 219
Saturn 221
The Saturnian human beings. 222
What is the Sun? – A Planet in a Perfected State 226
The Nature and Purpose of the Moon 228
The Human Beings on the Moon 230
Redeeming work in the Beyond 232
Contact with the Spiritual Kingdom 233
Thoughts from the Spiritual Kingdom 234
Test the Spirits 235
God's Adversary in Disguise as an Angel of Light 236
Mental Influence by Beings of Light 237
Calling upon Beings of Light after Prayer to God 239
The Light Beings' Methods of Rescue 240
Guardian Spirit - Spiritual Guides 241
REUNION IN THE BEYOND IN THE KINGDOM OF LIGHT 242
''ETERNAL PUNISHMENT'' AND ''ETERNAL DAMNATION'' DO THEY EXIST? 243
CONCERNING A QUESTION IN THE DISTANT FUTURE 244

WARNINGS FROM HEAVEN TO CONVERT NOW 245

INTO WHAT AN ABYSS YOU HAVE FALLEN 245
A CALL TO CONVERT NOW 246
THE CALL OF OUR KING AND LORD JESUS CHRIST: 247

CLOSING MESSAGE FROM GOD THE FATHER 249

DO NOT FORFEIT YOUR ETERNAL LIFE 249

SPECIAL TESTIMONY: GLORIA POLO ORTIZ 251

FROM ILLUSION TO THE TRUTH 252
Introduction 253
The Testimony of Gloria Polo 254
The Other World 254
The First Return 255
The Souls of Purgatory 258
Regarding the Word of God 264
Pray For the Priests 264
The Sacraments 265
Matrimony 265
Honor thy Father and the Mother 268
Satan and His Strategy 270
The Lies and the First Confession 271
Virginity 271
Confession 272
The Voice of Jesus 272
Abortion 273
The Loss of Virginity 274
Abortion Is the Gravest Sin 276
Atone For Our Sins 280
My Lack of Love for God 280
The Sixth Commandment 281
The Seventh Commandment 282
To Lie is to Steal 284
Love of Neighbor 285
The Book of Life 286

The Talents *287*
The Spiritual Treasures *290*
In my Book of Life *290*
To Conclude *292*
The Return *294*
Physical Recovery *297*
Conclusion *298*

MARY'S CALL TO REPENTANCE 299

AT THE HOUR OF YOUR DEATH 299
AN ACT OF CONSECRATION TO JESUS THROUGH MARY 300
REFERENCES: 301
Bertha Dudde *301*
Jakob Lorber *302*
Maria Valtorta *303*
Referance Material *304*
About the Work *306*

God the Father is speaking: "It is My will that you shall be enlightened where darkness prevails. People who don't question cannot receive answers, but those who want to know and turn to Me Myself will receive My reply so that they will learn to recognize Me in My love and wisdom and grant their love to Me. The act of creating the spiritual beings was a spiritual process which will only be understandable to you humans when you enter the kingdom of light. As long as you live on earth it can only be roughly outlined to you according to your level of understanding." Ref: BD No. 7067 of 03/17/1958 taken from book 75

Private Revelation

New Revelations – Reason - Bible

BD No. 6038 of 08/30/1954 taken from book 65

God the Father is speaking: "It is very dangerous when My Word gets wrongly interpreted, when the meaning of My Word becomes distorted, and this misinterpretation is then used as a foundation again. For then My adversary will have easy access by confusing people's thoughts more than ever and distance them ever further from the truth. No-one will ever be able to quote a Word from the Scriptures which prove that the Father will never speak to His children again because He has already declared His will in the Scriptures. There is no Word which could give people the right to deny new Words of love by God, there is no Word which would support the opponents of My New Revelations, for I would never have spoken such a Word, because only I know that My living creations on earth will require My Word time and again in order to reach the objective of becoming My children.

I speak to people in different ways indeed, and therefore not every human being needs to hear My voice directly; yet if I didn't speak to people time and again only few would, in fact, reach their goal. For without the working of My spirit people would be unable to think correctly, to separate truth from error and even to understand the Scriptures correctly. Thus I also address people when I teach them to think correctly and establish the right goal for their feelings, but whatever a person thinks who is guided by My spirit he will also be able to voice it, and this communication through a human mouth is then likewise a revelation from Me, for then it is My Word which was imparted to the human being by My spirit. For I want to speak to people, and if someone willingly places himself at My disposal by wanting to proclaim My Word to people, then My Word will be voiced through this person's mouth. Every true messenger of My Word offers Me the opportunity of revealing Myself anew.

And likewise, I can voice My Word when someone is willing to listen to Me, when a person attentively listens within himself and desires to be addressed by Me. Would a loving Father stay quiet when His child desires to hear Him? Does My love limit itself? Am I not a Lord of infinite riches which I Am constantly willing to

bestow? Do you humans want to impose restrictions on Me or deny Me to speak when and to whom I want?

If you believe that I can be present with you, then you also have to believe that I will reveal myself when I Am with you, and yet you want to argue that I speak to people who want to hear Me. But I have promised you My presence with the Words 'Whenever two or three of you come together in My name, I Am there with you.' And what will you talk about then? Will you discuss worldly affairs?

No, you will make Me the subject of your conversation, you will speak righteously, and you will say what I put into your mouth, for I Myself will speak through you so that you recognize My presence. And thus, I Myself will be wherever people unite to hear My Word, wherever I Am allowed to speak, wherever My spirit can work, and you humans will always receive the same Word since it is your desire to hear Me.

I know how much people need My Word, and therefore I will never stop conveying My Word to you, and I will enlighten people about error and misinterpretation of the Scriptures; I will impart My pure Gospel Myself to those who open themselves to Me, thereby wanting to be of service to Me and their fellow human beings, for I will bless every good will and every desire for truth, and My blessing consists of speaking to them Myself just as I once spoke to My disciples, and I will give all those who are able to hear Me the task to spread My pure Gospel, for I speak through them to everyone who wants to hear Me."

A Word about Private Revelation

In a message given to Vassula Rydén – one of the prophets of our times, the Lord speaks about private revelation. Jesus is speaking: "When the Word was made flesh, the world did not know Him. Even when He went to His own people, they did not accept Him. In our times He has made Himself accessible to every human being, but many have ignored His ways and sayings. There is no difference between the way the world was then and the way it is today; rejection and disbelief is what they carry in their hearts.

Our Lord asks His shepherds: 'What have you done with Scriptures?' Scriptures are a mirror that reflect Me; how is it, if you say you know the Scriptures, you do not recognize My speech? How is it you so easily contradict the truth? I tell you, if you do not recognize Me in My sayings now, it is simply that you do not know nor understand the Scriptures that are a key of the Holy Spirit. If some of you say: 'we do not need this prophetic revelation, we are not obliged to listen to it or read it because Scriptures are enough for us and we can learn all knowledge from them;' I ask you in your incredulity:

'Do you know why you do not believe, and do you know why you are so indifferent and determined to close your heart? Do you know why you do not seek anything beyond it?' It is because you have not the Holy Spirit who could have raised you from darkness into His Light enlightening your soul to see the Son together with the Father manifesting themselves to you; the Holy Spirit would have breathed in you a resurrection breath invigorating you, giving you life in Me.

Can a soul who is dead understand Scriptures and put them into practice if he is not alive? If you would have understood the Scriptures that are as a mirror, reflecting My Image, you would not have said: 'Scriptures are enough for me.' No,

My friend, Scriptures are not enough if you do not possess the Holy Spirit. It is through the Light of the Holy Spirit that Revelation can be understood and all that seemed then impenetrable mysteries in Scriptures, and sealed, would become knowable and clear because the key of knowledge would be given to you by the Spirit.' (November 13, 2001)

Later on, in another call, Christ asks His shepherds: 'When in your days I am speaking and the shepherds are not listening and do not believe I am intervening they are as Scriptures say: 'our watchmen are blind, they notice nothing, they all go their own way, each after his own interest.'"(August 7, 2002)

It is their voice, then, we must recognize in this psalm. Their longing has never come to an end in the saints, nor does it end even now in "the Body of Christ, the Church" (Col 1,18)

Thus, it is through the power of the Holy Spirit that the children of God could understand the Scriptures and Parables that Jesus taught. (Ref: Matthew 13:10-17) **The disciples approached him and said, "Why do you speak to them in parables?" He said to them in reply, "Because knowledge of the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven has been granted to you, but to them it has not been granted. To anyone who has (**the Holy Spirit**), more will be given and he will grow rich; from anyone who has not, even what he has will be taken away. This is why I speak to them in parables, because 'they** (the godless) **look but do not see and hear but do not listen or understand.'**

Isaiah's prophecy is fulfilled in them, which says: 'You shall indeed hear but not understand, you shall indeed look but never see. Gross is the heart of this people, they will hardly hear with their ears, they have closed their eyes, lest they see with their eyes and hear with their ears and understand with their heart and be converted, and I heal them.'

But blessed are your eyes, because they see, and your ears, because they hear. (Hear what? They recognize the speech of the Holy Spirit.) **Amen, I say to you, many prophets and righteous people longed to see what you see but did not see it, and to hear what you hear but did not hear it."**

Reason for the Profound Knowledge

Ref: BD No. 7023 of 01/23/1958 book 75 BD No. 7259 of 01/18/1959 book 77

God the Father is speaking: "The deeper I guide you into My eternal plan of Salvation the more valuable work you can accomplish, for you will only be capable of serving your fellow human beings as a teacher if you possess much knowledge yourselves. I educated My first disciples Myself and will also teach My last disciples such that they will be able stand up for Me and My kingdom when it is demanded of them, so that they then will be able to step forward when the faith in teachings which cannot be verified has to be defended. For the time will come when every religious doctrine will become under attack; the time will come when war will be declared on all spirituality, when no existing spiritual movement will be spared being attacked and slandered. And neither will it be difficult for My opponents to destroy the foundation, for many are only built on sand, that is, their teachings cannot stand up to contradictions, they can be pulled to pieces, and their adherents themselves will start to doubt and very easily let go of them, unless they fanatically hold on to their school of thought but without being able to endorse it

with inner conviction. And then the truth, too, will be fought against and action will also be taken against those of you who were chosen and taught by Me as representatives of the truth which is conveyed to you by Myself. You will also be drawn into this battle, but your opponents will find it difficult to bring you down because you will be able to defend the truth in line with your realization and refute every objection, since you will be able to logically substantiate the more profound correlations. This is why I guide you into My eternal plan of Salvation and thus grant you the knowledge that entitles you to pit yourselves against your enemies. And then you shall fight with the sword of your tongue.

Do you now understand why I keep transmitting the information from above to you, why I let you have an insight into spiritual knowledge which is not denied to anyone providing he only shapes himself such that he can be enlightened by My spirit? People's thinking has truly become confused; they are ensnared by a net of errors and lies and can't find their way through because they don't have the will to do so. And precisely this darkness will demonstrate itself when they seriously have to state their position in regard to their faith, to their relationship to Me and to the act of Salvation. Then everything will collapse like a house of cards, for the adversary will relentlessly pick every single teaching to pieces or mock and ridicule everything which had been sacred to people so far. My disciples, however, will not be afraid, they will courageously enter the battle by giving full explanations, and this truly with substantial authority, because then they will not be speaking, instead I Myself will speak. But these true fighters of Mine must nevertheless have been educated by Me Myself, they must speak of their own accord and use their own Words so as not to force people to believe. But even from the adversary's ranks they will be joined by fighters too who are impressed by their words and unable to deny their validity. And thus, one day the time will come when you will be able to use all your knowledge, and for this time I Am educating you and supply you with teaching material which not everyone can show and which, since it originates from Me, will not remain ineffective either. For I still want to help many people. However, whether they will accept this is up to their own free will, since I certainly allow unusual things to happen but always in a way that it will not compel them to believe. I will still pour out many blessings, yet they must voluntarily be used.

It is difficult to convince people of the fact that they had already travelled an infinitely long path before they reached their existence as human beings. It is difficult, given that precisely this knowledge is not included in the Gospel, which is the foundation of every church organization. But God knows why He did not incorporate this knowledge, why He did not give his disciples the instruction to spread this knowledge, of which Jesus' disciples were most certainly informed. He only gave them the task of proclaiming the divine teaching of love, He made the commandments of love for God and one's neighbor the subject of what they were to proclaim as Gospel to their fellow human beings, which were also proclaimed by Jesus as a human being on this earth. *For every person who lives up to this teaching of love will gain increasingly more knowledge and subsequently also find out about the human soul's infinitely long process of pre-development, which only has to pass its last test of will on earth.*

The commandment of love is, in fact, the first and most important commandment, a person will not benefit from any knowledge, and regardless of how profound it is, if he fails to live a life of love. *For even this knowledge would just be misconstrued intellectual information since only love is the key to realization and without love everything will remain incomprehensible, which is evident in the present time, since the said information will not be believed because it cannot be realized as long a person's thinking is not illuminated by love.* Everyone willing to love will dwell on it and not entirely reject it but he might perhaps question why such knowledge was not given to people earlier, why it isn't mentioned in the Book of Books. And the same answer applies that knowledge is only of value for a person if it has come alive through love. This is why every kind-hearted person will also be guided into deeper knowledge when the time is right. But since humanity is near the end they shall live even more responsibly. *The knowledge about the soul's process of preliminary development can increase this sense of responsibility in people which, in view of the near end, is not to be underestimated.* Even people who are as yet unable to believe can be prompted by thoughts to change their way of life. On the other hand, however, this knowledge is not necessary if a person lives a life of love according to God's will. Then he will receive the knowledge instantly when he enters the kingdom of the beyond; he will brightly and clearly recognize what appeared unbelievable or was entirely unknown to him on earth.

But during the last days everything possible will be done on the part of God for the human being to reach the goal with ease. His attention will be drawn to his earthly task and the great significance of fulfilling this task, and in view of the end he will also be informed of the previous development, although without proof. However, everyone can obtain this proof for himself if he lived a life of love which could enlighten him and also grant him the ability of spiritual vision. In that case a person would also be able to observe the bustling spiritual activity within the various works of creation, he would come to see the lives of animals and plants in a different light and he would no longer doubt that he, too, would have passed through all these stages of pre-development. But this presupposes a high degree of love, hence the divine teaching of love must always take priority, i.e., the human being's attained degree of knowledge or realization on earth depends on his fulfillment of the commandments of love. Love is absolutely necessary for the human being but he does not need to be knowledgeable, because he can suddenly become brightly enlightened if he has lived a life of love on earth. And this is why you humans should not be surprised that the Gospel does not openly state something which nevertheless can be found concealed within, for the Word of God has various meanings, which only a person living in love will come to understand. Then he will also find many references regarding the human being's pre-existence in the creations of earth, and he will only ever attempt to pass his findings on to his fellow human being although they will only be believed if this person, too, is permeated by love."

Infilling of the Holy Spirit Prayer

Lord Jesus, I ask today for an infilling of the Holy Spirit. Fill all the empty spaces within me with your peace, love, healing and joy.

I also ask for an increase and release of all the Gifts, all the Powers and Fruits of the Holy Spirit; wisdom, word of knowledge, faith, healing, miracles, prophecy, discernment of spirits, tongues, deliverance, inner healing, teaching, service, gift of encouragement, gift of leadership, gift of preaching, gift of joy and laughter, so that I may use all the gifts cheerfully. Amen.

Chapter 1: The Spiritual Journey of the Soul

First Created Being, Act of Creating, Process of Creation and Apostasy of the Beings, The Fall of Angels, The Process of Creation has taken Eternities, Development of the Soul, Immortality of the Soul, God's Plan for Man, The Soul's Process of Development, Composition of the Soul, The Human Beings task on Earth, The Soul and The Spiritual Spark in the Human Being, Incarnation, The Purpose and Reason of Earthly Life, and much more….

Introduction - Heaven, Hell and Earth

Ref: HEAVEN, HELL, EARTH 9 July 1870 Jakob Lorber

Jesus is speaking: "You asked Me for three words and, it goes without saying, for their explanation. Well, I gave you these three significant words: heaven, hell and earth. Now we will see what can be extracted from these three words that may be elevating, edifying and instructive for you, as well as for mankind as a whole.

The first of the three words signifies the greatest, so that even you, when saying it, must raise your voice and lend greater tension to your vocal cords, if you want to pronounce this word in the manner it deserves to be pronounced.

Do you know what you really utter when pronouncing this word? No, you do not know it but can only surmise; for look, "Heaven" is and signifies the highest abode, as dwelling of the highest spirits, and also My more permanent abode. Heaven is the sum total of all beatitudes, where all the spirits in the purest light, without faults, striving only for My sublime personal attributes, lead a life of bliss which here you cannot ever understand and hardly ever imagine.

There are certainly in these places various degrees of perfection. Indeed, the process of perfecting never ceases since I, continually creating something new, allow new spheres of action to develop.

Issuing from heaven, all the life-sparks out of Me travel via My greatest angel spirits to the lowest strata where only a spark of Myself dimly glimmers, encased in heavy matter. In the heavens, which lie far beyond all the shell globes and materially created solar systems, eternal peace and eternal love are radiating and, since the first fundamental principle of the sublime spiritual life is to imitate My attributes and out of love for Me to fulfill My commands and wishes, the highest bliss is reigning there.

In the highest heavens, where eternal harmony of the spirits prevails, there are also simplicity, humility and neighborly love in their highest perfection, the expression of which I Myself Am.

There I have arranged My abode, as it should be in accordance with My thoughts and wishes in the whole of creation and as it will be after countless eons, when all that is lost spiritually, having found itself, and purified by trials, through conflicts will have found its way back to Me.

Once this is the case, all the worlds, as I have once said, will be transformed. For then they all have as schools of trial and purification fulfilled their purpose and accomplished everything. Of course, for higher spiritual beings they must then be differently arranged and equipped with greater radiance, splendor and beatitudes, so that these very same purified spirits will find new material for their further perfection, their higher spiritual maturity. For infinite is space, infinite are the grades of perfection, and infinite Am I Myself – as the supreme All in all!

This spiritual heaven, where eternal, mild light of grace out of Me flows into all spirits, where the purest harmonies breathe into the spiritual ears and hearts

the greatest longing for Me, is the quintessence of My unlimited love, expressed in sounds, colors and words.

There, all live in all, and everyone is only happy in the happiness of another!

The greatest exaltation, be it in prayer, in poetry or in song, of which you human beings on this earth are capable and which, as you express it, "carries you to the highest heavens, affording you a foretaste of a better existence – there in My heavens it is the lowest degree of bliss, and that as a permanent, not a transient sensation.

I cannot explain and even less make you feel what a spirit feels there. For you could not bear it in your earthly body and everything on this earth would fill you with disgust if you could retain in your memory but one second of such bliss. This again I tell you only to encourage you so that you may understand what beatitudes await the sorely tried as reward for his perseverance and his love for Me.

As I am telling you here of the highest heavens where day does not alternate with night, cold with warmth or life with death, where an even, permanent, eternal sea of light surrounds the blissful spirits, lighting up everything around them, there everything created on other worlds is in turn displayed spiritually. For instance, you see a flower whose color delights your eye, whose scent pleases your nerves, but you do not know its spiritual meaning, its spiritual substance, the Spiritual flowing up and down in its tiny tubules or veins, all emanations of a higher nature, beginning with the sun whose light is the mother of these floral colors and scents, up to the highest and most refined potencies.

You see, this flower is also found in My heavens, as spiritual reflection of all that is created. If you could see this flower there – its form only light, its color only radiance, and its scent in the highest spiritual correspondence an eternal hymn of praise to its Creator!

Only there would you understand what spiritual contemplation means, and only then realize how dull your senses are in this world. However, do not worry about this state of your senses while on this earth; remember, only the wise hand of your most loving Father has arranged it so, and although you do not, and cannot ever, wholly understand His aims, they are always based on the highest wisdom and love, and there must be grave reasons for the fact that all this bliss will be yours only after long conflicts and periods of time, and even then not for all, but only for some (according to their love).

My dear children, if I allowed you to enjoy all this at once (which I reserve only for those who truly love Me and have striven in all earnest to become My children), without conflict these inexpressibly great beatitudes would be without great value and permanent attraction, for they would not have been your own achievement but only a gift, so to speak, without any effort on your part, and would only have half the value and be of short duration. Only what is gained by effort is enjoyed in full measure, as a due reward for merit!

What merit has a prince or king born as the son of a king once his head is adorned by a crown? You can be assured it is of far less importance to him than those of lesser rank believe. What is such a hereditary monarch compared to a man who, having battled against all adversities both physical and spiritual, has

finally reached his goal, which he has never lost sight of. The latter is a spiritual giant, whereas the other perhaps amounts to very little and is sometimes despite his exalted station a mere non-entity.

For this reason, whosoever wants to become My child for whom I have reserved the greatest bliss, must earn this name, and only then will he bless all the sufferings and conflicts which led him to that degree of bliss where he begins to have an inkling of the spirituality of all existence and where, in the very fulfillment and performance of all the duties of an angel, the higher bliss for a created spirit begins.

As I once said that every human being carries the whole universe within him, he also carries, albeit on the smallest scale, this now described heaven within.

With every good deed, with every victory gained over his passions, a ray of light of this little love-heaven from the sphere of the spirit penetrates into his heart. It is a transient beam, a foreknowledge, a shouting of the soul for joy, but (alas) not permanent. It is only a moment when the spirit shows man what he carries within, what will one day be his, if he faithfully perseveres on the difficult roads of life.

The spirit of man leaves to the soul only a gentle after breeze of it, nothing else. The ray from the heavens was only a warning call, meaning: "Do not waver, but endure! One day you will have forever what here only rushes past you with the speed of lightning!"

So do not despair, My children! Heaven is open to you! In order to encourage you, I let you feel it sometimes, as far as your physical and spiritual constitution allows. More you cannot bear; and if one of you were capable of bearing more, in the midst of the other people he would then be unhappy and instead of pursuing his course diligently he would be overcome by weariness and despair. Therefore, remember that I, your Father, in My wisdom have arranged everything in such a way that My children can bear it and profit from it. Now let us turn to hell. What I have told you about heaven, more or less the same you can assume of hell, but – it goes without saying – in the opposite sense.

I shall not tell you so much about hell, its organization and nature because it gives Me no pleasure to think of it and it is of little benefit to have it described in detail. Suffice it for you to know that it really exists, and that for My and your disadvantage. However, in order to tell you at least something about this contrast to My heavens, I will merely hint at its existence, that is, also in several departments and gradations, representing evil in various degrees, in their midst the residence of Satan himself.

Satan, as personified evil, in contrast to Me, is the personification of all passions, which are opposed to My attributes. Whereas I, for instance, out of love endeavor to preserve everything, he wants to destroy everything, out of hatred against everything created, firstly, because it is created by Me and, secondly, simply because it is created.

If he had his way, he would continually create beings of every kind, however, not in order to rejoice in their existence, but to rejoice (satanically) in their destruction, then again, resuming the game, begin to create anew.

His subordinate spirits who, created by Me as living beings, became so dark that they only enjoy the darkness, just as My angels enjoy the light, are according to the intensity of their wickedness closer to, or further from, Satan and in various sections placed in and on the earth. There they pursue their (devilish) pleasures, striving to emulate their master as much as possible; and so it is their greatest pleasure under all possible kinds of pretenses to turn mankind from the good or better path and onto their wide highway.

Since in them as well as in their master there is only a satanic love, they take pleasure in planting the same also into the hearts of those who are willing to listen to them.

There they do not neglect to describe to their victims the world and its pleasures as agreeable as possible, to engender in them a taste for cunning, deceit, lust and all low passions, thus making them ready to be their worthy "brothers".

You will ask Me: "But how can You, the Creator, allow such mighty hordes of evil spirits and their master to continue to exist? Why do You not with one word of command destroy such beings who are so opposed to the gentle drawing of Your love and Your divine attributes, and besides – why did You banish them into and onto the earth of all places, while millions of other earths and suns are orbiting around in infinity, whose inhabitants can take to their roads of betterment and purification unhindered, without being exposed to such torment? Why is it only we, whom You call "Your children', for whose sake You came down to this small globe, where You suffered for their sake; why are we the ones who are on the one hand the privileged, but on the other hand the most severely tried and exposed to all seductions and temptations?"

My dear children! This complaint made by you as people of this your earth is, seen from your side, quite natural and I have to justify Myself for it so that you, although it does not look like it, nevertheless recognize that I Am always the most loving and benevolent Father, have at all times arranged everything only for your benefit and shall always conduct everything for the welfare of My children.

In an earlier (the preceding) word I have mentioned a fallen angel who pulled along an uncountable number of other spirits in his fall. In "The Household of God" I explained to you also that then all his soul substance was taken from him, divided into particles and bound in matter, and is now returning to Me gradually on the road of perfection; furthermore, that all those born on this earth, except for spirits from other worlds, who had been transplanted here in order to become My children, are parts of the fallen one that also have to take the same road as all spirits bound in matter.

I also said that this very same fallen angel spirit was banned to where My plant nursery for My heavens is located, namely, into the earth, and that he is there most active, in opposition to Me and My ordinance.

Look, all this I have explained to you earlier, and also the "why" – why the greatest temptations and dangers must be exactly where spirits and souls have taken on the task of attaining to My Kingdom, carrying right through hell and damnation the cross of suffering and love in My honor and to shame My great adversary; and that despite all seductions and seeming comforts heaped upon his future pupils by Satan, so as to ensnare them, while later making them pay for

every pleasure and every comfort with a thousand torments of hell, there are still souls on this earth who defy all his temptations, turn their back on all his grand promises, do not want to belong to him but solely to Me and amid suffering and conflict hold high the banner of faith, humility and love!

When Satan apostatized from Me, I had to leave him and his whole following their individual freedom, which every spirit needs so that as a free spirit he may become worthy of Me.

The conversion to Me must occur from within and voluntarily, not under coercion. For this very reason I must tolerate the behavior of this My greatest adversary including his brood and let them do as they like, as long as they do not interfere with My established order.

The fact that whatever they do, the result will always be the opposite of what they originally had intended, is the triumph of the good cause since also the evil, even the worst that creation has to show, must and can only contribute towards its (and their) own betterment and the furthering of what is good generally.

For this very reason Satan with his realm is banned to that place where he has a chance to try everything possible to defend his life theory against Mine. Indeed, he was even permitted to personally tempt Me during My earthly sojourn, Me, who was not a created spirit, but the Creator of all that is created (including himself). Since I did not avoid him when he met Me as a man, exposed to all human passions, he dared to tempt also the Most High, which was allowed him. But with what result you know, namely, that he might gradually realize on a great and on a small scale that all his effort is in vain and that through so many eons he has been resisting in vain the One who had created him and who, would he return today repenting, would receive him with open arms like a "prodigal son", as I have already told you in "The Twelve Hours', and that it will not happen all at once, but gradually and with certainty.

When I said of My heavens that every human spirit carries them within him on a small scale, thus also the germ of hell or the inclination to sin and act contrary to My order, or hell in miniature, is in every man's breast.

It is there because virtue, without the recognition of its opposite, vice, would not be a virtue, and love without the opposite, not love! If darkness did not exist, you would not appreciate light, if it were not for the freezing effect of cold, you could not understand the pleasant feelings of the gradually entering warmth.

Therefore, where My "children-plant-nursery" is, there also had to be the school of the overcoming and subduing of all passions!

What would life be without conflict? A monotonous passing of periods of time, without an awareness of the coming of one and the passing of another. Life would have no purpose, no spice!

Just as the salt in all your foods, in all herbs, metals, plants and even in the air and in your stomachs because of the proper digestion constitutes an important component, which incites to life and through this incitement furthers the same, the salt of spiritual life is the temptation, or the tendency to think and act differently from the way one actually should. Through this very contrast or this incitement, the better part of your Self is strengthened and the physical and spiritual life within you is sustained through this food, its continuance is assured and the enjoyment

of having attained to another, new degree of perfection, and that through conflict and self-denial, whereas you would not become aware of progress if you advanced without obstacles.

When the sun in the morning sends its first rays over the pastures of the earth, the whole living nature shouts with joy in answer. Every being, each in its own way, twitters, coos and hums its hymn of praise to the light and its Giver. Even the dewdrop attached to the leaf of a moss plant, clothing itself with diamond brilliance, mirrors the great hemisphere of light arched above it and in its radiance as it were rejoicing at the daylight returning after the darkness! – Why? Because from one evening to the next morning the night, or darkness, had let all living creatures feel the value of the light!

Thus, it is also in a spiritual respect. The soul of a created being recognizes the sweet awareness of spiritual love, spiritual progress and of a spiritual, higher soul-life only when it has come to know the chasms and wrong paths threatening on its road of trial. Only after the soul has advanced a small step does it take pleasure in the same and renews all its strength for the attainment of the next. And so, the incentive, enjoyment and bliss are enhanced, not so much with the better condition gained, but on account of the obstacles overcome.

You see, My children, what would all the heavens mean without hell! And how much other beings in other suns and earths miss in bliss, which is reserved only for My children, because the other beings in other suns and worlds know only light and little or no darkness!

Do you still want to complain that hell is so close to you, even within you? Or would you not rather, thanking Me, ask Me maybe for more hell, so that you may be able to battle and suffer even more so as to deserve in even greater measure to be called "My children"?

So set your minds at rest. I know what you need for your trial school; do not ask for more than what you are given by Me, and be assured, you have enough with what My loving hand imposes on you; where it more, it would be a punishing hand and this I, as your Father, do not have!

Now I have shown you how even the totally evil, indeed, the most evil in the whole of creation, with all its actions is still used and exploited by Me for the benefit of all that lives and how Satan with his henchmen, instead of harming Me, on the whole must contribute to the greatest good. So let us now pass to your abode, "the earth", as the third, above mentioned word, so that there you may again see the love and wise prudence of your Father in its whole glory.

(Note by the Translator: For the sake of clarity in the following paragraphs the original German terms for "heaven", "hell" and "earth" are retained, with the English terms added in brackets).When pronouncing the word "Himme1" (heaven), where you have to raise the pitch of your voice while having to lower it when pronouncing "Hölle" (hell), you will have noticed that each of these words requires a different movement of the vocal muscles, and look, it is again different in the pronunciation of the word "Erde" (earth), where you have to open your mouth wide 18 (three different tones. The Ed.). Look, in the pronouncing of these words in your language, including the movements of the vocal organ, everything is arranged in such a way that spirits who are more familiar than you are with the correspondence formulas of creation, find fully expressed in the movements of the

oral muscles what one or the other pronounced word signifies. When pronouncing the word "Himmel" (heaven) you have seen that the raising of the vocal pitch corresponds to the closer description of the same. When pronouncing the word "Hölle" (hell) where the mouth has to be closed like a cave, you will not fail to see the close connection between this muscular movement and the description of hell, where by the way the word "Himmel" (heaven) is pronounced with an upward glance and the word "Hölle" (hell) with a downward glance - certainly never upward, and finally "die Erde" (earth) by opening the mouth broadly and looking straight ahead. Having discussed the first two, what remains to be scrutinized is merely the last word broadly pronounced, with its spiritual correspondence, and earth itself as your abode. The fact that in pronouncing the word "Erde" (earth) the mouth has to be pulled horizontally to the corners and the lips must move upward showing the rows of white teeth, has a spiritual correspondence to the earth, where, in a spiritual sense, what is softer, namely the flesh, is under restraint, laying open for consideration the firmer, more compact parts – ethics, or the teeth. Now look, My dear children, in the spiritual correspondence the teeth, as firm, bonelike parts, signify the permanent and first support, both in man and earth, giving a beautiful form to the face and imparting the moral beauty to man's whole exterior. As well, this support creates the inner vitality of the body of the earth itself and what is beautiful on its surface. The teeth amongst other things signify also the moral-spiritual and are the first spiritual organ of digestion, which in worldly life should sift the good from the bad. And as in the mouth the salt in the digestive juice of the saliva is added after the crushing of the food through the teeth, correspondingly the salt is the enticement always to act contrary to the good, and it is your main task to resist this temptation and finally be the victor.

Here on this earth, you receive everything mixed, the good with the bad, love with hatred, life with death; that is, both easily change their role with each other, or, in other words, each changes easily into its counter-pole. If you have enough strength to eliminate the wicked and bad, then evil, no matter how often it assails you, cannot leave a permanent impression in your soul and will completely disappear in the beyond, and only what is good will be your actual worth! The fact that when pronouncing the word "Erde" (earth) you have to open your mouth wide horizontally, means in correspondence that in a spiritual respect your earth – albeit physically small – reaches far beyond all solar galaxies, even as far as My heavens, for this little planet became firstly the abode of My children, and secondly also Mine, where, through suffering and death, I became the victor over evil.

If you were a little more familiar with this spirit-language, you would in every word referring to Me discover the important and far greater spiritual meaning and not be satisfied with the comprehension of the word – the bark, so to speak, but feel more joy and bliss at its inner contents than you could ever have imagined. Then you would find amongst other things that each people according to its spiritual level will reveal itself in the words and expressions relating to Me, or do you think that the languages were invented, as your linguists believe they can prove? Oh, there you are badly mistaken! The words were not always made simultaneously with the invented objects and new requirements of a people, but the language – being a spiritual product – has always progressed parallel with the

spiritual perception of a people. You can see for yourselves from the history of the nations that with the spiritual progress or regression of a nation its language likewise progressed or regressed and with the cessation of a nation also its language (as a living thing) has utterly ceased.

Language is the expression of the soul. The more exalted and beautiful the language, the greater the intensity of its expressions. However, this can only be appreciated by spirits, or those enlightened by My love and grace, who discover behind the various movements of the muscles of the mouth and larynx, among the twittering, clicking, trilling and whistling sounds which in this and that combination form one or the other word, a higher, spiritual meaning which has become for you incomprehensible like the hieroglyphs – of a lost Paradise.

Thus, the earth is also in this different from many other worlds. Whereas in these only one language prevails, and all created beings pursue one and the same path, there are on earth thousands of different languages, as offshoots of a single one. And in this way the dweller on this earth, in addition to many tests of his patience and perseverance, is also burdened with this task, namely, that when he wants to communicate with the brothers of other nations, he must learn their language in order to convey his thoughts and feelings to them; or, if he wants to learn something from his foreign brother, or tell him something, he must make himself understood in that language.

Wherever you look on earth, beginning with the most primitive peoples up to you civilized nations, you see the small earth with its restless spirits spread itself beyond everything known. Of course, the main motivation with the crowd is always self-seeking. However, in this way the nations are brought together, they come to know each other and learn to appreciate and love each other.

Those who investigate nature, the stars, the inside and surface of the earth, impart their knowledge about the thing which out of My grace I let the individual find, as common knowledge to mankind. Without realizing it, they carry out only My plans, not theirs, and so I educate the souls of this earth, which was once for a short time also My abode, to a better life.

Now the thoughts of people race with the speed of lightning from one pole to the other and they themselves roll on iron roads like a hurricane from one place to another

. The roads are made from iron and the majority of those traveling on them also have a heart of iron (at least for their human brothers). But this is immaterial; My plans are nevertheless more advanced through the fast communication existing between towns and villages, and the getting together of the people dwelling there, than all the builders and owners of railroads believe.

Here I have often mixed together in one carnage - heaven, hell and earth, or spiritually good, bad or materially thinking people. On entering they all had their own opinion; on leaving, hell has perhaps extracted from heaven and earth a permanent spark of knowledge by way of conversation, which throughout life will not be forgotten.

Thus, I carry out My plans, utilizing also this traveling together, and where formerly rigid rules separated people, there I make them forget their prejudices. And even though self-seeking, the urge for enjoyment and greed for money are the motivating force why people come together, travel to other countries exposing

themselves to all sorts of danger, I still have achieved My purpose, namely that of fraternization. Now it only needs one more mighty push and spiritual impulse, and the people stand there like brothers, united in the desire to follow Me, the Eternal Shepherd. Then the spiritual significance of the earth is achieved, then is the time when I shall again come personally among you, after the stubborn have been removed and only the willing are left.

Thus, My dear children, you see how heaven, hell and earth, be it in great or in small things, must serve only the purpose of love, the fundamental idea of My creation.

However, do not count it by years what I have just told you, for with Me there is no time. I know neither day nor night by which to measure time; with Me there is always day, and the sun of love always shines, and will shine, for all until all will have found the road to Me, they're most loving, benevolent Father. Now I think that you, too, can be satisfied with this supplement. It is another light in the great valleys of My creation. Consider well how much love and grace I bestow on you and that I offer you so much spiritual bread so that you may no longer doubt that everything you see is from the Father's hand! This for your comfort with My blessing! Amen.

First Created Being - Light bearer - Apostasy from God

BD No. 5612 of 02/28/1953 taken from book 62

God the Father is speaking: "Your human intellect is only able to understand profound truth to a certain degree, because pure spirituality is only spiritually explainable. This explanation will be accepted by the spirit within you and indeed also passed on via the soul to the intellect, but the intellect is still too earthly minded and therefore cannot delve so deeply into spiritual knowledge to understand everything. Nevertheless, My spirit expresses itself through the spiritual spark within you, and anyone who has love will also understand the meaning of what I say to him:

My creative will was immense, My strength inexhaustible, and I found My bliss in the implementation of My thoughts and plans. And this bliss wanted to express itself, My love wanted to give itself, I wanted another being beside Me to also enjoy what made Me indescribably happy. I experienced My solitude as a lack which I could change any time if I wanted to. And I wanted to re-discover Myself in a being that should be closely united with Me, which I wanted to shape as a mirror of Myself, as My own image, to be able to bestow it with unlimited bliss and thereby increase My bliss too. I wanted to create such a being and this will suffice, because My will was strength and always proceeded with love and wisdom. The entity I externalized from within Myself was indeed My image, yet it could not see Me, had it been able to see Me it would have ceased to exist due to its beatitude, since no being could endure to behold Me. For every being, even the most perfect image of Myself, is always just a product of My strength of love, whereas I Am the strength of love Myself and enlighten everything with incomparable intensity but, as a result, I could not be endured by the being I had externalized. Yet by creating this being I had a vessel into which the strength of My love could flow continually, and thus it also received My creative will, My strength, My wisdom and My love beyond measure with this constant influx of strength from Me. As a result, it was

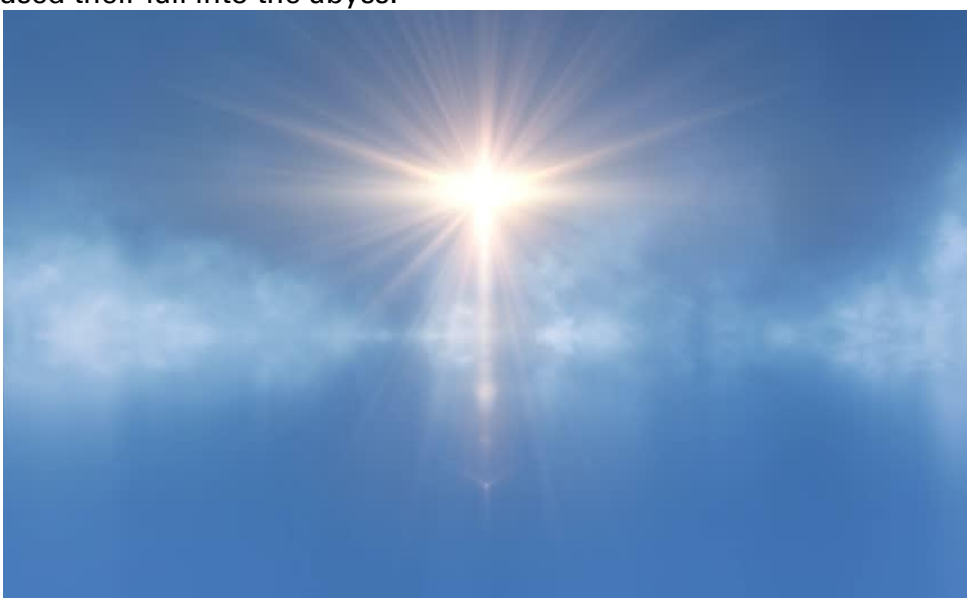
now able to experience the same bliss, it was able to use its strength in accordance with its own will, it could be creatively active for its own pleasure and thus constantly increase My bliss, because it was My strength which enabled the being to do so and I took pleasure in its happiness.

And now countless other beings of the same nature emerged from this being. They all were children of My love in radiating light, in utmost perfection, because from the image I created of Myself and My infinite love could only ever emerge utmost perfection, because we shared the same will. Both our love found itself again in the created beings, because nothing imperfect existed as long as My will and My love worked through this first created being. It was an enlightened world of spirits; there were a great number of originally created spirits. The strength from Me flowed unrestricted to the being which I had chosen for Myself as the bearer of light and strength. And the entity itself was more than blissfully happy. Yet I wanted to increase this bliss even more; I did not want it to be tied to My will but it should be active of its own will which, if the being was perfect and remained so, was My will. For the being, having been created by Me, was incapable of having any other will. But I wanted it to be able to act independently, because the only characteristic of a divine being is that love is so powerful within itself that it is the decisive factor for the same direction of will as mine. I wanted to receive this love from My first created being which, however, was intended to result in its ultimate perfection at the same time, so that it was no longer active as a created being in accordance with My will but should enjoy unlimited bliss by merging with My will for love of Me.

But in order to pass this test of love and will it had to have complete freedom of will. It did not see Me but it recognized Me because it was enlightened. However, it saw the countless beings created by its will, and it felt itself as their creator in spite of knowing that it had received its strength from Me. And the entity was envious of My strength. Although it was visible to the beings it had created, it was nevertheless conscious of its origin from Me, but it claimed the right to rule these beings for itself by presenting itself to them as the source of strength, as the only power able to create. It more than less denied to love Me in order to rule. You humans cannot understand the process by which a self-aware being could transgress into completely wrong reasoning, but this is explained by free will which, in order to become active, must also be able but does not have to make a negative choice.

The bearer of light and strength saw on the one side the evidence of strength conveyed through him, yet he did not see the source of strength itself. Thus, he declared himself ruler over his created spirits and also tried to portray Me as non-existent to them. He tried to transfer his now opposing will on to them. And now the moment of decision, of proving their perfection, also came for the beings who had been created by the bearer of light with the use of My strength. My strength was inherent in all these beings, they were fully enlightened and aglow with love for Me, whom they could not see but nevertheless recognize. But they also loved their creator, because the strength that had created them was love which had emanated from the first created being and enabled it to create. This love now had to make a choice, and it divided itself.

Terrible confusion occurred amongst the spirits who felt urged to make a decision. But, since My strength of love was effectively light, it was understandable that the urge towards the primary source of strength was stronger in many beings, that their love diminished for the one who separated from Me and pushed towards Me with increased force. For the light within them was the realization that I was Eternal Love. Every being had this knowledge indeed, but it also had free will which did not depend on knowledge, or it would not have been free. And the spiritual world divided itself. The externalized being had its followers just as I had Mine, even though I was not visible. But the effect of My strength was so powerful that many beings turned away from the one who wanted to oppose Me. Their will remained in the right direction, whereas the bearer of light and his followers directed their will wrongly, thus they volitionally separated from Me and this caused their fall into the abyss.



Thus, the light bearer, the fully illuminated being externalized by Me, became My adversary, whereas everything that had emerged from him, that was created by both our love, partly turned towards Me and partly towards him, depending on the glow of love by which it was permeated. As soon as the bearer of light separated from Me the beings experienced an undefined desire for a definite pole. Free will began to unfold itself, neither I nor My adversary influenced them forcefully, they were merely exposed to both our emanation of strength which wanted to gain every being for itself. The flow of My strength was pure love and affected the beings so intensely that they recognized Me without seeing Me, but they could also recognize the first created beings' change of will. However, because they could see this entity many followed it, i.e. they subordinated themselves to its will and thus distanced themselves from Me. Yet other originally created beings felt themselves as My children and voluntarily remained loyal to Me, only they were far less in number. These were the first created beings who arose from My light bearer's most blissful creative will and My immense influx of strength of love. And this strength of love was inherent in these beings too and persistently pushed them towards Me, for they recognized their creator's present will as wrong and therefore turned away from him. The other beings could have

come to this realization too yet they blindly followed the one they could see, and their will was respected and in no way influenced by Me, because this decision of will had to take place in order to shape the created beings to independent perfection. The being which left Me drew a large number of followers into the abyss, for to distance oneself from Me means to strive towards the abyss, to aim towards a completely opposite state, which thus signifies darkness and weakness, loss of knowledge and strength. Whereas My children blissfully remained in the most radiant light and immense strength, in beatitude.

After the fall of Lucifer, the light bearer, his strength was defeated. He could no longer actively create and shape although I did not withdraw the strength from him because he was My living creation. His power and strength rested in his followers, whom he now dominated as prince of darkness. But they are also the products of My love which I will not leave to My adversary forever. As long as these beings still share his will they belong to him; but as soon as I succeed in turning their will towards Me he has lost them, and thus his strength diminishes at the same rate as I release his prisoners from his control which, however, always presupposes the being's free will."

Act of Creating the Spiritual Beings

BD No. 7067 of 03/17/1958 taken from book 75

God the Father is speaking: "It is My will that you shall be enlightened where darkness prevails. People who don't question cannot receive answers, but those who want to know and turn to Me Myself will receive My reply so that they will learn to recognize Me in My love and wisdom and grant their love to Me. The act of creating the spiritual beings was a spiritual process which will only be understandable to you humans when you enter the kingdom of light. As long as you live on earth it can only be roughly outlined to you according to your level of understanding. Nevertheless, it will not divert from the truth, but it will lack both the deeper reasons as well as the infinitely many intermediate processes which, however, would not contribute towards your enlightenment either. However, you can rest assured that I will not let your thinking become confused, since you only wish to be instructed in the truth. When I created the first being I was only motivated by the thought of creating a vessel for Myself which was intended to assimilate My ceaselessly outpouring strength of love, because My infinite love wanted to give itself and only ever provide happiness. My strength of love constantly brought forth all kinds of spiritual creations. Therefore I also wanted to create something that corresponded to Me Myself, thus an image of Me. And My will came to pass, a being of supreme perfection arose beside Me which was pleasing to Me, which was indescribably beautiful, it was an image of Myself which from then on was so permeated by My strength of love that it was equally able to be creatively active without limitation. And just as the source of My strength of love had motivated Me into shaping a receiving vessel into which it could flow, the same will and desire also arose in this being to make use of the constant influx of My love's strength and, likewise, to let beings arise from within

itself. Thus, the same process repeated itself, because I wanted to let this first-created being participate in the incredible bliss of giving life to like-natured beings, for as an 'image' of Myself it was imbued with the same feelings, it was overflowing with love, and the strength it constantly received from Me did not keep the being inactive either, which resulted in this very process of creating countless beings. Hence these created beings could not be different from My first-created being, they were supremely perfect, brightly radiant and overwhelmingly powerful spirits which all corresponded to the image I had externalized. Through My influx of strength, which made the act of creating these beings possible in the first place, I was therefore also their 'Creator', although the will of the first-created being had to avail itself first of this strength of Mine. Hence all beings emerged from Me and My first image, and all beings possessed the same creative power. But My will was also active in all originally created beings, the host of originally created spirits were inflamed with burning love for Me, because My fire of love was their fundamental element, they had been the products of purest love and therefore all created beings were also positively inclined towards Me.

Endless times passed by in most blissful harmony and a constant exchange of love, and this state need never have changed. But then the process of creating took on a different form, which should only be understood in a spiritual sense. This was triggered by the desire of My first-created being, the bearer of light, to see Me. The being's love for Me was still unchanged and therefore it desired to behold Me even though it knew that I, as the 'center of strength and light' could not be visible to My created beings, which would have ceased to exist in view of My abundance of light, it would have consumed the created beings, which were sparks of My light, and thus a beholding of Me was not possible. And because it was unable to behold Me the thought flashed up in it to become independent from Me and more or less present itself to the host of originally created being as 'Creator itself', a thought which arose as a consequence of the desire to see Me despite better knowledge. As an attribute of perfection all beings also possessed free will which, however, always corresponded to My will. And this free will allowed for the said mental confusion. Thus, the bearer of light, Lucifer, was not prevented by Me from aiming his will in the wrong direction. Even so, the process of creation started to falter, that is, as long as his will no longer harmonized with Mine he more or less closed himself off to the flow of My love, yet always just temporarily, for at first his resistance was so small that love nevertheless came through again and he utterly devoted himself to Me once more, which then also resulted in an unabated flow of My strength of love and thus continued creative activity. But time and again the wrong thoughts kept emerging in him because he did not confide them in Me Myself so that I could have refuted them. For he temporarily excluded Me without realizing that he thereby lessened his strength. As soon as he loosened the bond with Me through wrongly inclined thoughts the inflow of strength of love also lessened; however, he did not realize this in view of the countless multitude of spirits he had already called into existence through his will and the use of My strength. Time and again it must be emphasized that My strength enabled him to create the beings in the first place and that only his love for Me gave him the strength, so it is understandable, that a reduction of his love also reduced the influx of strength. And at the same time, every created being was

also the proof of Lucifer's connection with Me, thus no other being could arise after Lucifer consciously separated from Me, on account of which all created beings belong to Me as well, for they are 'My emanated strength of love'. And yet a large proportion of all created beings had fallen away from Me. And that justifies the question as to whether the beings differed in their fundamental substance.

I only externalized one being as an independent entity. And this being was created in My image. Consequently, all spiritual beings which were brought into existence by this being had to entirely correspond to Me and My image again. They were the same perfect; most radiantly shining living creations, for only something supremely perfect was able to emerge from our mutual love and will, which both corresponded to each other, beings, which were by no means inferior to the first-created bearer of light. Hence, they were equally extremely powerful and ablaze with burning love for Me, even though they were unable to behold Me. Nevertheless, they recognized Me, for I also revealed Myself to them through the Word. It was an infinitely large number of spirits which glorified Me and sang My praises, which, in reverence, were willing to serve Me and which were only ever active according to My will, thus they were images of Me Myself. And this indescribably happy multitude of spirits should have increased the light bearer's love for Me ever more. Yet various feelings in him began to oppose each other: He saw the gloriously radiating beings and desired to behold Me as well. Since he was visible to the beings he deemed himself superior to Me and no longer wanted to acknowledge Me as the One from Whom everything had emerged, despite the fact that he knew that he, too, had originated from Me. Conscious of the strength permeating him, he began to separate himself from the source of strength, a process which lasted for an infinitely long time because the desire for happiness repeatedly pushed him back to Me and therefore he repeatedly received strength again for the creation of new beings. And so these beings, too, consisted of the same fundamental substance, namely of My emanated strength of love; however the sporadic separation from Me also influenced the process of creation to a certain extent, insofar as those beings' will and love was more inclined towards their maker than Me, but I neither tried to influence these beings nor the bearer of light. Yet they were equally enlightened, they recognized Me as their Creator and were therefore also able to make the right decision in free will when this important decision was demanded of them.

My first-created being was connected with all beings produced by him, just as I was inseparably linked with all beings because My strength of love had to permeate them were they to continue to exist. My adversary tried to maintain the connection with his created beings even after his will was already opposing Mine, that is, he also inspired the first spirits into turning away from Me and a number of them succumbed to his temptation, Lucifer also pulled them into the abyss and their realization should have truly made them abhor his disgraceful plan. And their sin was far greater still, therefore, their path of return will also be considerably more difficult, whereas the majority of the first-created beings remained with Me when the followers of My present adversary detached themselves from Me. The hidden resistance with which Lucifer started to oppose Me resulted in the fact that an infinitely large host of created spirits decided partly for and partly against Me when the test of will was expected of them; for the resistance disturbed the

hitherto integrated whole. My former image was no longer governed by the same will, the same love, it had caused a rift and this division was also felt by the beings which had emerged from our love, which were now like their maker, even though My strength was involved in their creation. But since this resistance had not been present in the first-created spiritual being, since the light bearer's love and will were completely merged with Mine, it was only possible for such beings to emerge from our love which utterly corresponded to us, whose brilliant abundance of light and unlimited strength were true images of Me Myself as well as of the being which I had externalized from Me in My love, and which also, with a few exceptions, remained with Me. And the same process occurred in the latter as happened in Lucifer: free will aimed in the wrong direction, they desired to see their God and Creator and drew the wrong conclusions from My necessary invisibility by acknowledging that which was 'visible' to them as their 'God', who then exalted himself and drew countless beings to himself, which all detached themselves volitionally from Me and thereby plunged into the abyss.

Once all created beings glowed with light and strength, because nothing could have arisen without the flow of My love's strength. The reduced emanation of light only began with Lucifer's reduced love for Me, but this did not mean that these beings were lacking the light of realization, for at the moment of creating the beings My strength of love also permeated the maker of all the beings again; but these moments became increasingly less frequent until he voluntarily rebelled against Me and was no longer able to receive any influx of strength because he rejected it by believing himself to be just as powerful as Me. And then his state of mind became dark as well. He, who once had been in My image, became My direct opposite, his nature reversed completely, he had sunk into the deepest abyss and his followers with him, whom he regarded as his supposed power and strength. The highest being, having emerged from My love, had sunk the lowest, because it misused its free will, the characteristic of divine origin. And it was left up to every being to aim this will in My or his direction, every being was able to pass the test of will because every being possessed the light of realization and also had the strength at its disposal to resist the urging for its maker. But neither will every fallen being ever lose My love, for My love let it arise and My love will never ever let it perish again, but until it surrenders its resistance it will not be able to feel My love and thus remain wretched. However, one day its resistance will diminish and the being will look for My love again and consciously take the path of return to Me. Then it will recognize My inconceivable love, it will recognize its God and Creator in Jesus Christ, in Whom I Myself became for all beings the visible God, whom they desired to see and Who prepared for them the path of return into the Father's house."

Process of Creation and Apostasy of the Beings

BD No. 8566 of 07/22/1963 taken from book 90

God the Father is speaking: "Believe Me, I will gladly instruct you when I recognize your longing for truthful knowledge, because I only emanate light, and this light permeates the darkness. However, you are still in an area of darkness where light has to be sent to you until you are so filled by it that you can also pass it on again yourselves. But you will be receptive for My ray of light as soon as you

desire clarification about regions which are still in darkness to you. Then I can illuminate you, I can once again gradually return you to the state of enlightenment and introduce you to knowledge which will make you happy. And there shall be light in you, you shall know where you came from and your final goal on earth. You can only receive this knowledge from Me Myself, who created you for My pleasure.

You came forth from Me Myself. My strength of love externalized living creations who were like Me Myself, who were independent beings, created by Me as miniatures of Myself. I gave life to these creations, i.e. they were able to create and work like Me, they were also able to hear My voice and therefore knew of Me Myself as their God and Creator, and they were faithfully devoted to Me and tremendously happy. But you humans know little or nothing about the kingdom of these once blissful spirits. This kingdom was originally created when I wanted to recognize Myself in images of Myself, when I created vessels into which I could pour My love. I created spiritual beings because My infinite love wanted to give itself, it wanted to flow into similar beings whose perfection gave Me unimaginable bliss. I created a spiritual world with living inhabitants for My delight, I populated it with creations of the most magnificent kind and rejoiced in the beings' bliss, to whom I gave such happiness because love, which was and remains My fundamental nature, motivated Me to do so.

This spiritual world existed for an infinitely long time in harmony and most intimate unity of all beings with Me, their Creator and Provider. For an infinitely long time these beings' will and love concurred with Mine. Because the first created being, which I Myself had externalized in complete perfection, loved Me deeply and devotedly. It found unlimited bliss by constantly creating new beings brought to life through his will and the use of My strength, which corresponded to My will, because the love this being felt for Me resulted in the same will. Consequently, there was no discord in the spiritual world, nothing contradicted My will, it was a world of unlimited happiness because all spiritual beings were teeming with light and strength and were able to create by using their own will, which was also My will as long as the strength of My love permeated all My living creations. But this perfect state did not last. For I did not constrain the spiritual beings by My will, I gave free will to every single being as a sign of its divinity.

The first created being, Lucifer, also had this free will, and he misused it. However, Lucifer could have voluntarily wanted the same as I Myself and he would have been infinitely happy and remained so forever. But he misused his freedom of will and directed it wrongly, which resulted in a spiritual rebellion the consequences of which you humans cannot possibly understand. Nevertheless, you humans are the products of this past spiritual rebellion. Lucifer, the first created being, with whom I was in constant contact through the Word, was able to think, as were all created beings, and therefore he was also able to infer a wrong meaning to My Word. He had free will and could therefore also change the direction of his mind. He was able to leave the law of eternal order and set up completely wrong concepts and, by doing so, caused mental confusion in himself as well as in the beings who followed him, which resulted in momentous consequences. He also transferred his wrong thoughts to the beings brought to life by his will and the use of My strength. A general opposition to Me ensued, the

beings resisted Me, they no longer accepted My illumination of love unreservedly and thereby grew weaker and darker. They revolted against the law of eternal order; their thoughts made their own way.

This resulted in an incredible chaos in the host of the first created spirits who then had to decide whom they should follow, which resulted in the desertion of countless beings from Me. However, I did not put to a stop to it, I only saw in it a means which would lead to even greater bliss than I could give the 'created' beings, who certainly had emanated from Me in all perfection but who nevertheless were always just My 'work.' Now, after the apostasy from Me, they had the opportunity to return again as 'children' which would heighten their bliss by far, because the return to Me as a 'child' has to be achieved entirely voluntarily but then the being will be completely independent from Me, My power and My will, yet it will exist totally within My will since, due to its perfection, it will have totally accepted My will. You humans are on this way of return to Me while you live on this earth, and if you are of good will My eternal light of love can permeate you once again, and all the knowledge you once possessed but voluntarily surrendered can be regained by you. And I know of no greater bliss than to give you this knowledge, than to offer you My immense love and to change your state of darkness and ignorance, so that you will become as you were in the beginning, so that you will achieve unlimited happiness again, so that you will reach your goal and return as true children to Me, your Father of eternity, Whose love is and eternally will be for you who once came forth from His love."

The Fall of the Angels – 1

BD No. 8858 of 09/23/1964 taken from book 93

God the Father is speaking: "In the beginning only perfection emanated from Me. Hence you can object when I Am described to you as a Creator who has created 'unclean' spirits. I Myself Am the Creator of all beings because there is no strength apart from Me which could create beings. And thus, the first spirit of light whom I externalized was enlightened by My strength, and only perfection could emanate from our mutual will of love and strength. And this is precisely what you have to understand, that I cannot act in opposition to My order of eternity, that I could not have externalized imperfect beings from within Myself either, who did not decide to abandon Me voluntarily until after an infinitely long time, who were not influenced by Me in any way to infringe against the divine order but who acted with completely free will. Only in view of that can you understand My eternal plan, that My objective is their deification, and in view of that you can also understand why Lucifer, the light bearer, became My direct opposite.

When you are given an entirely impossible description concerning the creation of beings you will doubt My perfection, and you will also doubt My love for every creation which, 'according to My will' was (supposed to be) 'faulty' from the start. In that case you cannot comprehend the process which was intrinsic to the rejection of My strength of love, and I have to make the truth available to you, because one error is followed by another. That such an error could have crept into divine revelation is always the result of intellectual thought, which is used by My adversary to cause confusion, which in turn is the reason why I have to reveal Myself again and again, and (in order to) lead you into the truth in all purity.

Eternities had elapsed before the apostasy from Me occurred, thus My love was able to continuously enlighten the beings and they were in a constant state of abundant blissfulness. And even the being which I had created as My first vessel for the emanation of My love had been receiving the flow of My love's strength for eternities before it detached itself from Me out of free will, which it possessed as a divine living creation. However, if I had created an 'unclean' being, I Myself could have been accused of having given life to such a being, but this cannot eternally be the case because I Am perfection Itself. I have no imperfections, I Am pure love, and this does not create anything unclean, but it will do everything to lead whatever has become unclean back to purification.

Yet, how wrongly the act of creation is depicted to you; and what consequences will result from this. And time and again I bring you the absolute truth, because without it you cannot know Me properly, because your idea of Me questions My perfection, and because of this you cannot love this Being, whose perfection you doubt, either. Because you, too, have emanated from Me in complete perfection, even though you have taken the path through the abyss to once again become what you were in the beginning. You will understand that I cannot explain all spiritual reasons in view of your lack of awareness which you are now experiencing due to the sin of rebellion against Me, nevertheless everything you are told relating to it has to correlate, and you can safely dismiss any blatant contradiction and explain it to yourselves by the fact that human intelligence, which can be influenced by the adversary, played a part in it.

Only My plan of deifying My created beings has caused Me not to oppose the apostasy of the beings, but this occurred in free will from the position of utmost perfection into the deepest abyss. God certainly helps the being to ascend but He does not compel it if it wants to descend. This does not refute the fact that they had been created in absolute perfection just like their lord who, as the light bearer, was the first to fall away. However, I had not created him in a manner that he had to do so but free will was the cause of the fall, just as *free will* has to seek to ascend again in order to become what it was in the beginning."

The Fall of the Angels - 2

BD No. 8859 of 09/24/1964 taken from book 93
(Continuation of no 8858)

God the Father is speaking: "When your belief in My perfection is taken from you, when you doubt it, then you are subject to a misguided doctrine which can entirely destroy your faith, because you then have no guarantee that I Am telling you the absolute truth, which can only be given to you by a supremely perfect Being. And in that case your former will would not have been quite so grave, because if you had been 'created imperfectly' you could also find a reason therein for having fallen, and such misguided teaching has to be most decisively rebutted. You must know that you were fully enlightened at the time of your fall, that you were not surrounded by the least amount of twilight or darkness at the

moment of your apostasy from Me and that you, like Myself, had been supremely perfect. i.e. beings of light, whose fall would simply have been incomprehensible if you had not been in possession of free will as the sign of your divinity.

The fact that the first created original spirit was endowed with the same abundance of light and need not have fallen, that he voluntarily changed himself into the opposite, was not My will, it was not My doing, it was entirely the result of his free will which, nevertheless, could not dispute My perfection. Neither had it been determined since eternity that the first created spirit had to fall, although I had known since eternity how he was going to direct his will. But if his fall had been planned, as you erroneously assume, he would not have had free will, and I would not be a perfect Being if I had transmitted My will onto him.

Surely this has to make sense to those of you who question My perfection, who allow yourselves to be influenced by descriptions offered to you by a human lack of common sense in order to undermine Me and the pure truth. I cannot counter the errors often enough which slip into My Word time and again, although I protect My messengers who receive it directly from Me. But as soon as the desire for pure truth was not predominant My adversary was also able to interfere and cause confusion by first questioning My perfection, and thus misguided teachings arose which I constantly have to correct if I want people to receive the truth. This is extremely important before the end because My Being should be accurately described to enable the emergence of love which I expect of My living creations, and this love can only be given to a supremely perfect Being, Which in Itself does not have the least imperfection. Only I alone know that and why My first created spirit has fallen, but it has been explained to you as far as you are able to understand it. But if you associate this with My will, which wants everyone to achieve utmost bliss, then it is a most blatantly misguided doctrine, which could only have been fashioned by an unenlightened spirit, a purely intellectual thought process. Because My will is good, it will never initiate something contrary to this, it can only ever express itself in accordance with My love, thus it could not have determined the fall of the first being itself, while at the same time allowing every being its free will, irrespective of how it is used.

For I have known thereof since eternity and thus have also been able to establish My plan of salvation accordingly, because I foresaw with what hatred he is opposing Me, he has now become My direct opposite who, however, nevertheless contributes towards helping Me redeem vast numbers of My beings, albeit involuntarily. Because one thing I could not do: I could not create children for Myself, because the free will of the being itself has to become active. And that has been My intention from the start, but it did not necessitate My first being's fall into the abyss because, truly, I still have many options to achieve the goal I have set Myself. And thus I Myself would not have wanted something which was (would be) a sin against Myself for which I then would (have) let the beings walk an eternally long path in agony in order to become what they were in the beginning. Such a description of My fundamental essence, Which could only create and plan with supreme perfection, is wrong and will have to be denounced time and again as wrong, because from within My power I have created everything in existence with deepest love, with superlative wisdom. And all of this proves My perfection to

you, because I do not bring something into being without meaning and reason and thus also want to be recognized and loved as supremely perfect."

Cause and Origin of Creation

BD No. 7158 of 07/03/1958 taken from book 76

God the Father is speaking: "*What occurred in the kingdom of the spirits was the reason for the origin of Creation, of the entire universe with all its manifold spiritual and material creations*. Prior to the emergence of these creations only the spiritual kingdom existed, which was a world of infinite beatitudes in which spiritual beings took pleasure in their existence and were able to create in possession of strength and light in accordance with their purpose. And this 'creating' involved spiritual creations again, they actualized thoughts and ideas which flowed to these beings from God and which they then implemented with immense bliss because the strength to do so was at their disposal and they were also able to freely use their will. And the spiritual beings' state of bliss need never have changed, they neither had to fear a restriction of their strength nor a reduction of light as long as their love for their God and Creator remained unchanged and they were thus permeated by Him with the divine light of love. But then a situation arose which exposed the beings to a new point of view, when Lucifer, the bearer of light, the first created being, presented the Eternal Deity, because He was invisible, as being doubtful, and presented himself as the one from whom all spirit-beings had emerged and also demanded their acknowledgment of him as god and creator.

This, however, caused a conflict in the beings because their love belonged to One Who created them, but Lucifer's presentation confused them, in fact, it appeared more plausible, for Lucifer radiated in light and brilliance and they were unable to behold a superior being above him. Nevertheless, they were still permeated by the light of realization; consequently, they also doubted Lucifer's portrayal. But gradually their bright moments of insight began to alternate with moments of slight blurring, and the more the being entertained the latter the longer lasted the phases of darkened thinking, or otherwise, the thoughts clarified, and the being most lucidly realized its true origin. And Lucifer was no longer capable of dulling the realization of the latter. The former, however, quickly became subject to his control, they joined him and looked upon him as their god and creator because they resisted their constantly recurring enlightened moments until their final fall into the abyss took place. Lucifer's undiminished strength in the beginning had brought a countless host of most blissful spiritual beings into existence, and due to the abundance of his creations a wrong sense of self-esteem arose in him. He no longer saw the Source from Whom he had received this strength but only the 'evidence' of the strength which permeated him, and he alone wanted to possess it, even though he knew that it also belonged to the One Whose strength he was allowed to draw upon. Yet he not only wanted to possess

it, but he also wanted to dull the beings' light which most distinctly revealed their origin to them. And thus, he succeeded in causing a conflict in the beings which, however, also lessened their happiness and hampered their creative activity, until they finally decided to accept their lord and thus the beings as well as the bearer of light forfeited their strength and light and plunged into darkness.

And this spiritual process, which can only be roughly explained to you humans, resulted in the emergence of countless spiritual and physical creations. These creations are merely reshaped, fallen spiritual beings. Due to their apostasy from God, due to their infinitely great distance from Him, their substance became increasingly harder the further away it fell. This has to be understood such that the spiritual strength from God, which induces ever increasing activity, was no longer able to touch these spiritual beings because they resisted it themselves; and thus, their activity came to an end, their mobility, their life solidified, and what remained was utterly hardened substance, which originally was indeed God's emanated strength, yet it had become totally ineffective. But God's love and wisdom had initially intended a different purpose for the spiritual beings: constant activity according to His will which, at the same time, was also intended to be the being's will. The spiritual beings had acted in opposition to their purpose, they wanted to use their strength contrary to divine will yet were no longer able to do so, since due to their apostasy they had deprived themselves of their strength. At that moment God's love seized the completely solidified spirits again, which were no longer able to recognize themselves and were no more than a cluster of God-opposing spiritual substances. His strength of love drove these substances apart and used them to let the most diverse works of creation arise. Thus, He more or less reshaped His once emanated strength, He gave every individual work of creation its task which it then complied with in the law of compulsion, so that the dissolved spiritual substance was compelled to be active but without any self-awareness, which it previously possessed as a spiritual being. Consequently, the creations are nothing other than what originally had come forth from God, just in a completely different state as far as their perfection is concerned. For all creations are or shelter only imperfect spiritual spirits which are on the path of return to God. Perfect spiritual beings did not require material creations, they only externalized their ideas and thoughts, but these were only the spiritual products of their will and thinking and their unlimited strength again. It was a world which was only inhabited by perfect beings. No flaws, no limits and no deficiencies existed therein. For these only surfaced when the universe sheltered God-opposing beings, when imperfect spiritual beings needed shells in which they were forced to become active.

And so, wherever forms can be found they also contain captive imperfect spirits within, and the more solid these forms are the more hardened and God-opposing is the bound spiritual substance inside. But even the form itself, the material part, consists of such imperfect substances which are only held together by God's strength of love in order to serve a purpose: as carriers of spiritual beings to help them to progress. Divine strength of love enclosed all these spiritual substances, but it will not compellingly influence them by forcefully breaking their resistance. A work of creation must indeed carry out a specific activity according to God's will but the spirit within is not forced to turn to God. And this is why it is

possible that the spirit of an original being can cover the whole process through the works of creation up to the final embodiment as a human being and still not have relinquished its resistance to God, because this has to be achieved by its free will which can just as well turn to the prince of darkness again. But the constant activity in the law of compulsion usually achieves a reduction of resistance to God, because even the slightest activity gives the being a certain sense of comfort already, since an expression of strength corresponds to its fundamental nature. The countless worlds of the stars, all their inherent creations, are the result of this past apostasy in the kingdom of the spirits. They will still continue to exist for eternities; time and again new creations will arise in order to enable the once fallen spirits the opportunity to return to God."

Creation is God's Work

BD No. 8613 of 09/11/1963 taken from book 90

God the Father is speaking: "My works of creation demonstrate My infinite love for you, My supreme wisdom and My omnipotence, because they solely originated for the sake of salvation, for returning the once fallen spirits. Thus, the entire work of creation is the expression of My infinite love because it was especially intended for the spiritual beings which opposed Me, which therefore rejected My love and likewise were no longer worthy of My love. And yet, precisely these opposing spirits motivated Me to bring forth works of creation so that they might give up their resistance and return to Me again.

Hence love paid no attention to the resistance at first but imprisoned the fallen beings, i.e. My wisdom and might disintegrated the beings into countless tiny particles and the strength of My love encased them, it reshaped the once emanated strength of beings into works of creation and My wisdom assigned them their purpose again. Love, wisdom and power were constantly at work for the emergence of a work of creation; consequently, the creation was and is, in the true sense of the word, divine work which testifies of My fundamental nature and should appear to you humans as the greatest miracle, if you seriously think about it. And this creation will remain a miracle, for the works are not lifeless things but change constantly. The functions of the individual works of creation provide every thinking human being with the evidence of a living God full of wisdom, whose strength of will and love is inexhaustible, Whose power is limitless, Who constantly creates forms containing minute particles which are of service within the works of creation through the law of compulsion. Since I withdrew these fallen spirits from My adversary's power, from the power of the spirit who once had caused their downfall, whom they once had followed voluntarily, even though they belonged to him, precisely because they had followed him voluntarily, he was deprived of his power over the spirits which My strength of love had turned into matter. These beings were removed from the adversary's influence and are now subject to My law. They were no longer free, since they had given up their freedom, but for their own sake I placed them into My law of service in a constrained state.

All of creation is a work of My love for this fallen unhappy spiritual substance which travels the path through the creation in great agony. But once the previously fallen being has made its way through the creation and then lives on

earth as a human being he will also recognize the work of creation to a limited extent and can rejoice in it, since his state of agony is over. Before him he will see the works of creation in all their glory, which will give evidence to him of the Creator's love, wisdom and power as soon as he begins to abandon his last resistance to Me. He himself is indeed free to some extent but now he is subject to My adversary's influence again, who previously had no power at all over the being. The human being still belongs to My adversary until he has voluntarily detached himself from him.

And thus, you have to understand correctly: Creation can and will please you humans because it is My work, but I used the strength which emanated from Me in the shape of spiritual beings for its origin. I simply reshaped them into My love and wisdom's most diverse creations, but they are nevertheless the fallen spirits in substance, thus part of My adversary, and they will remain so until they, entirely redeemed, return to Me again. You humans do not see the fallen spirit in creation but only see the works of My love, and you may enjoy them, you may recognize Me Myself therein and consider yourselves fortunate to have covered the path through My creations already and are nearing your perfection. But you should also remember that the real world is a spiritual world which can only be seen by someone with spiritual vision, that everything visible to you humans is but a pale reflection of this real spiritual world. You should remember that all matter is hardened spiritual substance and that this solidification was again only the result of the resistance to Me, the rejection of My strength of love. Then you will also understand that the material world in its substance is spirit in opposition to Me, which My love and wisdom merely oblige to be of service in order to break its resistance and to return it to its original state once again.

Hence the solidification of spiritual substance was caused by the beings' apostasy from Me, and therefore the hardened spirit substance still belongs to My adversary until it is spiritualized once more. However, this does not prevent Me from removing his power over this spirit substance and reshaping it into all kinds of creations for the purpose of its final, voluntary withdrawal from him and return to Me. And thus, creation always remains divine work, a work of My infinite love and wisdom which only I Myself, who possesses all power and strength and Who can implement anything His love and wisdom wants and has recognized to be successful, was able to bring into existence."

The Process of Creation has taken Eternities.

BD No. 8770 of 03/04/1964 taken from book 92

God the Father is speaking: "The process of creation was not the work of a moment, even though it truly would have been within My power, but then creation would have missed its purpose, since it was intended to ensure a gradual development from the abyss to the pinnacle and therefore continued for an infinitely long time. Hence you humans should understand that the description in the Scriptures, in the Book of the Fathers, only informs you of this act of creation in a pictorial manner, because people who still lack deeper awareness would be unable to

understand the true process, and it is only intended to teach them that creation once came forth from My hand, that it was and is the work of My will and My might.

Anyone who wants to delve deeper will also come to a more profound understanding. At first it is only necessary to know of a Power which brought everything into existence the human being can see around himself, as well as the creations he is unable to see. Before the far-reaching correlations can be explained to him he has to know about the original beginning (angels) of what My strength of love emanated as independent beings. And he has to know about these beings' apostasy from Me and the immense original sin with which the beings were then burdened. Only then can the emergence of creation and the process of return through creation be explained to him. But anyone with an unenlightened spirit will hold on to the letter and will never clearly understand it since he is not open to instructions by spiritually enlightened people either.

Every work of creation required an infinitely long time of preliminary development which, however, always related to the spiritual substance which should progress within a work of creation. It had fallen so low that it also needed an endless length of time in order to ascend again within the various kinds of creations, from the most primitive to the most beautifully formed works brought into existence by My will in order to shelter the spiritual substance and enable its path of ascent. And therefore, the creation work Earth, too, was, in the beginning, a mere cluster of utterly immature spirits whose substances gradually condensed to form a mass which could not yet be described as hard matter but had to be understood as basic elements, without form but with tremendous effect of strength, for they contained totally uncontrolled spiritual substances. Yet My wisdom distributed everything in the right measure and used every element for My creative work, so that separate forms arose which had to comply with their destined purpose; and thus began the slow construction of the visible works of creation which continued for an endless time until the earth started to show vegetation and increasingly more mature spiritual substances were able to occupy those creations to travel the path of higher development in this plant world; Then followed the first living beings, creations, which could already perform a certain, albeit very small task, imposed on them by natural law.

And, again, an infinitely long time of development passed from these minute living beings to the world of animals which included ever larger and stronger forms, in which many spiritual substances had already come together and united in order to keep fulfilling the task of cultivating the earth for the final crowning work of divine creation, for the human being, who had to pass through all those preliminary stages and whose soul now is the composition of all those tiny particles which belonged to a once fallen original spirit and which, in a dissolved state, had to go through all works of creation in order to gradually evolve again in this way.

Consequently, the human being could not have been created at the time of 'creating the world,' just as all works of creation have never been My instant work, precisely because the slow advancement had to proceed first or the whole of the creation work would have been meaningless and without purpose, for it did not come into being for My sake but for the sake of My fallen living creations and thus

was also meant to fulfill the purpose of leading the fallen spirits back to Me again. And yet, every work of creation was My externalized thought which was always implemented when the spiritual substance had reached a certain degree of maturity and required a new form in order to continue its path of development. And thus, different creations arose periodically. The plant world only became necessary when the world of rocks released the spiritual substance which then required a new and lighter form. And likewise small and minute living creations arose after the creation of the plant world. And only I knew when one was necessary for the other, and I also knew how much time the larger living creations, the animals up to the pre-Adamites, would need to mature their embodied soul-substances. Hence, I also knew when the time had come that the individual tiny particles of the spiritual being had merged again in order to embody itself as 'soul' in the last form. Then I externalized a work of creation again, the human being, whose external shape is so skillfully created that a maturing to final perfection will be possible. And this creation of the human being also occurred an infinitely long time ago, which you humans cannot establish since your concept of time is still limited, but My work of return has already lasted for an eternity. And although eternities had passed before the appearance of the human being, before the earth with all its works of creation was ready for the human being to take possession of it for the purpose of his final maturing, this point in time is also very remote, because time and again periodical immense upheavals and changes occur on earth which make it impossible to calculate the duration of time since the beginning of earth and of the human being.

But this is certain; you humans will only be able to gain a real insight into My eternal plan of Salvation when you have attained the appropriate degree of enlightenment yourselves. For until then you will be intellectually incapable to envision the length of time for which the concept of 'eternities' could be applied. And for as long as your spirit is still unenlightened it has to be explained to you in an illustrative manner. Only an awakened spirit will be able to gain deeper insight, yet ultimate wisdom will only become explicable when it enters the kingdom of light where everything can be revealed because everything will then also be comprehensible."

The Transformation of the Original Spirit into Creations

BD No. 8216 of 07/16/1962 taken from book 86

God the Father is speaking: "My Word shall bring you clarity, it shall answer questions and solve problems which you are unable to solve intellectually yourselves. You shall become knowledgeable if you desire to know, you shall be educated in all truth, for I want to give you light and illuminate your spirit, so that you do not continue to live in darkness and damage your soul, for I want to save it for all eternity. My immense love only ever wants your soul's salvation because I long for your return, for unity with you, which requires the perfection of your soul. You once came forth from Me in all perfection, for I created you as My images, as utmost perfect beings, as miniatures of Myself and yet of the same quality, because your fundamental element was love since you came forth from the original source of Love, Which created vessels for Itself in order to emanate Itself

into the vessels, in order to let this strength of love continually flow into these created beings.

These beings, My images, were pure love. They were My radiated strength of love which could indeed perceive and behold each other but they were unable to behold Me Myself from Whom they originated, because I was the original fullness of strength of love Myself which they could not see, or they would have ceased to exist. For I had externalized them as tiniest sparks, as independent beings, as I have already explained to you several times, although, as a purely spiritual process it will never be quite understood by you humans on earth. But since these beings were independent entities endowed with free will and a lot of strength and light at their disposal due to the fact that they were constantly permeated by the flow of My love's strength, I could not prevent them from misusing their free will such that they turned away from Me, that they, when faced by their test of will to acknowledge Me as their God and Creator, denied Me this acknowledgment.

They turned to My first created being, Lucifer, who was visible to them and whose beauty stood out in brilliant radiance, and rejected the emanation of My love's strength, which meant that they distanced themselves ever more from Me as the primary source of light and strength. This process, too, has been explained to you humans time and again as far as I could make it understandable to you. But now you should know that although My externalized living creations could indeed change themselves into the opposite, they could not perish but continued to exist and will continue to exist for all eternity. The beings' fundamental substance was love, thus strength which, according to eternal law, has to be active, it cannot remain inactive forever. Due to the ever-increasing distance from Me as a result of rejecting My emanation of love, My created original beings' spiritual substance became solid, and thus these beings became incapable of working and becoming active. And so I dissolved the original spirits, I transformed the beings which were My once externalized emanated strength, and creation came into being, in which the strength could work again, thus become active in accordance with My will.

Consequently, you can rightly say that the whole of creation consists of original spirits transformed by My will, the same strength which I emanated in form of self-aware beings were now changed into other forms, into works of creation of every kind. I then assigned a task to every work of creation, and thus the original spiritual substance, dissolved in particles, now passes through all creations and serves Me in the law of compulsion. The strength becomes active in relation to My will because strength must become effective in line with fundamental law. Always consider that the first created spiritual entities were My emanated strength, irrespective of whether they were dissolved or joined together again after an endless time, the first created spirit will not cease to exist. It was bound in these creations and unable to resist, it had to be of service, but thereby was also able to reach the degree of development which gained it ever more freedom and finally also placed the spiritual being into the state of free will, from where it then has to decide whether it wants to continue its ascent or return into the abyss once more, for God certainly helps the being to ascend but He does not compel it if it wants to descend.

On its path of return to Me it passed through all creations and finally enters the form of the human being, as his soul, the last brief stretch of the path when it has to achieve unity with Me again, when it has to consciously accept the emanation of My love again, because voluntary return to Me requires the original spirit to relinquish his resistance to the emanation of My love's strength. Then it will once again be the Godlike living creation, My image, the fallen original spirit, the perfectly created being."

Development of the Soul - Original Spirit

BD No. 7571 of 04/07/1960 taken from book 80

God the Father is speaking: *"Spiritual substance matures during every developmental period, and one period can in fact suffice for the spiritual substance to progress through the creations to the point that it is able to embody itself as a human being and successfully pass its last test of will.* But several such periods may be needed for this spiritualization of hardened soul-substances if resistance is so strong that its higher development is too slow and the existence as a human being carries an added risk of the soul descending into the abyss again. For free will, which is tested during the stage as a human being, is decisive.

But prior to this, free will is constrained. Although the hardened spiritual substance is no longer subject to God's adversary's will due to this process of development through the creations of earth, the individual substances are nevertheless unable to use free will, instead they are controlled by God's will, that is, their process of development takes place in a state of compulsion, they are subject to God's will, Who assigns a task to all spiritual substances within the works of creation. By accomplishing this task within the law of compulsion they gradually progress, i.e. their resistance lessens; they carry out a helpful function and are able to slowly reach the state when their free will can be returned to them. And this process of development requires constant changes of the external shape, it is a slow ascent, it is an integration with the laws of nature and therefore a submission to God's will, if only due to a certain amount of coercion which, however, only helps to relieve the being and one day is meant to provide it with the freedom to think, want and act using its own will again.

And this process through the works of creation cannot be avoided if the spiritual being is to return to God again, from Whom it had distanced itself to such an infinite extent as a result of its apostasy that it would never be able to overcome this distance of its own strength, and would never be released by God's adversary to return either if God did not remove the spiritual substance from him for the very purpose of banishing it into matter, into the creations on this earth. God's adversary is entitled to the fallen spirits because they had voluntarily followed him into the abyss. But God has the same right because the beings emerged from His strength. Hence God is justified in removing them from the adversary's control, but in return the latter was given the right to influence the soul again when it lives on earth in the stage as a human being. And to this end the spiritual substance must have attained a degree of maturity again when it is able to use its will in order to freely decide which lord to choose.

But God cannot place the spiritual substance into this state instantly, it has to cover the process of ascent in the same progressive stages as it had descended,

it has to relinquish its resistance slowly, as it cannot forcibly be broken. And this requires innumerable changes of form, through the world of rocks, plants and animals to the human being. Every change of external shape also lessens its resistance, for the being has been of service in a state of compulsion by which it gains increasingly lighter forms. But the sin of apostasy from God is so vast that the distance from Him is therefore vast as well, which means that untold changes of shapes are needed to reduce this distance in order to come closer to God again, when only the last free decision of will is required for the last form to fall off, for the being to return to the Father again from Whom it had originated.

And this whole process of development within the creations of earth is a continuous battle. The spiritual substance tries to burst the external shape because it experiences it as a constraint, but each time it also experiences the rupture of the form as a relief irrespective of its level of maturity. And this is why the struggle, which you humans are able to observe in the animal kingdom, only seems cruel in your eyes, whereas time and again every animal experiences the change of its external shape as a relief. For this reason, God permits or even wants the weaker to succumb to the stronger, the stronger to terminate the life of the weaker and, in a manner of speaking, is thereby even able to serve the spiritual substance to continue its development. Therefore, as long as the being is subject to the law of compulsion everything is determined by God, its end as well as its new formation. However, as soon as the being has reached the stage of a human being and has received its free will again, God withdraws His will. And then the human being is given laws which he has to observe if his earthly life is to be successful. On the one hand he is tied to the laws of nature, and on the other hand he is informed of God's will, to which he has to submit if his development is to progress and reach a conclusion, for the goal is to become free of every external shape and to enter the kingdom of light as a free spirit, to return to the Father's house, to God, from whence the being once originated."

Every Soul is an Original Spirit – The Soul of Jesus

BD No. 8008a of 10/01/1961 taken from book 84

God the Father is speaking: "You should pay attention to My voice when it speaks to you, for My spirit will guide you into truth. If you want to be instructed of the truth then you can only receive it from Me Myself, the Eternal Truth Itself: When I once externalized the beings of My love, every being (angel) was a self-aware spirit which had a most intimate relationship with Me and was constantly permeated by My love. The permeation of love placed the being into a state of brightest realization, it was illuminated, it recognized Me Myself and everything that surrounded it. Every being was an immeasurably happy God-like spirit. And yet, for reasons which have been explained to you many times already, countless beings fell away from Me while many others remained with Me. The former lost their light, whereas the latter kept their immense abundance of light and did not follow My adversary, the first fallen original spirit, into the abyss. And with these remaining original spirits I create and work in infinity. But you humans are also aware of the fact that I set Myself the goal for the deification of all created spiritual beings and that this deification has to be accomplished by the being's own free will. You know why the beings had once fallen, and you also received the

information of My eternal plan of Salvation which pursues the return of all fallen spirits (who want to return to God) and which will certainly be achieved one day. You are aware of the fact that childship to God is the highest goal and that, according to My plan of eternity, all beings, which live on earth as humans, are able to achieve childship to God, if their free will seriously strives for it. Then every once fallen being will have attained the highest degree of bliss, it will have become My image, it will be able to create and work entirely of its own free will and, yet it will be completely the same as My will, it will no longer be determined by Me yet My child will have completely acquired My will and will therefore be inconceivably happy. And this exceedingly high degree of bliss is also desired by My remaining spiritual beings, for although they are in direct contact with Me, although they are constantly permeated by My strength of love, they are still created beings according to My will which cannot but think and act according to My will, which are more or less only ever implementers of My will. Making this difference clear to you humans requires a high degree of maturity which you do not possess as yet, so in view of your limited thinking I can only explain to you such things which your intellect is able to grasp, precisely because you lost this profound realization about all correlations in the spiritual kingdom as a result of your fall into the abyss and have not yet attained the final realization on earth. Nevertheless, it suffices you to know that the beings which remained with Me will also take the path across Earth one day in order to attain childship to God, which will immeasurably augment their beatitude.

This path across earth therefore requires a life in the flesh, the existence as a human being, just like the once fallen spiritual beings must do in order to pass their test of will. Consequently, a spirit of light wishing to embody itself on earth will also choose (create) an earthly body for its abode whose spiritual substances have already attained a certain degree of maturity so that a spirit of light can occupy it, that it will animate the dead external form, the human body, and start its path across Earth in it. This spirit of light is therefore the spiritual strength which has to flow into a human body, which is born into the world as a human being and which can only 'live' when this spiritual strength, the soul, the divine breath, is breathed into this external form by My all-embracing Fatherly love, which has set Itself the goal of deifying all Its created beings into children. So this angel-spirit animates the human being as a soul, and since the body's substances, although more clarified than those of most people, are still immature, since they, in My adversary's world, are also exposed to his influences, and since the angel-spirit has to fulfill a spiritual task on earth as well and is also usually unaware of its origin, the soul, its real Self, must resist all temptations which confront it from outside. It must fight against all instincts which still adhere to the body, because the latter had passed through all works of creation, and as a human must often travel an extremely difficult path of life during which his free will must not fail, where he will always have to take refuge in Me as his Father so as not to lose the strength he needs on earth. *For as an angel-spirit he had voluntarily given up his abundance of light and strength when he started the process across earth. Nevertheless, the bond with Me is very strong because such a person is permeated by unusually ardent love which is the most reliable guarantee that he will reach his goal on earth, that he will return to Me as 'My child' because this*

was his greatest desire while he was in My kingdom. Hence every spirit of light will always go through the same process, it will always, as a 'soul', enter an earthly material form which will exert a more or less strong influence due to its multifarious composition and which will present many tasks to the soul, for this external form will always have passed through earthly matter, unless, due to previous unusual influences having clarified its substances already, it can very quickly follow the requirements of My divine spiritual spark which, in the embodied beings of light glows especially brightly and can achieve a complete spiritualization of all substances faster.

And so, the soul of Jesus was also a most elevated spirit of light. He, too, entered an earthly material external form and gave life to this form when He, as a soul, took possession of the external cover, when He was born on earth. The vessel which gave birth to Him was pure and immaculate, His conception was not a low act of the senses, even so, his body was the same as every other human body because He was meant to accomplish the work of spiritualization as an example which should and can be emulated by all people. His soul, even though it came from above, was also harassed by immature spirits which He was not allowed to shake off but which, by virtue of His love, He had to spiritualize as well, which required tremendous work on Himself and such work must likewise be carried out by every angel-spirit in earthly life, because the process through the 'abyss' also means the conquering of everything that belongs to the abyss and afflicts these people. Their great love, however, accomplishes this work with perseverance and patience. And usually, they succeed in spiritualizing body and soul, that is, to also redeem the still unspiritual substances which join the soul, to establish complete order in themselves while at the same time fulfilling an exalted mission they voluntarily offered to do."

Self-awareness of the Original Spirit

BD No. 7569 of 04/05/1960 taken from book 80

God the Father is speaking: "Every original spirit regains its self-awareness when it lives as a human being on earth and recognizes itself as a human being. Then all the small particles of soul, which were once dissolved for the purpose of return through creation, are gathered in the spirit again, and then the being will be able to acquire the degree of maturity which it originally possessed as a created spirit, which it had renounced and now has to regain in order to enter the spiritual kingdom as a spirit of light. ***And thus, every human being is an embodied original spirit, a once fallen being, My eternal love's product of creation, which had merely left Me of its own free will and therefore also has to return to Me again of its own choice.***

But the human being does not know what he was, what he is and what he should become again*. He first needs a certain level of maturity before he can receive and understand this knowledge. He certainly recognizes himself as a human being soon enough but not as a spiritual being that is to fulfill its purpose, and since he only recognizes himself as a human being living on earth, his thoughts are more directed towards the world. And this usually prevents spiritual awareness which he will only experience when he turns away from the world towards the spiritual kingdom. Then it is possible to inform him of his real*

purpose, and then he will be able to accept and adjust to it voluntarily, which will certainly result in his full spiritual maturity. However, once he has accepted it he will also be happy at the thought and the certainty of belonging to the original spirits which I externalized as living creations and which return to Me as children, and as human beings are therefore approaching their perfection.

And only the human will needs to be good, because then it will focus on Me of its own accord. The human being asks for his God and Creator and this resolve is already the right decision, it will have passed the test of will which confronts the original spirit as human being on earth. Life on this earth does not last long but it can fully suffice for a person to spiritualize himself so completely that he acquires the degree which results in the childship to God, i.e. which returns the original spirit into a state of perfection again. On account of his resolve, he will have achieved the highest degree himself and can then stay in closest proximity to Me where the direct emanation of My love is assured to him, even though every original spirit will be able to ascend ever higher once he is allowed to enter the kingdom of light, provided the right decision of will was made on earth. And every original spirit is ecstatically happy when he becomes aware of the infinitely long path, he had travelled in order to achieve the greatest abundance of light, in order to be immensely blissful. And he will sing My praises and give thanks and glorify Me eternally, he will be and remain My child which will never leave Me again, which will create and shape in accordance with My will for its own happiness."

Immortality of the Soul

BD No. 1874b of 04/04/1941 taken from book 28

Jesus is speaking: "The construction of a human being always requires the same components: body, soul and spirit. The body, the external form, performs the functions which are determined by the soul. Consequently, the body is just the agent through which the souls will is accomplished. At the moment of death, the soul no longer needs an agent for service as it did on earth. i.e. in the visible work of creation, because it changes its environment and moves into regions where nothing externally visible needs to be done. The body, which was just the instrument for the earthly path during which the soul should have formed itself into the carrier of the divine spirit, becomes unnecessary.

The spirit, the third component of the living being, lies in fact dormant in every human being and only becomes active when the will of the soul pays more attention to the spirit than to the body, that is, when the soul considers the earthly demands less important than the demands of the spirit, which always amounts to earthly needs becoming secondary. Although body, soul and spirit belong together they nevertheless can have separate goals. The soul can direct its will more towards the demands of the body, but it can also disregard those and make its will available to the spirit within itself. And it is precisely this direction of will that decides its life in the beyond, i.e. the state the soul finds itself in after the earthly life, which can be blissful or distressing. The earthly life, the function of the body, is therefore just a temporary condition for the soul. The soul impels the body to all actions on earth, but it has by no means ceased to exist when the body cannot perform its function any longer. The soul has indeed left the body because it moves into regions where it no longer requires an exterior form.

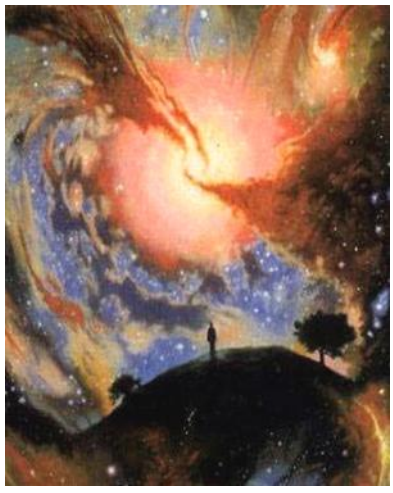
But to consider the soul dead as well would be a completely wrong concept of its essence, because the soul is something that cannot pass away. Indeed, when the human body is dead the soul can no longer determine it's functions; it can, due to a lack of maturity because it had not given enough consideration to the spirit within itself, also fall into a state of inactivity; but it can never 'cease to exist'. Because the soul is something spiritual that is everlasting, while the body consists of earthly substance, of matter, and is therefore subject to constant change and finally disintegrates into its components as soon as the soul has left the body."

God's Plan for Man

MV Vol. 1:27-30

Jesus is speaking: "God desired to put a king in the universe that He had created out of nothing. A king, who by the nature of matter should be the first amongst all the creatures created with matter and endowed with matter. A king, who by nature of the spirit should be little less than divine, united to Grace as he was in his first innocent day. But the Supreme Mind, to Whom all the most remote events in centuries are known, incessantly seeks what *was*, *is,* and *will be*: and while It contemplates the past, and observes the present, It penetrates deeply with Its foresight into the most distant future and knows in every detail how the last man will die. Without confusion or discontinuity, the Supreme Mind has always known that the king created to be demigod at Its side in Heaven, heir of the Father, would arrive adult in His Kingdom, after living in the house of His mother - the earth, with which He was made - during His childhood, as child of the Eternal Father for His day on Earth. The Supreme Mind has always known that man would have committed against himself the crime of killing Grace in himself and the theft of robbing himself of Heaven.

Why then did He create him? Certainly, many asked themselves why. Would you have preferred not to exist? Does this day not deserve, in itself, to be lived, although so poor and bare, and rendered harsh by your wickedness, so that you may know and admire the infinite Beauty that the hand of God has sown in the universe?



From whom would He have created the stars and planets that fly like thunderbolts and arrows, furrowing the vault of Heaven, or dash majestically in their rush of meteors, and yet seems slow, presenting you with light and seasons, eternally immutable and yet always mutable. They give you a new page to read on the sky, every evening, every month, every year, as if they wished to say: 'Forget your restriction, forsake your printed matter which is full of obscure, putrid, dirty, poisonous, false, swearing, corrupting material and rise, at least with your eyes, to the unlimited freedom of the firmament, make your souls bright looking at so clear a sky. Build up a supply of light to take to your dark prison. Read the word that we write singing our sidereal (relating to, or concerned with the stars or constellations) chorus, which is more harmonious than the one drawn from a cathedral organ.

The word that we write while shining, the word that we write while loving, bears in mind Him Who gave us the joy of existing. And we love Him for giving us our existence, our brightness, our movement, our freedom, our beauty in the midst of the gentle azure, beyond which we can see and even more sublime blue: Paradise. And we fulfill the second part of His commandment of love, by loving you, our universal neighbors, loving you by giving you guidance and light, warmth and beauty. Read the word we say, the one on which we modulate our singing, our brightness, our smile: God!'

For whom would He have made the blue sea, the mirror of the sky, the way to the land, the smile of waters, the voice of waves? The sea itself is a word that with the rustling of silk, with the smiles and happy girls, with the signs of old people who remember and weep, with the clamor of violence, with clashes and roars always speaks and says: 'God.' The sea is for you, as the sky and the stars are. And with the sea, the lakes and rivers, the ponds and streams, the pure springs, all of which served to nourish you, to quench your thirst, to clean you: and they serve you serving their Creator, without submerging you, as you deserve.

For whom would He have created the countless families of plants and flowers that look like butterflies, like gems and motionless birds, and the families of fruits that are like jewels or jewel cases and are a carpet on your feet and the trees that form shelters for your heads, a welcome relaxation and joy to your minds, your limbs, your sight and smell?

For whom would He have made the minerals in the bowels of the earth and the salt dissolved in cold and boiling springs, the iodine and the bromines unless one should enjoy them, one who was not God, but the son of God? One: man.

The joy of God lacking nothing: God had no need. He is sufficient in Himself. He has only to contemplate Himself to rejoice, to nourish Himself, to live to rest. The whole creation has not increased by one atom His infinite joy, beauty, life, power. He made everything for the creature that he wanted to place as king in the work made by Him: that creature is man.

It is worthwhile living to see such a work of God and to be grateful to His power that gives you the opportunity. And you must be grateful to be alive. You should have been grateful even if you had to wait till Doomsday to be redeemed, because you have been prevaricators, proud, lascivious and murderers in your First Parents and you are still so individually. Yet God allows you to enjoy the beauty of the universe, the goodness of the universe: and He treats you as if you were good children, who are taught and granted everything so that their lives might be happier and more pleasant. What you know, you know by the light of God. What you discover, you discover through the guidance of God in Goodness. Other knowledge and discoveries that bear the mark of evil come from the Supreme Evil: Satan."

The Soul's Process of Development before Embodiment

BD No. 6930 of 09/29/1957 taken from book 74

"You humans have passed through many forms"

God the Father is speaking: "You humans have passed through many forms, i.e., your real Self, your soul, had to go through a long process of development before it was allowed to incarnate in a human body. And this process of development was the path through all the works of creation. Dissolved into countless minute particles the soul had to animate each one of these works of creation and thus slowly mature, as soon as various particles had joined each other they had to constantly enter new forms, and all forms, the innumerable works of creation, contributed towards the maturing of these substances of soul until, finally, all particles were allowed to come together again and as a human soul enter and give life to the last form, the human body. Hence you all had to travel this path of development since due to your past fall into sin the separation from God became so great that the soul in its lifeless state, which was the result of its apostasy, would never have been able to overcome this vast distance from Him. It first had to be brought back to life. But life could not be granted to the beings which had become sinful; they had to acquire it through being of service. However, the being would never serve voluntarily because it would have been prevented from doing so by God's adversary, whom it had followed into the abyss.

But it wasn't meant to remain eternally subject to death, it was meant to be given the opportunity to attain life, and this 'opportunity' was the creation. God seized the fallen spirits from His adversary and made them serve Himself, He gave every work of creation its purpose according to natural law and made it fulfill this purpose in a state of compulsion.

As a result, it had to be of service and, if only after an infinitely long time, thereby acquired a weak life which nevertheless enabled it to become constantly more active. For every being having once emerged from God's love was His emanated strength which wants to be active. However, the beings which had joined God's adversary rejected God's illumination of love, which is needed for living, thus for a being's activity, and therefore it fell into the state of death. And where it left to the being itself it would never be able to come alive again because its fall into the abyss made it completely helpless. For this reason, God called a

work into existence which at first ruled out the being's will for activity, which subordinated itself entirely to His will and which, through 'natural law', carried out the purpose He had assigned to this work, to the whole of creation.

His plan consisted of slowly bringing back to life what was lifeless, of giving it the possibility to be active again. And thus, it was joined to the individual works of creation in tiny particles and through natural law obliged to get active again. *It was bound in these creations and unable to resist, it had to be of service, but thereby was also able to reach the degree of development which gained it ever more freedom and finally also placed the spiritual being into the state of free will, from where it then has to decide whether it wants to continue its ascent or return into the abyss once more; For God certainly helps the being to ascend but He does not compel it if it wants to descend. This decision of free will therefore takes place during the final stage of development on this earth, when the soul is embodied as a human being and can use its free will again at its own discretion*. Then the human being must recognize the great mercy of the former process of development and make conscious use of his earthly life, he must prove himself worthy and have the will that his final stage shall take him to the goal, he must strive whole-heartedly for his perfection and thus prove that he belongs to God; he must do whatever it takes so as not to fall again into the hands of the one from whom God's love had helped him become free throughout infinitely long times. He must not live carelessly during this short time but again and again only remember the spiritual goal which will release him from all constraints, which signifies the reunion with God in light and strength and happiness. And thus, you humans were given earthly life for the sake of liberating your soul from a bondage which was placed upon you by God's adversary since time immemorial, but which was its own fault and thus it will also have to remove its own share in order to gain its freedom and everlasting life."

Composition of the Soul - miniature creation

BD No. 4845 of 02/24/1950 taken from book 55

God the Father is speaking: "The human being's soul is a formation consisting of inconceivably numerous miniature creations. It is effectively a composition of creations which were its past embodiments, so that it can be called the whole work of God's creation Who demonstrated His infinite love, wisdom, and omnipotence in the human soul. The human being has no idea that he shelters the entire creation in his soul, but when, after the death of his body, he is able to behold himself in the spiritual kingdom he will look with utmost reverence and love for God upon the works of wonder he finds within himself again. The soul substance of every embodiment during this process of development is gathered, and thus the individual substances of the human soul have moved through the whole of creation and now exhibit an incredible versatility. Only then will it become obvious how magnificent God's works of creation are, and His greatness, His love, wisdom and omnipotence will emerge so distinctly that all living creations remain poised in reverence and love for God Who provides such immeasurable happiness to His living creations through becoming aware of His strength and the realization of Himself. However, the soul requires a certain degree of maturity as to be able to behold itself; this is why it is one of the beatitudes

belonging to those in the kingdom of light. Beholding the soul is part of Jesus´ promise 'eye has not seen, nor ear heard, the things which I have prepared for those who love Me.' Hence the soul can examine all areas, it can behold what it has never seen before, but which is undeniably present in creation, and it is aware of the fact that these wonders will never end, that constantly new formations emerge and yet it will never tire of beholding these creations, instead it will want to see increasingly more and thus also become increasingly happier. The soul is something imperceptible for human senses and therefore cannot be understood either. For the person on earth, it is something spiritual, in the spiritual kingdom, however, it is the essence, it is that which animates the spiritual creations, it is the true living being in the spiritual kingdom because it is permeated by the strength of God. And thus, it finds within itself every thought of God again which He shaped into a form through His strength of will. Every work of creation is a manifested thought of God. And so, the human soul is an enormous work of creation in miniature, yet for people on earth it is a doubtful concept, it is something of whose existence they are not entirely convinced and which they can never prove scientifically either. Earthly people consider the soul a nothing or a questionable object, in truth, however, it is the most magnificent creation which gives evidence of God's love, wisdom and omnipotence, which glorifies Him in the spiritual kingdom, which is everlasting and gives rise to constantly praising God by all those who dwell in the kingdom of light and are blessed."

The Soul's Process of Pre-Development

BD No. 7259 of 01/18/1959 taken from book 77

God the Father is speaking: "It is difficult to convince people of the fact that they had already travelled an infinitely long path before they reached their existence as human beings. It is difficult, given that precisely this knowledge is not included in the Gospel, which is the foundation of every church organization. But God knows why He did not incorporate this knowledge, why He did not give his disciples the instruction to spread this knowledge, of which Jesus' disciples were most certainly informed. He only gave them the task of proclaiming the divine teaching of love, He made the commandments of love for God and one's neighbor the subject of what they were to proclaim as Gospel to their fellow human beings, which were also proclaimed by Jesus as a human being on this earth. *For every person who lives up to this teaching of love will gain increasingly more knowledge and subsequently also find out about the human soul's infinitely long process of pre-development, which only has to pass its last test of will on earth.*

The commandment of love is, in fact, the first and most important commandment, a person will not benefit from any knowledge, and regardless of how profound it is, if he fails to live a life of love. *For even this knowledge would just be misconstrued intellectual information since only love is the key to realization and without love everything will remain incomprehensible, which is evident in the present time, since the said information will not be believed because it cannot be realized as long a person's thinking is not illuminated by love.* Everyone willing to love will dwell on it and not entirely reject it but he might perhaps question why such knowledge was not given to people earlier, why it isn't mentioned in the Book of Books. And the same answer applies that knowledge is

only of value for a person if it has come alive through love. This is why every kind-hearted person will also be guided into deeper knowledge when the time is right. But since humanity is near the end they shall live even more responsibly. *The knowledge about the soul's process of preliminary development can increase this sense of responsibility in people which, in view of the near end, is not to be underestimated.* Even people who are as yet unable to believe can be prompted by thoughts to change their way of life. On the other hand, however, this knowledge is not necessary if a person lives a life of love according to God's will. Then he will receive the knowledge instantly when he enters the kingdom of the beyond; he will brightly and clearly recognize what appeared unbelievable or was entirely unknown to him on earth.

But during the last days everything possible will be done on the part of God for the human being to reach the goal with ease. His attention will be drawn to his earthly task and the great significance of fulfilling this task, and in view of the end he will also be informed of the previous development, although without proof. However, everyone can obtain this proof for himself if he lived a life of love which could enlighten him and also grant him the ability of spiritual vision. In that case a person would also be able to observe the bustling spiritual activity within the various works of creation, he would come to see the lives of animals and plants in a different light, and he would no longer doubt that he, too, would have passed through all these stages of pre-development. But this presupposes a high degree of love, hence the divine teaching of love must always take priority, i.e., the human being's attained degree of knowledge or realization on earth depends on his fulfillment of the commandments of love. Love is absolutely necessary for the human being, but he does not need to be knowledgeable, because he can suddenly become brightly enlightened if he has lived a life of love on earth. And this is why you humans should not be surprised that the Gospel does not openly state something which nevertheless can be found concealed within, for the Word of God has various meanings, which only a person living in love will come to understand. Then he will also find many references regarding the human being's pre-existence in the creations of earth, and he will only ever attempt to pass his findings on to his fellow human being although they will only be believed if this person, too, is permeated by love."

Process of Mans Development on Earth

BD No. 7800 of 01/21/1961 taken from book 82

God the Father is speaking: "When earth came into existence, countless spiritual substances were able to embody themselves in its works of creation and gradually ascended during their evolutionary process, because the creations corresponded to the spiritual substances' inherent resistance, which was still unbroken but of different intensity. The works of creation were more or less hard matter, because even earth itself gradually evolved into a work of creation which was to shelter people one day; the spiritual

essence which had already covered the process of development to the point when all substances of a fallen original spirit had gathered once again and regained their self-awareness and free will.

But an infinitely long time had passed before the spiritual substance could reach this stage because earth needed this time in order to produce all the creations required by the spirit for its higher development. And the human being should know that he has already spent infinite periods of time on this earth, that the stage of human being is the conclusion of an evolutionary process which his will can now bring to an end. He should also know that one day this infinite path will be shown to him in retrospect, but that this memory has to be removed from him as a human being, since his task as a human being concerns his voluntary return to God. However, when he contemplates the countless wonders of divine creations surrounding him, he should seriously ask himself what purpose they have to fulfill, and then he will receive clarification in his heart. He will feel it, if the knowledge is not yet made accessible to him. And he should try to grasp the Creator's fundamental nature, i.e. request clarification about his relationship to Him. And this, too, will be given to him, since the goal of earthly life rests in the person re-establishing his relationship with God, which he once voluntarily had severed. *For that was the 'fall of the spirits', they had separated from God of their own free will. And thus, during the last stage of their return to God, they have to voluntarily restore their relationship with Him again and the purpose of their earthly progress will be fulfilled.*

The fact that creation has largely contributed in returning the fallen being again can only be understood by you humans when you have achieved this return, because you would never have been able to reach the ascent if the divine Creator had not taken you away from His adversary's power who had caused your fall into the abyss, if He had not removed you from his influence during the infinitely long time when you were integrated in the works of creation as tiniest particles of soul. His adversary had no control over you during this time; nevertheless, you still belonged to him because you once followed him of your own accord into the abyss. But since you were completely without strength and light as a result of your apostasy from God, your path of return to God would have been impossible for you. For this reason, God Himself provided you with this path of return through His works of creation which, in supreme wisdom and infinite love, were shaped to give the spiritual substance the opportunity of service in some form or other and thus, through service, reach ever higher levels of maturity. *The spiritual particles which once belonged to an original spirit gathered again and having achieved a certain level of maturity, commenced their last transformation. For a brief period of time, they were allowed to live on earth as a human being and had to be of service again, but of their own free will and with love. The purpose of earthly life for every soul embodied in a human being is to liberate itself from every cover by way of loving service, to return to the spiritual kingdom again, when its earthly life has ended, as the free spiritual being it had been in the beginning.*

However, it cannot achieve this spiritualization without help because it is burdened by the original sin which repeatedly pushes it down again i.e. during its earthly life God's adversary has the right to exercise his influence again, since the spirits once followed him voluntarily. And the fallen original spirit, the human

being, would succumb to his influence once more were it not for the offer of guaranteed help: redemption through Jesus Christ, in Whom God embodied Himself to redeem the guilt of sin for all fallen spirits through His sacrificial death on the cross. ***This help by Jesus Christ, the complete redemption and forgiveness of his sin, is assured to him providing he wants it himself, providing he acknowledges Jesus Christ and His act of Salvation and he acknowledges Jesus as God Himself, Whom the original spirit once denied acknowledgment.***

And thus, you humans are given a brief explanation concerning the cause and significance of the act of Salvation. You have to know this in order to fulfill the purpose of your earthly life, in order to understand the divine plan of Salvation too, which only ever aims to guide the spirit essence back to God and which will be carried out with love and wisdom, since He has every power at His command to one day achieve the goal He had set Himself when He created all spiritual beings."

Development of Earth and Human Being

BD No. 6295 of 06/26/1955 taken from book 68

God the Father is speaking: "You can come to Me with complete truth and ask My any question that moves you, for I will always answer it such that it will help you. However, you can only grasp a limited amount of knowledge, yet what I impart to you is sufficient in order to grant you an insight into My eternal plan of Salvation, it is also sufficient for you in order to explain it to and teach other people, and in order to reveal to you My love, wisdom and omnipotence. And I will add to this knowledge the more you progress yourselves, the more receptive you become to My light and strength, for it is My aim that you shall become as perfect as you were in the very beginning, and this also involves profound realization, the comprehensive knowledge about My reign and activity, about My Nature and your goal.

It took an infinitely long time for you humans to advance from the abyss to the point which permits human existence. This infinitely long time until the development up to the human being had occurred was necessary because everything can only develop in lawful order, no phases of development can be left out at will, hence these phases of development had to take place in accordance with My eternal plan of Salvation and thus appropriate creations were also required for this development, which as 'pre-historic' has become a concept to you. Although the human need for research certainly attempts to calculate the duration of this pre-historic time yet only with very limited success, for the slow advancement of the spiritual substances, as well as the emergence of creation, which you are now able to behold as human beings, has taken eternities; they were infinitely long periods of time for which the word 'eternities' is certainly the right word. *The concept of time, however, only began when the living creation 'Man' was called into being by Me,* for prior to that the living beings were not rational enough as to enable them to think and reason independently, as to enable them to live consciously and to grasp the concepts of 'past - present and future'.

Only the being endowed with common sense and free will can be called 'a human being', which was sufficiently capable of thinking in order to acquire a certain amount of realization and live accordingly. *Hence from this time onwards one can speak of the conscious development towards ascent, where the once*

fallen spirits were given the opportunity to return to Me for good. The creation of the first human being was the beginning of a period of Salvation where free will became the crucial factor and not My will, as was the case in pre-historic times, where everything took place under the law of compulsion which irrevocably had to result in higher development. And now you wonder how long the 'human being' has populated the earth already, whereby you only ever mean the rational human being who is capable of making his own free decisions and as whose descendants you regard yourselves.

The first human being capable of accepting responsibility for his actions and thoughts was Adam, even though human-like beings already existed before Adam in all parts of the world who instinctively carried out much of which is assumed was human thinking but who nevertheless were impelled by spiritual intelligences, who thus served ascending spiritual substances as a shell and in the law of compulsion carried out what was needed for the development of the creation of Earth, to become a dwelling place for future human beings. They were human species whose instincts and compulsive impulses broke through incredibly strongly but who nevertheless could not be held responsible because they, too, contributed towards the fact that spiritual substances were constantly released and able to embody themselves anew, because everything just served to prepare an area for the human being which was suitable to pass their last test of will. These human-like beings were therefore physically already very akin to the form I had prepared for the human being Adam when the time for the fallen original spirits had come to have their free will returned in order to then be able to liberate themselves from the form altogether. Time and again pre-historic creations released spiritual substances, and the development of what to a certain extent had advanced the whole emergence of earth in its bound state continued to progress, and thus the time eventually came for this spiritual substance to make a free decision.

And this was the beginning of the epoch of Salvation which is of significance for you because it enabled the being to use its free will and intellect and thus live a conscious life. However, the beginning of this epoch is so infinitely far in the past that you humans are unable to make any relevant calculations, yet due to My will the most important periods and their events remain known to you, and although you also divide them into well-ordered timespans, it is entirely irrelevant for your own development. Yet the endless number of fallen spirits necessitates an infinitely long time of higher development, therefore you are no longer capable of estimating the duration of the pre-historic time, just as the embodiment as a human being will have to take place on such a large scale that it will take eternities. It will not be possible for you humans to determine the beginning of this epoch scientifically, yet you will always believe otherwise, because it is in the human being's nature while he is still imperfect that he mentally limits everything that is in the past, but never wants to acknowledge that there is a limit for the time ahead of him, consequently he does not reject a beginning, but an end seems impossible to him. *The former, however, is irrelevant whereas the latter is so extremely important that the human being should direct his whole attention only to what lies ahead of him, that one period of Salvation will come to an end, as did so many before, but that My eternal plan of Salvation*

will remain, that there will never be an end as far as the act of Salvation is concerned, that an endless number of fallen spirits also require an infinitely long time for their return and that time and again I will give these spirits the opportunity to ascend from the deepest abyss to the light, to Me, from Whom they once came."

The Human Being's Task on Earth - Childship to God

BD No. 5490 of 09/18/1952 taken from book 60

God the Father is speaking: "You humans are given a task on earth, but you do not consider this and do not feel accountable as to whether you make correct use of your life on earth, that is, whether you live according to God's will. But you only have a short time and once you have finished your life on earth, you will have no opportunity anymore to accomplish your set task. With immense effort you can certainly still ascend in the kingdom of the beyond, yet you will never be able to attain what you could easily have attained on earth, the childship to God, which makes you the most blissfully happy being in the spiritual kingdom. You can receive an excessive abundance of light on earth and, after physical death, enter the spiritual kingdom as beings of light; for God offers you such an extent of grace that you can lose all weakness and work full of strength, providing it is your will. Attaining the degree of light is not impossible for anyone, and the fact that it need not be difficult is Jesus Christ's gift of grace, who acquired it for the human race on the cross. Thus, anyone can request strength from Him, and every person calling upon Jesus Christ will irrevocably reach the goal. But which one of you humans lends his ear to the messengers of God when you are informed of this; which one of you humans strives consciously towards attaining childship to God on this earth? It only requires you to shape yourselves into love, for which the strength will be conveyed to you humans if you seriously want it and appeal to Jesus Christ for His support. Very little is expected of you humans, but an incredible amount is offered to you and, yet, only a few strive for this degree which results in a life of supreme beatitude. You should become children of God, desire the Father with all your love, you should adapt yourselves to His fundamental nature, that is, become love as well. However, your nature is still governed by too much selfish love, and this only considers earthly life but not life after death. You don't ask yourselves why you live on earth, you don't try to ascertain the reason, instead, you look at life as an end in itself when, in fact, it is merely the means to an end. For this reason, you let your time on earth pass by unused, you use your vitality wrongly, i.e. you only use it to attain earthly possessions which are transient. But you do not think of your life after death, of the soul's intransience and one day will have to pay a bitter price when you realize that you have irretrievably lost something that you could easily have won. However, God respects your will, He neither determines nor forces you, but He always warns and admonishes you. Through His servants on earth, He constantly informs you of the purpose for your existence, He sends messengers to cross your path who shall proclaim His will, He confronts you Himself in the form of suffering and adversities and shows you the fleeting nature of earthly things. He leaves no stone unturned in order to lead you into realization, yet He allows you to keep your freedom of choice. And precisely because of this you will have to justify

yourselves to Him, for you would be able to reach your goal were you to use your will correctly."

Becoming God's 'Children' - Childship to God

BD No. 7907 of 06/02/1961 taken from book 82

God the Father is speaking: "At no time ever will I withdraw My love from you, even if you voluntarily stay away from Me, one day you will return to Me again because My love will not abandon you. And I will always also give you the evidence of My love, I will take care of and provide for you when you live on earth as human beings, because I want to gain your love which will unite you with Me again as in the beginning. Thus, you should never doubt My love. But your love determines the degree of your proximity to Me, it solely depends on your love whether and when the unification with Me will take place. And you demonstrate your love to Me by the degree of your neighborly love, which you should constantly increase if you want to become perfect. And that, in turn, necessitates that you completely relinquish your selfish love, that you strive to become engrossed in love for your neighbor, that you unselfishly help your neighbor. Then you will come ever closer to Me, for with every deed of love you draw Me to yourselves, you ascend with every deed of love and establish the bond with the Eternal Love. Then I can be in you Myself, My love will be able to permeate you as in the beginning, you will have become and will remain My children for all eternity.

And your purpose of earthly life is that you, who once came forth from Me as 'living creations', shape yourselves into 'children'. Since you took the path through the abyss and became completely devoid of love as a result of your past apostasy from Me, it is a difficult task to shape yourselves of your own free will into love again.

It requires a strong will which has to be put into action. The strength to do so repeatedly has to be acquired through love or requested from Me through heartfelt prayer. Hence it is not enough just to make declarations of love to Me, but it also requires deeds of love in order to receive this strength, but then it also results in a steady move towards Me.

As soon as a person voluntarily opens his heart in order to allow himself to be illuminated by the strength of My love his heart will be ever more willing to love, and one day he will achieve his objective: he will attain the childship to God as soon as his life is an uninterrupted activity of love in utter unselfishness.

But only few will achieve this degree of love on earth, because a person's own Self still comes first, because it requires great effort for the human being to give up all wishes and longings for the sake of the next person; since the soul has to purify itself completely during its earthly life, and this requires a high degree of love and frequently a considerable measure of suffering too, so that the soul is entirely purged when it departs from this earth. Then they will have matured into true children of God and have already found unification with Me on earth, they will have shaped themselves of their own free will into 'children', which I could not create for Myself. But anyone who seriously strives for this, who time and again in profound humility pleads for My blessing, who already feels like My child, will not slowdown in his endeavor and reach his goal.

But he has to be filled by love for Me, not by the desire for utmost beatitude, and his love for Me will then also constantly heighten the degree of neighborly love. However, he only demonstrates his love for Me through his neighborly love. I want to teach you all to become My children, and all of you should also feel as if you were My children, otherwise you won't establish the right kind of relationship with your Father of eternity, from Whose love you emerged. You just should not forget that you are on earth in order to become My children, and that you therefore constantly have to make an effort. But once you are My children then I can and will take you from earth, because then you will have achieved the goal for which I created everything, utmost perfection in free will.

I repeatedly have to bring this difference home to you in order to motivate you into utmost striving, for as long as you walk across this earth My adversary also has an influence on you, and as long as My adversary can still influence you he will also know how to stop you from becoming completely engrossed in neighborly love, because as long as unspiritual substances are still in you, your body still has earthly longings, your selfish love has not yet been entirely conquered, and the human being still has to fight against these. *But completely rising above them also ensures him a high degree of love, and then the unity with Me can take place, then the Father will draw His child to Him and will never ever leave it again*."

Who was embodied in Adam?

BD No. 7463 of 11/26/1959 taken from book 79

God the Father is speaking: "You will always be directed correctly by My spirit and mentally guided into truth. I have given you this promise, and it will come to pass as soon as you want to be instructed by Me Myself through the spirit. For My spirit in you is My share, it therefore knows all that which you would like to know. In the beginning only supremely perfect spirits existed, for My tireless spirit of love created them for its own happiness. This spirit of love yearned to receive the same love in return, It yearned for a like-natured being, and possessing it initiated the act of creation, insofar as that this being came forth from Me first. From then on I wanted to share with it the bliss of creating, because it is extraordinarily blissful for a perfect being to time and again create through its will and strength the same beings in all magnificence and constant urge to love, which thus resulted in creating. And My first-created being, Lucifer or the bearer of light, experienced the pleasure of creating in the same way, and it was inconceivably happy. I allowed it complete freedom, for it was devoted to Me in profound and purest love, I did not limit its creative power since My strength of love constantly

permeated this first created being and because its will, too, was entirely free but nevertheless utterly concurred with Mine, because its love for Me shone brightly to the highest degree. Consequently, only like-natured, supremely perfect beings were able to emerge from this bond of love, beings, which were true images of Me Myself, just as the first-created spirit had been in the beginning. When the division of his will started, when Lucifer, in full possession of strength and light, began to compare himself with Me, when his love occasionally lessened and a certain amount of selfish love broke through, it also occasionally lessened the bright shine of his nature, and this affected the beings as well. Nevertheless, these beings had been created through his will and thus My permeation of strength, they equally still emerged in supreme perfection but now and then also started to direct their will wrongly, since it was and remained completely free in all beings which arose from our mutual will and strength. The beings took on the nature of their creator but since My strength of love was their fundamental substance, they were also divinely natured; they were perfect because nothing imperfect can emerge from Me and My strength, however, free will is part of a perfect being and this was able to develop in every direction.

Thus, it cannot be said that the beings were forced to conform to their creator's nature, because the strength from Me, which was always involved in the creative process, always guaranteed that, after the first being was created, nothing inferior would emerge from its creator's will, because free will is bestowed upon every being and this required every being to experience its own test of will. And this free will resulted in the fact that the fall into the abyss also included beings which emerged from us first, whose intense light of love should never have allowed for it but who misused their free will just as Lucifer, the bearer of light himself, whose exceedingly magnificent nature should never have come to fall because he possessed brightest realization. But for this reason, his (Lucifer's) fall has to be condemned even more just like the fall of those first beings, just as, the other way round, the later created beings stood firm and detached themselves from him(Lucifer) when they were allowed to use their right of self-determination and chose their Lord. *And one of those fallen original spirits was Adam, whose soul was entitled to embody itself as a human being due to its maturity, but this nevertheless did not protect him from falling for a second time, because once again his free will failed, but not because he was too weak to make the right decision. He wanted to be greater than God.* That was his (Lucifer's) original sin and it was the renewed sin in paradise. And I wanted to create children for Myself who see their Father in Me and after whose love I longed, because My immeasurable love constantly desires reciprocation. This love was the basis for My whole act of creation, the creation of all original spirits and later of earthly-material creations, because I want to attain this love one day, if only after an infinitely long time. Time and again I try to make you humans understand the magnitude and profundity of My love, yet as long as you have not become love yourselves, as long as you have not shaped yourselves such that My strength of love can permeate you again as in the beginning, you will be unable to comprehend the depth of My love. However, you should know that you are able to touch My heart, that I will fulfill your every wish, that I guide you into truth and bestow light upon you because I know that only light causes happiness, because

light originates from love and you possess all My love, even if you are unable to feel it. But time and again I will provide you with the evidence of it."

God Breathed a Living Soul into Adam

BD No. 6599 of 07/19/1956 taken from book 71

God the Father is speaking: "My eternal plan of Salvation intends to bring about the deification of your souls, which indeed had once been divine and perfect beings, yet they forfeited this perfection of their own free will. You humans should know that I did not externalize you from Me as imperfectly as you are now, that I undeniably created the human form, but the soul, which animates this human form, had already spent an infinitely long time of changing its voluntarily fashioned, completely wrong state to such an extent that it was able to dwell in the human form in order to attain complete deification again. You must know that I did not create you imperfectly to then demand of you as human beings to perfect yourselves, because nothing imperfect can emerge from Me. Once you are in possession of this knowledge you will also consider your earthly existence from a different point of view. You will realize that it is not an end in itself but the means to an end. However, as long as you are lacking this knowledge you justifiably believe that you may use your earthly life purely for the sake of improving your physical well-being. You believe that you may use your energy of life purely physically, even if you aspire to the goal that every individual person should improve himself ethically in order to achieve a better human race. But you don't understand the spiritual task of the individual yet. *The human being himself is not the final goal, the existence as a human being is merely the final opportunity on this earth to reach the highest goal.* And the teaching that I 'created man so that he should love Me, be of service to Me, in order to thereby enter Heaven' is only justified if the human existence is looked upon as a limited stage for the soul which once became imperfect, otherwise this teaching will lead to wrong ideas, such as the one that something 'imperfect', the soul, was joined to the human being at birth, that thus something imperfect was brought to life by Me. This not only confuses the image of My nature, which is supremely perfect, but also people's train of thought, who do not grasp their actual task on earth and will therefore be increasingly more worldly orientated because a wrong concept is being developed in them.

Although through love for Me and selfless service the human being could indeed be able to attain the right realization and subsequently beatitude, it will nevertheless prevent love being kindled towards a Being which uses its creative strength for the emergence of imperfect creations; and even selfless service lacks the right motivation if people are unaware of the perfect spirits' former apostasy

from Me, which consisted of the fact that they wanted to rule with arrogance, hence they discarded the principle of love. Their imperfection was caused by the beings themselves. However, the fact that you are imperfect as a human being cannot be doubted, and therefore you must first try to ascertain the reason for your imperfection and not be satisfied with the explanation that I created you the way you are on earth now. But the latter is endorsed by all those who portray the act of creation of the human being such that a 'soul' is 'created' at the same time for this human being, which they deem they can justify on account of the Words 'God breathed a living soul into him.' ***The fact that this living soul is a formerly fallen original spirit is not known to them, but this knowledge could be discovered by every individual person if only he seriously questioned the meaning and purpose of earthly life and his task on earth.*** And even a misguided teaching could make a person question, if only he wanted to gain clarification. And especially the teachers who guide people should first attain clarification themselves, which they can receive at any time by merely turning to Me Myself if slight doubts, which everyone can feel arise within himself during deliberation, would make them turn to the right source, where purest trust will refresh anyone who desires it. The reason why there is so much darkness amongst people that misguided teachings were able to spread is due to people's indifference towards the truth, for it is available and within reach for everyone who seriously desires the truth. Yet only a few try to penetrate My eternal plan of Salvation, but for them everything is obvious, and they are brightly enlightened because the Light of eternity Itself kindles it in all those who want to escape the darkness."

The Soul - The Spiritual Spark in the Human Being

BD No. 1618 of 09/18/1940 taken from book 25

God the Father is speaking: "The human soul is the unification of countless soul-substances which are assembly points for spiritual strength, i.e. which are receptacles for the spirit of God. Each one of these countless substances was previously embodied somewhere else, that is, enclosed in an outer form for the purpose of the spirit's higher development and for the prospect of later unification with an equal substance. Hence each single substance of the human soul has passed through every work of creation and has, so to speak, matured for its last embodiment on earth. The soul always assumes the same shape as its surrounding outer shape. If a person with spiritual vision would contemplate the human soul in its composition, he would be presented with an incredibly charming and varied picture. This work of God's creation, invisible to human beings, is beyond description, both in its structure as well as in its usefulness. But a description of the formation of the soul would only confuse human thought for he cannot understand the countless miracles within the human body. What human beings understand to be 'soul' is all of creation in miniature. The soul is the innermost part of the human being and includes the whole of creation, intended to become enlightened during its life on earth and in glorification of God to enjoy the delights of heaven.

The soul has the divine spirit within itself. Although the original substance of the soul is also spirit in all its phases of evolution, the divine spark of spirit is placed into the incarnating soul of the human being by God Himself. He instills His

breath into the human being. He places the divine into him and gives the soul the task to choose between the divine and the human during its last existence on earth. If the soul, the spirit out of God which at one time had opposed God, is now willing to unite with the divine spirit, the transformation of what was once far away from God begins and the human soul becomes enlightened. The unity of the human soul with the divine spirit occurs when the soul steadfastly overcomes all human desires, which, for the purpose of testing and for strengthening of the will, cling to the human body as temptation, when it resists all that the body as such requires and willingly submits to the requirements of the divine spirit.

Then the soul finally surrenders its former resistance to God. It chooses God, it is no longer in conscious opposition to the divine and accepts the emission of love, the strength, to increase the spirit within itself, to bring about the unity of the spirit within itself with the spirit outside of itself, and thus consciously strives to draw closer to God. If, however, the body's desire dominates then the divine spark of spirit stays dormant and completely buried deep within the human being, it cannot emit light and the soul dwells in utter darkness. Its earthly life goes by without the smallest accomplishment; the spirit within is condemned to stagnate, its earthly process is not a path towards higher development but a time of standstill or even regression. The divine spark of spirit in the human being had been ignored and therefore could not manifest itself. The strength of divine love could not flow into the being and, as a result, the unity with the spirit of the eternal Father could not take place either. The soul takes this lightless state, which it had chosen for itself on earth, across into eternity and there, with endless pain of regret, contemplates the wasted time on earth and now has to struggle far more strenuously to improve its situation."

Life - Awakening the Divine Spark in the Person

BD No. 3240 of 09/02/1944 taken from book 42

God the father is speaking: "The divine spiritual spark in the human being is his actual life; consequently, one can only speak of rebirth when the spirit in the human being has been awakened, when it can start to become active and thus the spiritual life begins. In that case the human being is spiritually reborn, for his physical birth only makes sense and serves its purpose when *spiritual rebirth* has taken place. The divine spiritual spark has consciously been acknowledged by the person's soul even if the person is not yet able to rationally differentiate between the two concepts of soul and spirit. For the process of unification of spirit and soul can happen without a person's knowledge, since this is only conveyed to him when it occurred. Only then will the spirit explain to the soul what the unity of the spirit with the soul means, and only then will the soul strive towards ever closer union with its spirit and will accept the most valuable knowledge from it. And from then on, the human being will be alive, that is, he will utilize his knowledge and consciously work for the kingdom of God; he will eagerly work at distributing the obtained information and at imparting the knowledge to his fellow human beings. Life is a continuous activity. Admittedly, the human being is certainly physically alive without having awakened his indwelling spiritual spark,

that is, he is active in an earthly way and thus works for his earthly life, for his body and for earthly goals. But this is not the true life, the life which is everlasting, the life Jesus had spoken about and which He promised to anyone who believes in Him. True life is the never-ending life of the spirit, the attainment of which is the purpose of life on earth. This purpose will only be achieved when the human being's spirit has come to life.

Spiritual rebirth is the most worthwhile goal to strive for, because it will yield indescribable gain for the human being's soul. That which is offered by the earth is impermanent and only benefits the body but never the soul. In contrast, what the spirit offers the soul will refresh it and quench its thirst, it is its nourishment, thus it is strength for living; it is a precious commodity which can no longer perish, which induces happiness and encourages diligent activity and therefore can be called the elixir of life, because death, which previously had threatened the soul and would be its inevitable share had rebirth not taken place, will no longer be possible. The carnal body is the shell which harbors the divine spark, and it is up to the person's free will as to whether he bursts the shell, whether he strives to awaken the Divine within himself to life. If the soul, the bearer of the will, turns towards the divine spirit by trying to penetrate the shell, by trying to liberate itself from all earthly wishes, from bad habits and vices, if it tries to dissolve the shell through activity of love, the divine spiritual spark will start to move, it will make contact with the human being's soul, it will help it rise above itself, it will constantly whisper advice and instructions and thus guide the soul as soon as it allows itself to be guided. From then on the divine spark in the person will take the lead and this will truly be right. Then the spirit and soul will no longer oppose each other but pursue their goal together, they will strive towards the eternal home and pay no attention to the body, the earth and everything of an earthly nature, even though the human being still lives on earth. The human being is alive, even if earthly matters are of no further interest to him, for his spirit is alive and is constantly active. The human being only works for the spiritual kingdom, for the kingdom of God, he works at improving himself and his fellow human beings, he is incessantly active, for the indwelling spiritual spark will not allow him to rest, that is, to rest idly, as it is harmful and synonymous with death, with a state which is painful in eternity and should therefore be feared as the worst fate that can befall the human soul. However, once the spirit has come alive then death will no longer exist, for the spirit is immortal and also draws the soul into eternal life, into everlasting glory."

Spiritual Rebirth

BD No. 2360 of 06/07/1942 taken from book 32

God the Father is speaking: "The turning point in life is the rebirth of the spirit, it is the moment when you become conscious of the spiritual strength flowing to you through My love. As soon as you feel yourselves inseparably united with Me, as soon as you become conscious of the fact that you cannot exist without Me, as soon as you feel My presence and this consciousness determines your whole life, the spiritual spark in you strives towards its Father-Spirit and you have woken up to the real life, you are reborn in spirit. And from now on you strive towards Me consciously, your intentions and thoughts are inclined towards Me,

your actions correspond to My will. And I take hold of you and draw you up to Me. I won't let you go anywhere on your own anymore, I will go with you wherever you go, I Am around you and pay attention to every thought looking for Me. I hear your heart's every question, every appeal for help, every sigh for My love and I will help you, even if you don't feel it instantly. My love for you is boundless and My care never-ending, and thus I won't leave any one of My living creations without help. And I particularly take care of My children, for they are My children who have found Me and confide in Me of their own accord. They have all My love, Spiritual rebirth is like the rising sun, it appears increasingly more radiant in the firmament until it is in the sky in full splendor, permeating My works of creation with light and warmth, giving life to new creations and keeping them alive. Standstill no longer exists for a spiritually reborn person. He will become increasingly brighter and shining since he is, after all, permeated by My strength of love, by My spirit. And thus, he gains ever more light and strength and likewise illuminates everything in his surroundings.

Spiritual rebirth is the awakening to eternal life, and the spiritually reborn person will likewise be able to awaken the lifeless to life, for wherever his light is shining it penetrates the darkness with its bright radiance, and where there is light there is life, where there is light I Myself Am present, and I bring life to all those who desire it, who consciously want it from Me, who likewise turn to Me with yearning, thus, who acknowledge Me. I give you My Word and thereby the visible sign of My love, I give you strength, which will manifest itself in increased longing for Me again, for this longing is the sign that My Father-Spirit draws the spiritual spark in you to Himself, and thus you shall be happy when you yearn for Me, for My spirit strives towards you in the same way. And your hearts cannot let go of Me again, for I do not let them do so once they have given themselves to Me. I Am the Spirit of Truth, I Am Life, I Am Love and the Primary Origin of everything in existence. Whomever I grant My love will exist from eternity to eternity. He will live and know the full truth; there is no deception and illusion where he is; he will be what I Am, a spirit, full of power and strength from Me. He will radiate love and be incredibly happy for being able to impart My spirit to the living creations again, for being able to bring what was once lifeless to life. He will resemble Me in everything, for My spirit permeates him and thus he cannot be any different than I Am, a being full of love, strength, wisdom and power. And thus you will be the most blissfully happy creatures in eternity, united with one another and always near to Me. And you will receive what you desire, for you will only ever desire My love, and this will permeate you continually, so that you can work for your own infinite happiness in My kingdom, which everyone who unites with Me in time and eternity can share."

Further Explanation Regarding the Soul

BD No. 8012 of 10/05/1961 taken from book 84

God the Father is speaking: "It is necessary to clarify the concept of the 'soul' so that you do not live in error: Everything you see around yourselves is spiritual strength, which was once emanated by Me as beings which were dissolved when they did not use the strength of love, which flowed to them ceaselessly, in accordance with My will. For this strength must become active

according to the law of eternal order. Thus, I reshaped this strength of love, once emanated as 'beings', into works of creation which perform a serving function. And so all of creation which surrounds you is basically the strength which was externalized by Me as independent beings. And regardless of how solidified the spiritual strength is that became matter, they are all sparks of light and love which emanated from Me, My will merely gave them a shape according to My love and wisdom. However, this spiritual substance can no longer cease to exist, My once emanated strength will inevitably return to Me again. Yet the degree of maturity of everything around you varies considerably, because the meaning and purpose of creation is to bring the spiritual substance to full maturity since, as a result of its fall into the abyss, it had completely reversed its nature and, by means of this process of probation, this purification process through the whole of creation, shall deify itself again, thus become an independent being once more, which will work in light and strength and freedom for its own happiness. Sooner or later all tiny particles of a dissolved original spirit will gather again, and this will then live on earth in the external shape of a human being in order to achieve its final perfection of its own free will. Hence this soul is My once emanated strength of love, yet all of its substances still need purification. Nevertheless, it is a spiritual substance, for everything you see is spiritual strength, even if it is consolidated as matter as a result of My will. The spiritual essence which now animates the human being as a 'soul' has certainly reached a certain degree of maturity already, or it would not be permitted to embody itself as a human being; however, one cannot speak of a 'perfect' soul, because it travelled through Lucifer's realm and its thoughts and intentions are still satanically inclined. But it is the once fallen original spirit which, through earthly progress, can entirely release itself from all unspiritual influences, which can freely want and act and therefore also has the opportunity to achieve final perfection on earth and to enter the kingdom of the beyond as a radiant spirit of light again when it has to leave the earthly body. Hence the soul is something invisible to the human eye which is everlasting, which continues to exist for all eternity, whilst matter, every external form that is visible to the eye, is transient but will also only be disintegrated by My will in order to release the spiritual substance concealed therein.

So, the visible creation is likewise a spiritual substance which was once externalized as beings, it merely goes through these creations in a disintegrated state, yet one day it will be mature enough so that the fallen original spirit will be permitted to embody itself as a soul in a human being. Although the soul has the shape of a human it is, however, only visible to the spiritual eye, that is, only a certain degree of maturity enables another soul to see the former, just as the beings in the spiritual kingdom were once able to recognize and communicate with each other, but only because they possessed spiritual vision, which the human being or soul which departed from earth in an immature state does not possess. Thus, the soul is not a substantial form anymore, if 'substance' is to be understood as something material, visible. It is a spiritual form; it is My emanated strength which gives life to a dead form, the human body. Even so, the soul can think, feel and want, which the body itself cannot do once the actual life, the soul, is missing. The human organs certainly perform their functions, yet always driven by or animated by the soul, the real Self, which determines the activity of all these

functions. This is why the whole responsibility for the existence on earth rests on the soul, never on the body, but it would always think, and act wrongly had I not provided it with the spiritual spark as My share, which subsequently tries to influence the soul to subordinate itself to its urging and which always wants to advise it according to My will yet never forcibly influence the soul. It is entirely up to the soul to submit itself to the desire of the spirit or to the body's wishes; this is the actual test of earthly life the soul will have to pass in order to be able to enter the spiritual kingdom in a perfect state. You humans must get used to the idea that this very 'fallen spirit' is your real Self. But that this original spirit at the beginning of its embodiment as a human being is still very impure, for it lives in Lucifer's realm, it travelled through all creations in which everything satanic is bound. And the human external frame is matter too, thus a spiritual substance that is still in the process of development. For the final perfection shall only take place during earthly life but it can be attained, because the act of Salvation was accomplished by Jesus Christ, My first begotten Son, Whom I sent to Earth in order to redeem the immense original sin which denied all fallen beings entry into the kingdom of light.

The soul of the man called Jesus was therefore a soul of light which, for the purpose of a mission, descended into the realm of darkness. A soul of light embodied itself in a cover of flesh, in the body of a temporal human which was just like any other human. Although the soul of light prepared this shell first, for it had to be a pure vessel, because I Myself wanted to take abode in Jesus, the man. Nevertheless, the body of flesh consisted of earthly material substances, because Jesus the human being had to accomplish an act of deification on Himself which was to serve other people as an example, which therefore all people will have to accomplish in order to perfect themselves.

Moreover, Jesus' soul, a profoundly pure soul of light, found itself in dark surroundings; it descended into Lucifer's realm and was subsequently exposed to all onslaughts on him. However, Jesus' soul was not a fallen spirit. But since it had to travel through the abyss it was unable to resist everything unspiritual which badly besieged it on Lucifer's instructions. Jesus' soul was light in all its fullness. Yet when it descended into the abyss it left the light behind since it would irrevocably have consumed the people in darkness. Jesus therefore only entered His physical shell to a limited extent, He did not let His light of love shine yet love was in Him, He did not deprive Himself of love and this love intimately united Him with Me, His Father of eternity. Thus, Jesus' soul consisted of spirit made of My spirit, it, too, was emanated by Me as light of love and did not surrender it either when it came into the world. But then My adversary's influence started, who wanted to prevent Jesus' act of Salvation and also sought to draw Jesus' soul down into the darkness. By virtue of the enormous light of love Jesus could easily have resisted his every onslaught but this would have put the following of Jesus into jeopardy, he would never have exemplified, as a 'human being', the life His fellow human beings should live in order to release themselves from My adversary, instead, divine strength alone would have accomplished something which would never have been possible for any human being. This is why a soul of light consciously took up the battle against My adversary by offering him every target. He challenged him deliberately and that meant, at the same time, not

fighting the demons when they tried to take possession of His soul. He did not defeat them by virtue of His power but by virtue of His love, that is, He pacified them, He brought redemption to them, for His love was greater than great and, during His earthly life as a human being, it grew into a sea of flames. He accepted Me Myself as the Eternal love in Him. He did not yield to the adversary's temptations but overcame every challenge, every desire by these demons with boundless patience and mercy in order to help these unredeemed spirits and to place them into a state that they could adapt to His soul. And love accomplished the work that all still unredeemed physical substances adapted to His soul, that soul and body radiated in supreme abundance of light and united with Me, the eternal light of Love.

And this very same process happens when a most elevated spirit of light, an angel-spirit, wants to take the path through the abyss in order to attain childship to God, in order to voluntarily become a supremely perfect spirit which can create in and with Me in free will. In that case, the spirit will always limit its abundance of light and strength, because it would burst the human body, which is not a pure spiritual body as yet. Thus, the spirit of light takes on the shape of the human body and yet remains a spiritual body. And this spiritually 'limited' form is the soul which animates the otherwise dead body of flesh in the first place. When this soul leaves the body of flesh again it will no longer be restricted and will be a free spirit again, full of light and strength, but it does not exclude the possibility that this spirit had once taken the path through the abyss as a human soul. But such a spirit will also have extraordinary spiritual abilities at its disposal in earthly life, for although it is exposed to the most severe temptations on the part of My adversary it will never completely lose its connection with Me, and the strength of its love will also ensure that it will emerge as the victor. For what My adversary failed to achieve when he caused the apostasy of the great host of originally created spirits from Me, he will not achieve now either. And yet, a light spirit's life on earth will always be a particularly difficult one until it has quite openly passed the important test of will which turned it into My child that will forever be united with Me, with its Father, and then enjoy unlimited beatitudes."

Incarnation – Instincts - Preliminary stages

BD No. 2775 of 06/15/1943 taken from book 34/35

God the Father is speaking: "The incarnation of a soul can take place when all substances, which have taken the earthly path within the many diverse creations and are thus developed, have joined together. The soul substance of every work of creation has to be present in order to incarnate i.e. the human body becomes the cover for a soul which contains all works of creation in miniature within itself. The previous infinitely long earthly progress has resulted in the unification of all these substances who then await their last embodiment. They will be assimilated as soul into the human outer shell to experience the last stage of development. This incarnation is of varied duration due to the different substances state of maturity, which have had a certain amount of freedom during their preliminary stages already albeit they had acted under compulsion in accordance with God's will. However, in the last stages before embodiment as human being this compulsory condition was gradually eased so that certain instincts could be

lessened or even increased. This subsequently resulted in a higher or lower degree of maturity which, in turn, determines the duration of the last embodiment as human being. As soon as all soul substances have united as a human soul they strive for the last embodiment on earth, because they know that the human shell is their last physical cover and that they can be free from all earthly restrictions afterwards. For that reason, the soul will only spend time where it is offered an opportunity to incarnate. Understandably it will incarnate where people's nature adapts to its own degree of maturity, i.e. where people have the same instincts and attributes that match its own nature.

However, this does not exclude that a differently inclined soul would not try to incarnate with unfamiliar natured people in order to hasten its embodiment. But then it often has to struggle with added difficulties during its earthly life as its nature is not taken into account and it is unable to fulfill the expected requirements. Nevertheless, since the soul knows the path of its earthly life in advance it is not stopped if it makes this choice itself, since it has the resources at its disposal to achieve its final maturity in every embodiment. Due to its earlier many diverse shapes it has every aptitude within itself at various degrees and can increase or reduce them at will. Thus, it is not incapable and the strength to do so is likewise given in accordance with its will. However, if it strives half-heartedly it will remain in the same state of maturity prior to its incarnation as a human being; in that case the incarnation has not resulted in higher development. Although at the time of death it will shed its physical cover but its desires and instincts, which it was meant to overcome during its earthly life, still connect it to the material world. Therefore, it has not taken full advantage of its earthly incarnation, and when it realizes that it has wasted the right to become a child of God and can no longer achieve it either, it experiences an indescribable state of remorse; even though it still has infinitely many opportunities in the beyond to arrive at the contemplation of God. Yet one day an incarnated soul has to give account before God how it has used earth's opportunities and what spiritual progress it has achieved at the time of death, because the embodiment as human being is a mercy that cannot be valued highly enough; it is a gift which the human being should cherish appropriately by doing whatever advances his development because he cannot return to earth again once he has left it."

Will for Descendants - waiting souls

BD No. 2795 of 07/03/1943 taken from book 37

God the Father is speaking: "Countless souls are waiting for embodiment and thus new generations have to arise time and again. Human beings have to be born all the time so that souls can occupy their bodies during their final period of development on earth. Hence people's willingness is always necessary for the embodiment of a soul, and at the same time it is also an act of love for the unredeemed soul if people offer it the opportunity for its final incarnation on earth. Only the will to awaken a new life should be the reason for a union between a man and a woman; without this will the bodily function, which is only intended for the awakening of a human life, is unlawfully performed. Many sins are committed in this respect, i.e. the divine will is not taken into account, the body is not educated to carry out its correct task and subsequently many souls wait in vain and cannot

incarnate even though they have the degree of development which permits an earthly embodiment. These souls remain close to earth and try to persuade people to unite, especially people who are in love, since love has to be the motivating force for a union to bring forth new life. Love between two human beings is essential to give the awakened soul during its short time on earth the opportunity to achieve the kind of maturity which will result in its entrance into the realm of light. A loveless union provides the opportunity for embodiment to those souls whose bad instincts are still particularly strong and who, as a result, have to struggle considerably during their earthly life to overcome these instincts.

The human will to have children is, however, mostly due to love for each other, and it is of great advantage for the incarnating soul if this love prevails because the spark of love leaps into the new-born being and it can gain spiritual maturity on earth much easier. Nevertheless, the effort to avoid descendants can be harmful to the souls who are willing to incarnate, in as much as people's sexuality adds to the same urges in the new being whose soul consequently constantly has to fight against them during its earthly life. Souls who cannot incarnate nevertheless stay close to people and trouble them, they try to influence people to unite for the purpose of procreation. Understandably, in that case physical desires will always be stronger since the souls only try to influence people along the lines of their inclination; they just want to transfer physical lusts to get the opportunity for their own embodiment. Consequently, people who unite sexually without love shoulder a tremendous responsibility as they are surrounded by souls who want to incarnate, and their lust attracts equally disposed souls who use these uninhibited moments to occupy a newly created being which now starts its earthly path of life as a human being. And such souls are mainly predominant because only few souls entered life as a result of love and a conscious will for descendants. For this reason, human generations will become consistently less spiritual because there is little love between people who were also born without love."

The Soul - Recreate and Super-create

Ref: MV - The Book of Azariah: 169-171

Azariah, the Guardian Angel of Maria Valtorta is speaking: "'You are gods' is written in Scripture and in the letters of Paul. Nor did Jesus deny that man, in becoming holy with a constant effort towards perfection, became similar to God His Father, and the measure of a son towards the Father, of the creative spirit in relation to the Most Holy Uncreated Spirit.

But to arrive at this glorification it is necessary to sigh and suffer with patience and hope, with Faith and love, just like a mother who for long months suffers and hopes, and willingly confronts pain provided she can give birth to her child.

God, then, created man as composed of two substances, one called the body – initially created with mud and subsequently procreated with the flesh and blood of man – and one called the soul, which, uniquely created in each case, only once and for one flesh, descends to unite itself to the flesh forming in a womb. Without the soul man would be an animal creature guided by instinct and natural

gifts. Without the body man would be a spiritual creature with the supernatural gifts of intelligence, will, and grace, like the angels.

Do you see how good God is? He grants procreation to matter, almost being little creators. But He grants that all spirits may re-create themselves, for the soul, given by God, can recreate and super-create itself, reaching the sublime dignity of children of God, sharing in the Father's eternal glory.

And not just these, but we, too, who have the first fruits of the Spirit, sigh inwardly, awaiting adoption as children of God and the redemption of our bodies, in Jesus Christ Our Lord."

Everything that Happens Serves to Perfect the Soul

BD No. 7162 of 07/08/1958 taken from book 76

God the Father is speaking: "There is purpose and reason in everything that happens, because everything depends on God's will and is therefore also wisely considered by Him and arranged by His love in a manner that benefits the soul of the human being. The decisive factor is always the effect on the soul, which can certainly be negative if the persons will so decide, but it is always possible to be positive too. The body often has to accept various kinds of suffering and ailments; but as long as the soul's spiritual development is progressive these afflictions are insignificant, because they only last a limited time, whereas the soul's state of immaturity can last for an eternity and will cause it appalling torment in the spiritual kingdom. The human being should always be conscious of the fact that God's love, wisdom and power determines his destiny that nothing happens to anyone arbitrarily, that nothing is coincidental, that a kind, devoted Father at all times wants to help His lost child to find its way back to Him. And therefore, the human being should at all times call upon God as his 'Father' and thereby show Him that he wants to return to Him. He should always humbly accept God's will, even when he has to carry a cross which appears to be almost unbearable, because Someone will come to his aid and carry his cross with him, if only He is asked to do so.

But whatever the human body endures in this life will be gratefully understood by the soul one day, when it can leave the body in order to enter the kingdom in the beyond in a pure and clear state. Although divine love wants to spare every living creature suffering it cannot be avoided because the human being on earth does not consider his soul enough to do whatever it takes to remove its impurities. And thus, help is needed which is frequently painful, but which nevertheless promises success. But the certainty that everything is God's will, who is love Himself, should enable you humans to bear everything with greater ease and it should be a comfort to you too that you are never left to your own devices, that there is always Someone Who cares about your spiritual maturity and wellbeing. And He will never allow that anything should happen to you without reason and purpose, because His love, wisdom and power is limitless, and His love and wisdom will forever be the decisive factor when His will and His power express themselves.

For this reason, every minute can be of benefit to you, you can derive spiritual achievement from every experience, from every event, from every physical adversity which you encounter. Because as soon as you learn to view it as

a means of help for the maturing of your souls you will also do whatever it takes to help the soul to mature. Your cross will soon be taken from you, since it is only a burden to you until it has served its purpose. If, however, you want to live your earthly life entirely without suffering, you will also have to be pure love, and only few people will reach a level where their souls will purify themselves through love. More often than not they will require suffering as a means of help, because the time of their earthly life is only short and yet should yield the greatest possible perfection for the soul. Hence you should bless the suffering too, surrender to it and thank your Heavenly Father for His love for you, which only ever wants the best for you."

The Purpose and Reason of Earthly Life - A

BD No.8020 of 10/16/1961 taken from book 84

God the Father is speaking: "You must always know that there is reason and purpose for your existence as human beings on earth. It was not the Creator's whim that placed you into this world but spiritual events which formed the foundation of your creation, events which happened a very long time ago in the spiritual kingdom. The beings, brought into existence by My will's love, began to change. The law of order, in which all perfect things had to exist, was overturned. The externalized perfect beings changed themselves into the opposite; they trespassed the law of order and became imperfect. However, their nature changed of their own free will, i.e. the beings' will rebelled against the existing order, it rebelled against Me Myself as their God and Creator, but whom they nonetheless recognized because they were enlightened. Consequently, this occurrence in the kingdom of the spirits is the reason for your existence as human beings on this earth.

For you are the fallen spirits who had parted from Me of your own free will, you are the beings who once came forth from Me in highest perfection and voluntarily changed their nature to the contrary, you are those fallen spirits. But eternities had passed between your apostasy from Me and your existence as human beings, an infinitely long time had passed wherein the fallen being had to go through a process of change, where it was exposed to incredible suffering and torment, where it gradually evolved from the abyss to the pinnacle again, always subject to My guidance because nothing that originates from Me remains eternally separated. And thus, one day you will reach the level of development when you live as human beings on earth in order to cover the last short distance to the end, in order to voluntarily achieve your return to your God and Father, from Whom you once had distanced yourselves in wrongly directed will. If you look at your human existence in this light you will learn to understand how significant it is for you; you will no longer regard earthly life as an end in itself but as a means to an end, and you will live it consciously.

But it is difficult to make you believe that you are not just a whim of your God and Creator, because you have no proof of what I tell you. However, just for once you should seriously consider that you yourselves and everything around you are works of wonder which could not have originated arbitrarily, and after serious contemplation recognize a God and Creator and become convinced that there is nothing without purpose, and that your earthly life subsequently has to

serve a purpose too. You should aim to make contact with the acknowledged creative power, which is always possible in thought, in prayer and by doing works of love, in unity with Me a light will soon shine for you, very soon you will perceive a glimpse of the knowledge which you once possessed in full measure.

And the light within you will shine consistently brighter the more you seek unity with Me and you will achieve the purpose of your life: you will accomplish the transformation of your own free will, the change of your nature into perfection, which was your condition from the start. You will kindle the tiny spark of love within you and turn it into a bright fire, which means as much as having entered the law of eternal order once again, where all perfect things have to exist. You will be able to end an infinitely long process of development with the result that you will have adopted My fundamental nature again, that you will have shaped yourselves into love and will once more be divine, perfect beings as you were in the beginning. This is the purpose of your earthly life, which should prompt you to live consciously so that the last stage of the infinitely long process of development will enable the entirely spiritualized being to leave this earth in perfection and enter the kingdom of light and bliss from whence it once originated."

The Purpose and Reason of Earthly Life - B

BD No. 7797 of 01/14/1961 taken from book 81

God the Father is speaking: "You have to know the purpose of your earthly life if your progress as a human being is to be successful and you want to reach the goal, if you once again want to become what you had been in the beginning. You came forth from Me as supremely perfect beings, you were created in My image, endowed with all divine attributes, full of light and strength, and you were in constant contact with Me as your God and Creator, so that you were continuously able to receive light and strength from Me and thus were also indescribably happy. But your perfect nature also included free will or you could not have been called divine living creations. Consequently, this free will had to open up two possibilities for you: to remain as perfect as I had created you, or to relinquish your perfection and change your nature into the opposite. Thus, you were meant to prove your 'divinity' by keeping the direction of your will in line with Mine, so that it totally merged with My will although it was completely free. In that case, however, you also had to be capable of behaving to the contrary. You also had to be able to fall away from Me as a sign of free will, if this was opposed to Me and My will.

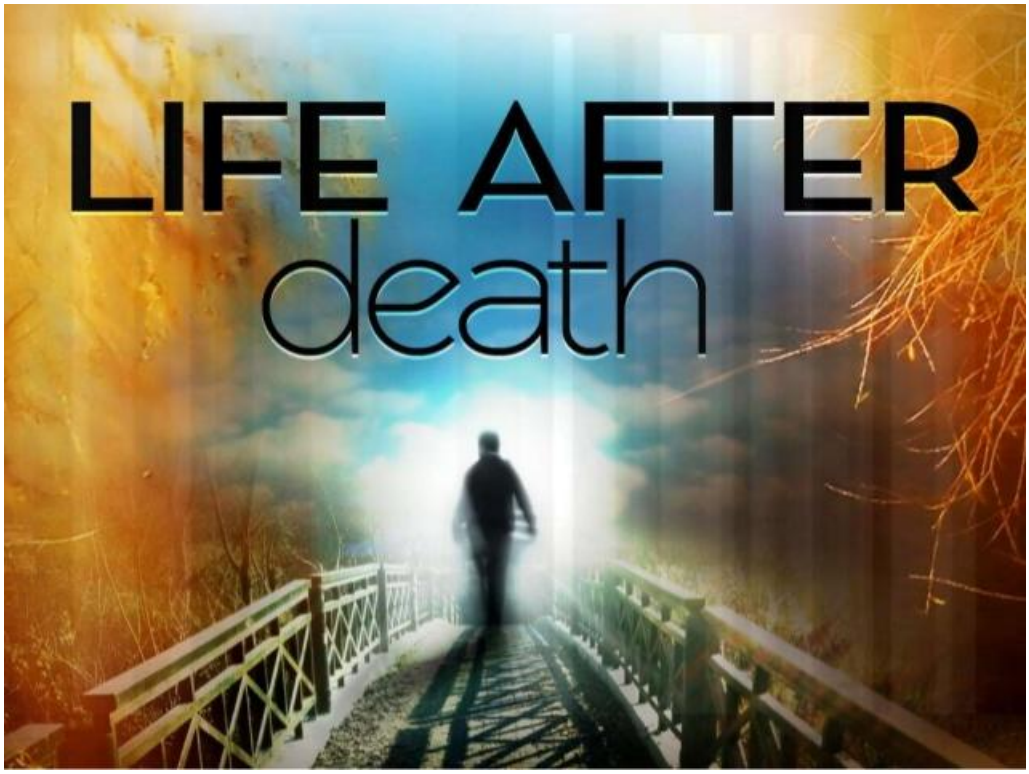
I required My 'created' living beings to make this decision of will in order to be able to grant them even greater delights. I required this decision of will of My first created being, the spirit of light, whom My greater than great love externalized and who, as My image, was intended to create and work with and beside Me in the spiritual kingdom. He had come forth from Me in supreme perfection, he was My image. Yet one thing set him apart from Me: he received his strength from Me, whereas I was the source of strength Myself. He certainly recognized this, for he possessed absolute realization. And so he was confronted by the test of will which required him to acknowledge Me as the source of strength from Which he constantly received his power. However, his will and My strength had brought countless beings into existence, all of whom were of highest

perfection, endowed with all gifts and free will which demonstrated their divine nature. And the awareness of having been the creator of all these beings made this first-created spirit, the bearer of light, arrogant, and in his arrogance, he rebelled against Me.

Hence he did not pass the test of will but he voluntarily caused a separation from Me which, admittedly, was impossible to happen, because all created spirits would have perished in view of the fact that they are unable to exist without Me and My flow of strength, but the bearer of light, Lucifer, deliberately turned away from Me, and therefore fell into the abyss, drawing with him a large number of beings which likewise were supposed to make a decision and deserted Me. This occurrence, which took place in the spiritual kingdom, forms the basis of the 'creation of the world', of the countless different kinds of creations which I brought into being as the 'path of return' for the spirits, in order to guide all fallen spirits back to their origin again, in order to guide them back to Me, because they can only be happy again when they are united with Me, whereas the distance from Me signifies a state of utter wretchedness. I Am now trying to make this information accessible to you humans, for you are these fallen spirits which are on the path of return to Me and are approaching the goal. You had changed your once perfect nature into the opposite and became imperfect.

Even as human beings you are still imperfect creatures, but you are able to perfect yourselves during your earthly life if only you fulfill My will, if you fit in with My law of divine order, if you live a life of love and completely change your nature into love again, as it was in the beginning. Love reunites you with Me, but you have to accept it from Me voluntarily again. You must not resist it when My love wants to illuminate you once more; you have to do your utmost in order to fulfill your task in earthly life, which solely consists of directing your will towards Me, of surrendering to Me and striving towards Me with love. Then profound knowledge will be revealed to you, the darkness within you will recede, you will achieve bright realization, understand all correlations and leave the state of wretchedness, you will enter into union with Me and in this unity find the former bliss again which you once voluntarily relinquished but which belongs to every being that once originated from Me as a radiant image of Myself, and which it irrevocably will become again one day, because this has been and will remain the goal of My creation: to educate 'children' for Myself who can create and work with Me in supreme happiness.”

Chapter 2: Continuation of Life after Death

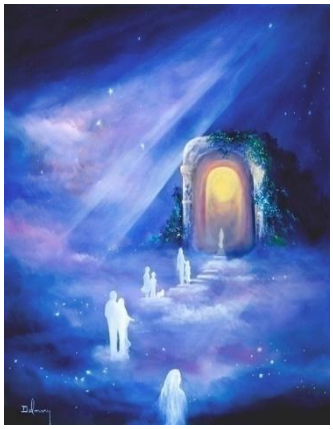


Our Lord addresses the following: Continuation of life after Death, Belief in the Soul's Continuation of Life, Early Death – God's Mercy – Old Age, Fear of Death, Fear of Dying – beholding the spiritual kingdom, Consider the Time after Death, Hour of Death – explanation of suffering, Hour of Death Without Fear – readiness, The Soul's Change of Abode, Cremation, Why Decompose Slowly, Earthly Task – Wrong Endeavour . . .

Continuation of Life after Death

Belief in the Soul's Continuation of Life

BD No. 8059 of 12/09/1961 taken from book 85



Jesus is speaking: "If only people would believe that their soul, their actual Self, is immortal, if only they would believe that the soul as a human being on this earth is preparing its own fate in the kingdom of the beyond when it leaves its earthly body. One day people will bitterly regret their indifference to their later fate, for one day they will realize what they had neglected to do in their earthly life, what they could have achieved had they believed the warnings and admonitions which were constantly given to them on earth. The indifference to their future fate is the great evil which threatens to pull many people into the abyss. And therefore, they shall only ever be informed of the fact that there is a continuation of life after death, that they cannot cease to exist even if they have to shed their earthly body, their thoughts shall be directed towards this time which will come as certain as one day will follow the other. If only they were able to gain the belief in a continuation of life after death, they would also live more responsibly. This, too, cannot be proven to them, they can only believe it, but they can gain a convinced faith if they think about it and question their actual purpose of earthly life. Just a spiritually directed thought would suffice for a person to mentally receive an answer from the kingdom which is the soul's true home. Yet such questioning thoughts have to be sent out by the human being of his own free will, for he cannot be forcibly urged into such spiritual thinking. But the smallest impulses are enough for him to question himself, and it will definitely only have beneficial results. Hence the human being will often have to suffer severe losses which can affect everything he loves, earthly commodities or even people dear to him, the loss of which can motivate him to such thoughts. And then even harsh strokes of fate will have become a blessing for him if they lead the person into a spiritual train of thought and thus enable spiritual powers to intervene, trying to instruct him. And if a person is asked whether he assuredly believes in the soul's continuation of life he will usually doubt it, even if he is religiously instructed in such a way, because he has not yet openly contradicted it. But he lacks the inner conviction, and this makes him indifferent in his conduct, which should be aimed towards this life in the spiritual kingdom. But time and again the human being will have to deal with experiences which can and should direct his thoughts to the end which is certain for him and yet will not denote an end for his soul. And frequently he will also receive instructions by way of conversations or as printed material, although he can accept or reject them of his own free will.

And even the loss of earthly goods can make the human being think and wonder whether owning these is the real purpose of earthly existence. Then it is possible that he will change his way of thinking; then it is possible that he will not regard a continuation of life after death to be out of the question and afterwards he

will lead a conscious way of life, because he believes that he will have to be answerable for it one day. And then the certainty that his body's death is not the end will steadily grow, for wherever there is the slightest will to live expediently on earth the human being will also receive help and he will not go astray."

Immortality of the Soul - 1

BD No. 1874a of 04/04/1941 taken from book 28

Jesus is speaking: "The teaching of the immortality of the soul is not accepted by many people because they compare it to earthly transience. In their opinion nothing on earth is permanent, everything passes away, and hence they believe that they are no exception to this natural law. The earthly body decays indeed, that is, it seemingly disintegrates and passes away. But the human being does not consider that the apparent disappearance is only the means of transition into a new form. On reflection he will have to conclude that everything earthly serves some purpose, and he will observe that even the most insignificant creations are somehow related to one another and therefore not without purpose.

When such a work of creation fades away numerous other creations absorb the remainder of the first, which thus serves them and continues to live on in the new creations. He only has to seriously observe an outer transformation and he would have to admit that the inner life cannot vanish either. And he should at least grant the human being this inner life too, he has to make it clear to himself that the human soul, the emotional life, cannot be discontinued arbitrarily, that this emotional life is the essential significance of every embodiment. The outer form is of no use unless the inner core is acknowledged by humanity."

Immortality of the Soul - 2

BD No. 1874b of 04/04/1941 taken from book 28

Jesus is speaking: "The construction of a human being always requires the same components: body, soul and spirit. The body, the external form, performs the functions which are determined by the soul. Consequently, the body is just the agent through which the souls will is accomplished. At the moment of death, the soul no longer needs an agent for service as it did on earth. i.e. in the visible work of creation, because it changes its environment and moves into regions where nothing externally visible needs to be done. The body, which was just the instrument for the earthly path during which the soul should have formed itself into the carrier of the divine spirit, becomes unnecessary.

The spirit, the third component of the living being, lies in fact dormant in every human being and only becomes active when the will of the soul pays more attention to the spirit than to the body, that is, when the soul considers the earthly demands less important than the demands of the spirit, which always amounts to earthly needs becoming secondary. Although body, soul and spirit belong together they nevertheless can have separate goals. The soul can direct its will more towards the demands of the body, but it can also disregard those and make its will available to the spirit within itself. And it is precisely this direction of will that decides its life in the beyond, i.e. the state the soul finds itself in after the earthly life, which can be blissful or distressing. The earthly life, the function of the

body, is therefore just a temporary condition for the soul. The soul impels the body to all actions on earth, but it has by no means ceased to exist when the body cannot perform its function any longer. The soul has indeed left the body because it moves into regions where it no longer requires an exterior form.

But to consider the soul dead as well would be a completely wrong concept of its essence because the soul is something that cannot pass away. Indeed, when the human body is dead the soul can no longer determine its functions; it can, due to a lack of maturity because it had not given enough consideration to the spirit within itself, also fall into a state of inactivity; but it can never 'cease to exist'. Because the soul is something spiritual that is everlasting, while the body consists of earthly substance, of matter, and is therefore subject to constant change and finally disintegrates into its components as soon as the soul has left the body."

When the soul, the spiritual essence within the human being, leaves the body, the earthly transformation has come to an end; that is, the soul escapes its last form on earth and enters, liberated from all matter, a new and entirely different realm than earth.

Consider the End

BD No. 6439 of 12/30/1955 taken from book 69

Jesus is speaking: "I send the same admonition to all human beings: Consider your end. For it is granted to all of you; right now, you all have to count on a natural recall from this earth when your hour has come. But many of you will have to leave earthly life prematurely, because I don't want to let them fall into My adversary's hands since their resistance is not strong enough to resist his coercion in the last days.

However, even the people who will experience the end will have to count on a shorter lifespan than they would naturally expect, for this end will happen to you soon. And you humans are not yet mature enough to anticipate this end without reservations. And thus, in view of the near end I admonish you all to make every effort to improve your soul. I caution you to live consciously and not to let a day go by without having done a kind deed, without having offered your soul a gift to help its ascent. I urgently remind you all to accept My Word, to let yourselves be addressed by Me in My Word and thereby also receive the strength to help you ascend. Don't just live your earthly life but engross yourselves at least once a day in My Word, briefly communicate with Me and commend yourselves to Me and My grace.

Just a heartfelt thought to Me is already refreshment for your soul, and if you read or hear My Word in silent devotion you will provide your soul with the nourishment that will help it mature for sure. I only admonish you humans to live consciously. to remember that your life will not last much longer and that you will prepare a bearable fate for your soul after the death of its body.

Don't let the time you have left until the end slip away, don't let it pass by without using it for your soul, and you only provide for your soul when you entertain spiritual thoughts, when you make mental contact with your God and Creator of eternity, Who is Father of you all, Who would like to admit you into His kingdom but requires your own will to do so: to create a state of soul which allows

its entry into My kingdom. Therefore, I admonish you time and again: Consider the end.

As long as you stand in the midst of life you will always resist this idea because you don't know that you can be granted an extremely blissful fate afterwards. But My love would like to grant you a blissful fate, consequently you will constantly hear these Words of exhortation from above, because you yourselves have to want to become blissfully happy. Every pensive hour, every moment of inner reflection will be of utmost benefit for you. Yet woe to those who will never find time for this, who are so attached to the world that they are incapable of detaching themselves for a short time. For they are firmly under My adversary's control from which they will hardly be able to escape if they are not helped through loving intercession, through calling upon Jesus Christ to be helped by Him directly. You can call upon Me at any time and I will hear you, for I want to release you from his chains and not prolong your captivity.

Consider the end and consider the state of your souls. Call upon Me for help. This is what My never-ending admonitions intend to achieve, that you will remain in contact with the only One Who can help you, that you will direct your eyes and appeals heavenwards and become and remain conscious of the fact that you will not live forever on this earth."

Serious Admonition to consider the Life after Death

BD No. 5180 of 07/29/1951 taken from book 58

Jesus is speaking: "Once again I admonish you humans on earth: Consider your souls and your state after death. For the forthcoming extremely difficult turn of events in your earthly life is merely intended to make you consider your physical death and what will follow afterwards. I want to draw your attention to it and lovingly inform you of the hard times which will befall you, so that you then will believe it if you are as yet unable to believe, if you still discard as a fantasy what is solemn truth. You are in great danger, for you live earthly life so light-heartedly as if it would last forever and yet, the time left to you is so short that you would be horrified if you knew of it. You gamble your life away, you are moved by trivial worries, and yet it is only important that you consider your soul, so that it will be able to calmly endure every adversity in order to start the true life in light and strength in the spiritual kingdom. Yet it is up to you humans yourselves in which state your soul will enter the spiritual kingdom.

I ever more urgently admonish you to change your attitude, although it doesn't have to be bad it is nevertheless too earthly minded to be suitable for the spiritual kingdom. Like a loving Father I call to My children on earth: Be concerned about your soul, consider your real purpose of life and hurry, for there is not much time left until the end. Change your attitude before it is too late, bear in mind what fate will await you when your earthly life is over and believe that the soul's life will not end with the body's death but that it will live on, yet in the state you have created for it in earthly life.

You are responsible for its fate in eternity, that is, you have to accept the consequences of your earthly life yourselves, which will be a fate in darkness if you have used your life wrongly. And you live wrongly if you live without faith and without love, if you do not acknowledge Me as your God and Father and therefore

do not observe My commandments either, if you only live for the world but not for the spiritual kingdom, which is your true home and which you inevitably will have to enter, albeit its spheres are so different that it can mean both supreme happiness as well as most bitter agony for the soul, depending on its state of maturity. And you humans are responsible for this state of maturity.

The Lord will then address those who are on His left hand and will say to them, looking very severe, and His eyes will be like flashes of lightning striking the reprobates, and in His voice the wrath of God will thunder: 'Go away from here! Away from Me, with your curse upon you! Go to the eternal fire prepared by the fury of God for the devil and the angels of darkness and for those who have listened to their voices of treble obscene lechery. I was hungry and you did not give Me any food, I was thirsty, and you did not quench My thirst, I was naked and you did not cloth Me, I was a pilgrim and you rejected Me, I was sick and in prison and you did not visit Me. Because you had but one law: the pleasure of your own egos.' And they will say to Him: 'When did we see You hungry, thirsty, naked, pilgrim, sick, in prison? Really, we never met You. We did not exist, when You were on the Earth.' And He will reply to them: 'That is true. You never met Me, because you did not exist when I was on the Earth. But you were acquainted with My word, and you had among you people who were hungry, thirsty, naked, ill, in prison. Why did you not do to them what you would have perhaps done to Me? Because no one says that those, who had Me among them, were merciful to the Son of Man. Do you not know that I am in My brothers, and that when one of them suffers, I am there, and that what you have not done to one of the least of My brothers, you have refused it to Me, the First-born of men? Go and burn in your own selfishness. Go and be enveloped in darkness and ice, because you were darkness and ice yourselves, though you knew where the Light and the Fire of Love were.' And they will go to the eternal torture, whereas the just will enter eternal life.

This is what I call to you from above again, so that you will turn inwards and change, so that you will pay less attention to earthly life in favor of advancing your soul's spiritual life. Listen to My call from above, take stock of yourselves, turn around before it is too late, for the day will come without fail which I have always and forever announced to you. You don't have much time left, therefore make use of it and take care of your soul, so that it will not have to fear the end which is soon about to happen to you."

Early Death - God's Mercy - Old Age

BD No. 3260 of 09/18/1944 taken from book 42

God the Father is speaking: "God's will determine in which degree of maturity a human being is called from his earthly life into the spiritual realm. This is also an apparent injustice which could further the opinion that God selects certain people to become blessed while others have to suffer being distant from God. And yet this attitude is totally wrong, because divine love and wisdom always knows the human will and therefore cuts a life short when higher development on earth is doubtful.

During the state of constraint before embodiment as a human being there is only progressive development until the spiritual substance's degree of maturity is

ready for this last embodiment. But now the human free will makes its own decisions and development can continue, remain static or even regress; and again, it depends on whether the human being as such has already improved his initial degree of maturity and is in danger of coming to a standstill or whether he has remained on the same level as at the beginning of his embodiment and is in danger of regressing. In that case it is always due to God's mercy that the human being is recalled when he has arrived at the highest level of his development on earth, i.e. when God's love protects him from regressing or from failing to advance his soul during a longer lifetime, because his guilt will increase the longer he uses his embodiment's time of grace without making proper use of it.

The human being can advance during his younger years and then stop, his development up till now comes to a halt, and then God will recall him and give him further opportunities to mature in the beyond. But the human being can also change his will in later years and his yet inadequate development can experience a sudden improvement and thus he can attain a higher degree of maturity even though for a long time he had ignored his soul until then. In that case God will give him a long life, because God knows the human being's will since eternity and shapes his life accordingly. For every human being's destiny is considered by God's love and wisdom and does not depend on God's arbitrary use of power.

God would not withhold the opportunity to mature on earth from any human being if he is willing to use it. But people pay little attention to His mercy and are unwilling to accept the relevant information. And because God knows since eternity which humans are particularly resentful to Him, because He knows when a person has reached the highest degree of development on earth, the duration of his earthly life has also been established since eternity and varies, depending on what divine wisdom deems best and most successful. God will never cut short an earthly life if the human being could still achieve higher maturity because God's love is forever concerned that the human being should attain highest possible maturity on earth; He would never withhold an opportunity from a human being which would result in complete maturity. But He knows since eternity the human will's every inclination and protects the soul from complete desertion, i.e. from certain regression if He would not end that earthly life.

For that reason, anyone who constantly strives will reach old age while, at the same time, old age is proof of steady higher development even if this is not evident to other people. A long earthly life is always a mercy but even a short life is evidence of God's love, which is forever active although it is not always recognized by the human being."

Death

The Death Phenomenon

Ref: Revelation by Jakob Lorber, the Prophet

Jesus is speaking: "The death process with human beings can differ greatly. With physical eyes, the observer sees only the gentle falling asleep, or the long and great suffering which can be caused by the separation of body and soul. But he does not see how the separation really takes place. This separation must occur, however, even though it can be very painful with some people. For the soul

can take nothing material along with it into the world beyond. The more a soul is buried in matter and the more its heart is attached to this world (the longing for wealth, fame, and honor, etc.), the more it is tied to the body with strong bands. These must be forcefully torn apart at the separation. There are people, of course, who tried to lead a good life which was pleasing to God. There are others who did not concern themselves with God's commands and led a bad life on earth. But both seemed to go over peacefully. But that is deceiving! The good one was taken in with grace and ushered on the path to bliss, which leads to the heavens. But the bad one did not use his remaining days on earth. His fate, which he caused himself, is not promising, so long as he is not prepared to show remorse and does not regret his misdeeds.

Some people have the unusual gift of the second sight (see reference in the chapter on health). In the death process, these people can see the separation of the soul from the body, the form of the soul, the surrounding loved ones, and even the angel of death. In the little book "Beyond the Threshold" some examples of passing over into the world beyond are described. This is to make this separation as vivid as possible for you and to provide comfort in knowing how death can be a gentle transition from earthly to spiritual life."

Death can be Easy or Difficult

Ref: [GGJ.02.226,05] Jakob Lorber

Jesus is speaking: "Such is the case also with dying. People with strong ties to earthly life, whose sole concern is the world, having much to suffer already during their short earthly life, often become sick in soul and thereafter certainly sick in body, and are in great misery. And they have often to contend with unbearable pain before separation from the body, passing from the body in a severely numbing pain that often lingers afterwards for lengthy periods, especially with souls that wallowed in physical comfort in the world. Whereas souls who in the world had reached the commendable conclusion that all the treasures of the world are of no use to it - since they have to sink into death with the body, having freed themselves from Adam's old scar as much as possible and having instead found God's "Atman"(the spiritual life principle of the universe, especially when regarded as inherent in the real self of the individual.) within them, nurturing same with all care, - have firstly very little of any kind of sickness to withstand.

Once the soul's life is tied to its spirit, in time its body also shall assume a spiritual direction and hence become less sensitive to impressions from the outer material world. Because every sickness usually arises from the shearing of some tie with the world. In short, through the life-hungry soul the body is stuffed with a thousand diverse needs. If, on account of climactic or a thousand other conditions, it cannot obtain satisfaction, then one or the other band must be broken, soon making the body sick and to suffer exceedingly, and with it the soul, which ultimately and together with the body is the bearer of the larger part of the pain.

If however the soul, through much self-depravation has trained to do without much of the death-bearing world-habitat, then there shall ultimately not be many bands left between the dead goods of the world and the body, and not much shall be left over for painful rupturing. If therewith the basis for many physical

sicknesses is lifted, then I Myself would like to see from where these should enter the body and the sensible soul.

[GGJ.088.082.10] I said: "When you will live in such a way that your soul will be completely reborn in his spirit, that spirit will quickly and easily be able to settle with all impure spirits that are still in your flesh, and then you will die a blissful death, also what concerns the body. But someone who in general will indeed seriously live and act according to My teaching, but besides that will still secretly fall back into his old habits, yes, then he also will not be able to reach the complete rebirth of his soul in the spirit, and finally during his passing away, with all humility and patience, he will have to accept that he still will have to struggle with many sorrows. Because then, the suffering will be the fire which will purify the life's gold of men from many dross. Because that which is spiritually impure cannot enter Heaven, which is as much as saying the following: the pure Spirit from God cannot unite completely with the soul until this soul has completely and forever banned everything out of himself that belongs to matter and its judgment. Indeed, whoever wants to separate with a blissful bodily death from this world must take this well into account.

Besides that, you should be moderate in eating and drinking and not be eager for artificial delicacies, then you will keep the health of your body for a long time, and death will be as the pleasant falling asleep of a worker who became tired in the true vineyard of God. The soul will thereby float away happily and clear-sightedly from the bodily envelopment that has become frail and will be led into the indescribable happiness of the Heavens by many friends, and he will be endlessly happy and cheerful because he finally is delivered from this world and its misery.

Therefore, whoever will completely and entirely live and act according to My teaching will also entirely be blessed with its happy results. But whoever will not do this completely and entirely, will also receive the blessing accordingly. Have you, My friend, understood this now?"

Fear of Death

BD No. 6616 of 08/08/1956 taken from book 71

Jesus is speaking: “Death is just the passageway into a life which will last forever. You humans would not have to fear death if your life on earth corresponded to My will, if you had traveled this earthly path in divine order, for then you would not feel terror-stricken in view of death, because then your soul would just rejoice at being able to escape the body in order to return to its home where the earthly body is utterly superfluous, where ceasing to exist cannot be spoken of but where a free life in an abundance of light and strength will await the soul. Jesus Christ arose from the grave on the third day. He demonstrated to you that there is no such thing as ceasing to exist after the body's demise, he has provided you with the evidence that a correct way of life merely results in the change of the earthly into a spiritual body, that the human being continues to exist, that only his shell has experienced a transformation, which is absolutely necessary for staying in the spiritual kingdom. And you all are able to accomplish this change yourselves, and death would then truly have lost its sting. But since you humans do not believe in life after death, you neglect to prepare yourselves

for a stay in the spiritual kingdom, and since your soul has therefore no prospect whatsoever to clothe itself after physical death in a radiantly bright spiritual garment you fear death, and rightly so, for you cannot cease to exist but earthly heaviness can still cling to you, and your awakening after the body's death will not be a happy one. But you will awaken, regardless of how imperfectly your soul is shaped, it will find out that it has not and cannot cease to exist. And this fate is unconsciously dreaded by you humans who fear death.

Yet you ought to remember the One Who has overcome death. Jesus Christ wants to awaken you to life; He wants to give you an eternally-indestructible life which you shall never lose again. Accept His gift of grace, remember Him during fearful hours and commend your soul to Him, and appeal to Him not to let it fall prey to death, but to have mercy on it and to help it attain life. And, truly, you will not have sent your appeal to Him in vain. Your fear will disappear to be replaced by blissful calm, a calm which only Jesus Christ can bestow upon the soul. The living faith in Jesus Christ dispels all dread of death, for the human being knows that he will rise again, just as Jesus Christ arose on the third day.

But anyone without this faith in Him will fear death or believe that he will cease to exist, that he will return into oblivion from where he imagines himself to have emerged. And he, as well as all others who lived on earth without Christ, will have a rude awakening. And it will take a long time until they are convinced that they have not perished, but that they can only escape their lifeless state if they call upon the One Whom they refused to acknowledge on earth, but Who alone can give them life again. Death need only be the transition into a new and immortal life. It need not worry people on any account, because Jesus Christ has prevailed over it, because He accomplished the act of Salvation in order to deliver people from a condition which had been brought into the world by His adversary. But Jesus' act of Salvation and resurrection are not properly valued by people. Many know of them and yet do not believe, and therefore they are also unable to derive the benefit from the effects of the act of Salvation and resurrection. But the living faith gives people firm confidence and therefore also removes their every fear of death. And these will blissfully fall asleep in the Lord and joyfully awaken with Him in the kingdom of light and beatitude. For they will eternally not taste death again, they will only ever have eternal life."

Fear of Dying - Beholding the Spiritual Kingdom before Death

BD No. 6637 of 09/06/1956 taken from book 71

Jesus is speaking: "Spiritual death is far more dreadful than physical death. And it is spiritual death which people unconsciously fear if they are frightened to die, for they fear what will happen to them after the death of the body, this fear can befall the very person who does not believe in a continuation of life after death. The soul feels that it is in a wretched state, and it transmits this awareness as fear onto the body, which therefore fights death as long as possible.

Fear of death is an involuntary confession of psychological immaturity, for the person lacks all realization and therefore also confidence in God's mercy, in hope for help, which it certainly would always receive if it would call for help. The soul is in utter darkness and unconsciously fears to approach an even darker night. A fully matured soul expects its final hour with complete calm, it longs for

deliverance from its bodily shell, it hands itself over to the One in Whom it believes and commends itself to Him and His grace. And often such souls are allowed to take a glance into the kingdom that awaits them and can radiantly happy open their eyes, in order to then close them forever and to escape from their body into the kingdom they be held. Fear of death is a distinct indication of the soul's state, and such souls must be given much help by their fellow human beings so that they will still awaken in the last minute and turn to the One Who wants to help and is able to help them.

Anyone who witnesses the death struggle and fear of a soul will be able to send a quiet, heartfelt prayer to Jesus Christ if he wants to help this soul to find inner peace. For the soul will feel this help and reach out for the last rescue anchor, and it will be carried by the fellow human being's love when it leaves the body, to Jesus Christ, who will not close His ear to a sincere prayer for help. For this reason, people should take especially good care of those who are afraid of dying and who thereby admit that they are still far from the light, from the right realization and therefore also from God. Fear of death confirms that they need help, or they would be permeated by blissful calm when they feel that the hour of their departure from this earth is approaching.

And it is an act of utmost mercy and love to support a fearful soul, when nothing else can be done but to call upon Jesus Christ Himself that He may have mercy on this soul. This loving appeal will be heard and can save the soul so that it will be spared the darkest night."

Consider the Time after Death

BD No. 6625 of 08/18/1956 taken from book 71

God the Father is speaking: "One day you all will have to lay down your earthly body and your soul will be assigned another abode. Not one of you will escape his fate; everyone can expect his physical death with certainty. Thus, you know that your life on earth is limited and that no-one can prevent his body's death when his hour has come. Yet in spite of this certainty, you live your life on earth as if it would never end. You always plan and work for the future without knowing whether you will still experience it. You don't take this into account, but it is a fact; you only create and work for your short life on earth which does not last. You yourselves, however, will not perish, your soul stays alive even after your body's death, and your soul is your real self. Hence there is, in fact, no death for you, only a change of location.

If you think about this very seriously then you will act prudently by taking care that this said later location will make you happy. Then your concern will include the time when you no longer live on this earth but continue your life in the kingdom of the beyond which, however, is created corresponding to your conduct on earth. You would all be more diligent if you believed this. The more you worry about the upkeep of your body, the less you believe that you will go on living. You cannot receive evidence for this because your earthly life must not be determined by fear which, however, would be triggered in you, who do not strive to ascend voluntarily, by the certainty of a continuation of life after death. Voluntary aspirants are indeed certain of it, they believe, but precisely because they strive to ascend. And a striving born out of fear will not lead to perfection. Therefore, it

cannot be proven to you humans that there is life after death. But everyone can awaken the belief in it himself simply by seriously considering it and wanting to do what is right.

People's attention will therefore be ever more obviously drawn to the fleeting nature of what they value too highly. People are snatched away in the midst of their lives, and from this everyone could learn to regard his life, too, as a gift that could be taken away from him any day. And he would only have to pursue the thoughts arising in him in the event of a fellow human being's sudden death. He would only have to pursue the departed soul into infinity. He would only have to think more often of him, who did not cease to exist but merely changed his abode. And truly, hands would extend to him from the spiritual realm to draw him up.

Yet even if the human being lacks the certainty of life after death, he should nevertheless expect the possibility and time and again visualize this possibility when other people die and question what his own fate might be if he were to be called away suddenly. For as long as the human being cannot prove that there is no continuation of life after death, which will never be possible, he should always make provisions. And he will never regret if he, on earth, not only considers his body but also his soul, if he gathers a few spiritual treasures on earth which then will help him to advance in the spiritual kingdom. Then the soul will reap what the person has sown on earth and blessed is the soul which has made provisions on earth for eternity."

Hour of Death - Explanation of Suffering

BD No. 4033 of 04/30/1947 taken from book 49

Jesus is speaking: "You never know how your end will happen, and therefore you should call upon God's mercy every day that you might receive it in the hour of your death. Even if you live in accordance with God's will, your end can be difficult if it is to serve you to completely purify and liberate yourselves forever. God's wisdom and love is yours until your last hour on this earth, and as long as your souls are still able to change you will be given the opportunity even at the hour of death. For this reason, devoted people often have to suffer in the flesh and cannot find an explanation for it because they are unable to detect God's love therein. And yet, divine love causes this suffering because it is the best means for the soul to acquire a degree of maturity within a short period of time which allows the light to permeate the soul in the beyond, and the soul will thank its Creator once it is free and recognizes God's great love and mercy. Thus, all suffering has to be seen as evidence of God's love, and even the end is blessed if it is accompanied by suffering, although it does not appear to the human being that way. The soul indeed separates itself from the body with pain, but immediately lifts itself into the kingdom of the blessed spirits. It not only leaves earth physically but also spiritually and also takes the body's fully matured substances along, because every degree of suffering dissolves the cover which still encloses the soul. And the person who is still able to free himself completely from immature substances on earth will be blessed, he will have used his earthly life for his deliverance and will no longer revolt against God's will either.

In the hour of death, he will certainly struggle for the peace of his soul, but he will never consider his physical suffering to be unjustified, for his soul will know that the end is near, that his physical suffering will also come to an end and that the soul will derive benefit from it even if it is no longer able to convey this realization to the body. The body, however, will separate itself from the soul as soon as it senses its perfection, because then it will have fulfilled its task of having served as an abode for this soul. The hour of death can be difficult for all of you, but it can also be a blissful falling asleep in order to awaken in the kingdom of light if the soul needs no further suffering, if it has already found the union with God on earth and He then brings it home into His kingdom, into your Father's house, in order to make you blissfully happy. But you do not know how your end will happen, and therefore pray to God for mercy, ask Him for His grace and strength if God still needs to afflict you, and you will also endure the hour of death. The body will suffer but the soul will joyfully leave the body and lift itself into the spheres of light."

Hour of Death without Fear - Readiness

BD No. 6042 of 09/04/1954 taken from book 65

God the Father is speaking: "Always be ready to exchange your earthly life for a life in the spiritual kingdom, then the hour of passing away from this earth will never come as a surprise to you and neither will you ever have to fear it. Whatever you think and do, always ask yourselves whether it is right before My eyes, then you will live consciously and work to improve your soul, thus you will live for the kingdom of the beyond, and this kingdom of the beyond will be the kingdom of light for you, for which you will gladly surrender your earthly life because it is your true home.

If only all you humans were able to realize that you merely live on this earth as a test, that it is not real life but just a preparation for this real life, and that you therefore should only ever focus on evaluating it correctly. But you regard earthly life as the only important life and consider real life in the spiritual kingdom far too little, if you believe in it at all. You use all your strength for completely irrelevant things and don't prepare yourselves enough for the life that lies ahead of you.

The hour of death was intended to be the hour of your deliverance, when you discard your earthly garment in order to enter in light and freedom into the kingdom of peace and beatitude. You were meant to consciously and joyfully look forward to this hour and gladly relinquish earthly life in exchange for a far better one. However, you will acquire this consciousness when you, in living faith, have lived a life of following Jesus, because only then will you clearly recognize the purpose of your earthly life and your objective, because only then will you know of all correlations and also of a free and blissful life in the spiritual realm. Then your spirit will be awakened, and then you will therefore place little value on earthly life and consciously strive towards the life in the spiritual kingdom, in light and happiness.

You are certainly informed of it but you will only accept it as truth when love has kindled a light within you. Hence you first have to live a life of love. Then death will no longer scare you, then you will already have the connection with the spiritual kingdom, then so many hands will reach out to you from there which will

show you the way until the end of your life. And then you will live every day on earth as it is My will. Then you will prepare yourselves for a blissful end, and the hour of your passing away from this earth will be for you the awakening into a life in light and magnificence."

The Soul's change of Abode - Death of the Body

BD No. 6817 of 04/28/1957 book 73

Jesus is speaking: "The soul's change of abode, Death of the body. The soul is your actual Self, which is immortal, which merely changes its abode after the death of the body, which has concluded its earthly progress in order to continue maturing in other spheres if it does not stay in opposition to Me and thus descend into the abyss. Hence the thought that you don't have to fear death should make you very happy, that you will live although you have to leave this earth, and that this life is far more pleasant and joyful than earthly life as a human being could ever be. You should look forward with cheerful anticipation to the day when your external cover will be taken from your real Self, when all heaviness will fall away from you and you will be able to easily and light-heartedly lift yourselves up into your true home, which truly offers you inconceivable splendors. You should rejoice at the fact that there is no death for you because your soul will merely experience a change of abode which can make it infinitely happy.

Why do you therefore fear death or anticipate the end of your earthly life with unease? Why has death become a horror for you humans, why does it trigger in you a feeling of fear when, in reality, it is just a transition into another sphere after all? Because you unconsciously sense that you did not live your earthly life correctly: and because your soul is not acquiring the light which would take all its fear away. For a person who complies with My commandments of love, who thus lives on earth in accordance with My will, has no fear of death but yearns to shed his earthly cover because he longs for his true home, because love has kindled a bright light in him and, looking ahead, he also knows himself to be near to Me, where no suffering and pain, no affliction can touch him, where he feels sheltered by My love. All people could have this blissful certainty, that they will exchange a sorrowful and difficult existence for this feeling of security when they depart from this earth, if only they would live their earthly life with this aim in mind, if they would always follow their inner voice which clearly informs them of My will, if they would already on earth enter into the right relationship with Me, their God and Father of eternity. The thought that their existence ends with the body's death is already the best evidence that the person's way of life does not correspond to My will, for this idea comes from the opposing spirit's influence wanting to prevent people from gaining correct realization and therefore also constantly increasing their desire to enjoy earthly existence to the full, for these people do not

believe in the immortality of their soul, they impose on it the same restrictions as is the fate of the external frame.

And thus, they try to savor earthly life in every way, only ever considering their body but not their soul which, after physical death, has to accept a rather uncertain fate, which will be unable to experience the splendors of its true home, since due to its imperfect disposition it cannot find admission to the spheres where inconceivable beatitudes await it. Although it is still possible for the soul to detach itself from the abyss and enter into higher spheres, it nevertheless requires far more effort and exertion than on earth and will be impossible without help, yet even then the soul will have to muster its own will, which is far easier on earth. The Self cannot cease to exist but it creates its own fate of blissfulness or agony, and only when people no longer consider their body as being 'alive' but learn to recognize the soul within the body as their actual Self, only when they learn to believe in the immortality of their soul, will they live more responsibly on earth and then no longer fear death either, which only concerns the earthly body but not its indwelling soul. Then they will live in accordance with His will and long for the hour when the soul will be allowed to leave its external cover in order to then enter the kingdom which is its true home."

Cremation - Accelerated Disintegration Process

BD No. 1899 of 04/28/1941 taken from book 28

God the Father is speaking: "Everything proceeds towards deliverance because it has to follow the path of higher development. When the spiritual essence separates itself from matter it has overcome the latter; but the spiritual essence has not always matured enough that it no longer needs an earthly (transformation) form and in that case, it will re-enter a new form, which also consists of matter. ***However, when the soul, the spiritual essence within the human being, leaves the body, the earthly transformation has come to an end; that is, the soul escapes its last form on earth and enters, liberated from all matter, a new and entirely different realm than earth.*** The body, the final earthly form, is now destined for disintegration again, i.e. the spiritual substances which constitute the earthly body, also have to take the path of higher development, since these substances are still at the initial stage of development, and for this purpose they will join divine works of creation again whose purpose is, after all, the higher development of the spirit. This can happen in various ways, but it always has to include the possibility for active service. Consequently, the substance has to join a work of creation where it has to perform some kind of task and serve by fulfilling this task, since the substance can only develop through service. If the opportunity to serve is taken away, the path of higher development is interrupted, which is an extremely agonizing condition for the spiritual substance. The time of spiritual suffering can seemingly be shortened but the spirit substance will not thank the human being who intervenes in its progress of development and prevents its service. *As soon as the natural decomposition of a human body is prevented by accelerating its process of disintegration by cremation or by chemical means, the path of the spirit is far more painful and has to be so, because this process opposes divine order, it opposes the purpose which God has given every work of creation. It is an unauthorized action by people which*

does not concur with God's will. The human body should be returned to the earth as is its purpose.

"From dust you have been taken, to dust you shall return," providing God's intervention does not determine otherwise by ending a human life in other ways than the human being's natural physical death. When the soul has freed itself from the body i.e. from the spiritual substance which forms the body, the body's job to serve the soul is fulfilled. But until it has completely disintegrated it still has other opportunities to be of service, even if the human being finds this difficult to understand, while an accelerated disintegration procedure will not allow the remains to carry out even the slightest act of service. *Hence it is completely wrong to assume that the human body will join the soul as a result of this kind of purification process*. The external form's spiritual substance has indeed the same function and eventually unites with countless other substances of soul and likewise walks the path of development on earth as a human soul, but this cannot happen the way people erroneously believe. All substances are given an appointed time for their development which the human being cannot shorten at his own discretion by means of an external process, if he does not completely use the only option of spiritual higher development on earth, i.e. that he, by his conduct, his right attitude towards God, his faith and his wholehearted actions of love, acquires a degree of maturity which can also shorten the physical forms earthly lifespan; however, it must always be left up to God's will which helpful task He will still assign to it."

Burial or Cremation - Why Decompose Slowly

Ref: Revelation by Jakob Lorber, the Prophet.

Jesus is speaking: "Man comes into the world naked and, when he must leave it again, he can take nothing with him - even if some bodies are buried in splendid caskets. Whether there is a burial or cremation, the soul, the core of the human essence, lives on forever. The final death of the body first takes place when the spirit has left the body with its soul.

It is of the greatest importance to ensure that the body is not just seemingly dead but completely dead. The medical examiners must be cautious people, who know and exactly observe the characteristics of death.

Some people are plagued by the thought of being gnawed by worms during the process of decay and thus prefer cremation. This worry is unfounded. When the ego, the higher energetic spirit (our everyday ego consciousness) has been separated from the body with its soul, then it feels nothing of the decay or the worms or the burning (or whatever else happens to the body).

Unfortunately, only a few people believe in an eternal life of the soul in the world beyond. So, it is all the more interesting for us to learn what Jesus says about this subject. In the discussion with a scribe, Jesus addresses the connections concerning decay.

Why Decompose Slowly

Ref: [GGJ.08.083.01] Jakob Lorber

Jesus is speaking: "**The scribe** said: "Lord and Master, only now are the things which are related to dying completely clear to me, but a couple of things of

minor importance, which however do not belong to the process of dying, I still would like to see explained by You, because by the spreading of Your teaching, more precisely among the Gentiles, we certainly can expect questions concerning this on which we then - if we should not be instructed by You about this - could not give an answer.

It is concerning the following two points, the first is: why must the body of man decompose and perish only slowly? It surely would be in Your power to dissolve it in one moment and to change it into something else, because this slow decomposing and perishing of a dead body makes on every human being an unpleasant impression, and the decomposing of many bodies infects the air and has a harmful influence on the health of living men. Now, if a body, as soon as it is completely dead, would perish for instance like a flake of snow in the sun, then in the first place this would be more decent for man, and secondly men would have nothing to fear of the filthy emanations during the long-lasting decomposing of the body and they also could save the often-considerable expenses of the funeral and the sad trouble. So, this is the first point about which I gladly would like to have a more detailed explanation from You.

The second one is: will the soul, when he is liberated from the body, be able to look back on this Earth, if he wants it, and see its changes and also see men's behavior? That is the second point about which I still would like to hear a couple of words from You, o Lord and Master."

I said: "My friend, what concerns the first point, this is how it is concluded in My order, that the body for totally different and certainly very wise reasons is only decomposing and changing slowly. *But when a person has lived according to My order, his dead body will anyway be changed more quickly, and during the process of decomposing it will not spread filthy emanations. Only when a person has accumulated by his sins many impure spirits, who then will come free during the process of decomposing, a disgusting smell will develop and can have a bad influence on the health of the other people when the body lies too long unburied somewhere in the open air. But a couple of days will not matter.*

However, if I would allow a dead body, which is full of impure spirits to decompose suddenly, those impure spirits who did come free by that in great numbers, would certainly immediately and fast as lightning jump on those people who are nearest and would harm them seriously and even kill some.

But during the slow decomposition the impure spirits are changing first into a countless number of small and also bigger worms. These are consuming the body and finally also each other. Next, they are decomposing themselves and are ascending in already purer fluids to the surface of the Earth where they again are changed into all kinds of herbs and then from this to a purer kind of worms and insects. Look, this is how My wisdom and My order want it, and I have told you know precisely as much about it as is necessary for man to know. The rest will be imparted to you by the spirit when this will be necessary for you to know.

What concerns your second question, it is obvious that perfect souls - as I have shown to you on the Mount of Olives - will see not only this Earth but also, if they want it, the whole creation and observe it in all directions. Also, the guidance and leading of the living human beings on the celestial bodies and also the other

creatures will be entrusted to them. And then it is certainly obvious that perfect souls must and will also see the material creations.

But imperfect and evil and dark souls will not be able to do that - that would also not be good, because in their great malicious pleasure and thirst for revenge they certainly would inflict great harm to the Earth and all creatures. Although they are staying in the depths of this Earth and also in many holes and caves of the Earth, but still, they do not see the place where they are, but only their unfounded and vague image of their fantasy. Only now and then one or the other deceased soul is permitted to become aware of the material place where he lives. In such a state, he then also knows what one of his family members or also another human being is doing on Earth, how he is, and still many other things, but everything only for a few moments. After that, he returns directly again to his futile place of fantasy where he finds others of his kind. For also with the imperfect and evil souls it is so that those who are like-minded are grouping together in unions, but of course not in good ones, for only the blessed spirits unite in good unions. All the rest I have explained and shown to you already on the Mount of Olives and consequently this is enough. Did you all understand this well?"

All of them said, also **the scribe:** "Yes, Lord and Master. Please be always merciful and charitable to us sinners, so that later we would not come into the unions of evil souls and be patient with still many weaknesses of us. You only be eternally praised and honored."

The Burning and Embalming of Dead Bodies

Ref: [GGJ.08.084.01] Jakob Lorber

Jesus is speaking: “When all of them had said this to Me, Agricola came still to Me and said: "Lord and Master, with us Romans the dead bodies, especially those of important people, are burned, and the ashes are then kept in certain urns and stone bottles which are intended for that. Or, of very prominent people, the bodies are embalmed and then kept in the catacombs. Only the poor people and the slaves are buried on the places that are well walled around and which are intended for that. Should this continue like that or be changed? What do you think about the burning and embalming of the dead bodies?"

I said: "If you cannot change it, then let the old custom be. But burning is still better than embalming by which the decomposition process is strongly slowed down. However, it is best to bury the body in the earth. But one should take care that a body is only buried when it is completely dead, which a doctor surely must be able to make out based on the color of the face and the evil smell of decomposition, because with the apparently dead the actual characteristics do not take place. Therefore, they also should not be buried before they are unmistakably dead.

A perfect person will of course never come into an apparently dead state, but it can easily happen with a materialistic person craving for pleasure, because his soul often clings with a too great love to his flesh. When such a person becomes cold and stiff, has no more breath and pulse and gives no more sign of life, the soul is still in the body and makes agonizing efforts to bring it to life again, in which he will also often succeed after a few days. But if such a person is buried too quickly into the earth and then comes to life again in the grave, also regarding

the body, then you surely can imagine that this must bring up for him a condition of very great despair, even if it is only for a few moments. However, if you live according to My teaching in which especially you should practice neighborly love among each other, then it most certainly is also a deed of true neighborly love that you be very careful that no apparently dead person is burned or buried. If you discover that someone is apparently dead, bring him in an area with good and fresh air, pray for him and lay your hands upon him, then he will be better.

If someone's apparently dead state is more persistent, then be patient and do not consider him dead before the real characteristics of death are clearly becoming visible to him. Because what you confidently are desiring that men will do for you, if you would come into such a situation, which is always sad, do it also for them. And certainly you, Romans, should remember this very well. Because in burying the poor and the slaves you do not pay much attention - and I now have pointed this out to you."

Earthly Task: Volition - Wrong Endeavour

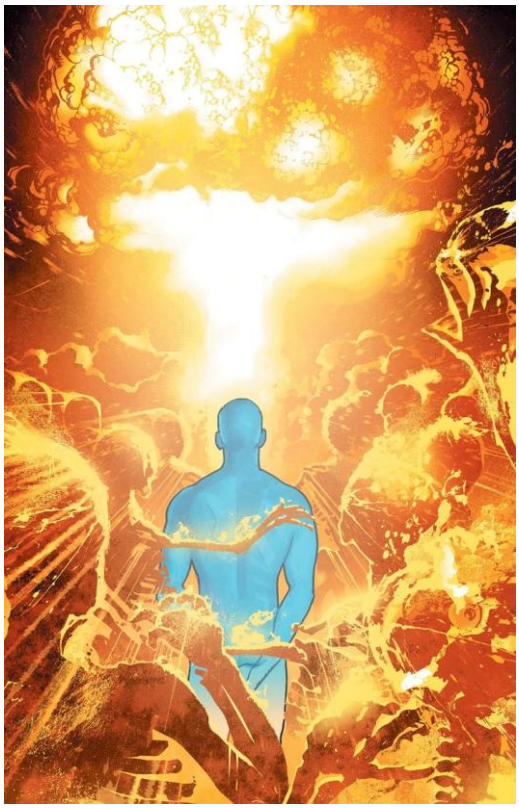
BD No. 5557 of 12/15/1952 taken from book 61

God the Father is speaking: "You had to walk a difficult path before you reached the point when you were able to make the last test of will. Your soul, which had previously been dissolved into countless sparks of soul in order to endure a process of maturing in a constrained state, has assembled itself again. Once again you have attained your self-awareness and as individual beings you are about to make a free choice: to choose the Lord to whom you want to belong. This decision is the purpose and goal of your earthly life, and this decision has to be made of your own free will. It cannot be made by someone on your behalf, nor can it be delayed, it has to be made without fail by the end of your life, because this decision will determine your fate for eternity. Your attitude towards this task during your earthly life is therefore immensely serious, it can result in light and bliss but also in death and destruction, and you alone determine this through your will. But you are hardly bothered by it, even when you are informed of the reason for your earthly life, even when your eternal fate is described to you as either glorious or dreadful. Because you don't believe that sooner or later you will have to be accountable for your will. However, you cannot be forced to believe it, consequently the belief is rarely found amongst humanity and people only rarely accomplish their goal of deciding for the right Lord. Yet disbelief has its price.

People increasingly forget their task in life; their every consideration merely concerns the world regardless of the fact that they will soon have to leave it. They face again what they leave behind. The memory of their past course of suffering through the material forms was taken from them because they will have to make their decision with freedom of will and may not choose the right Lord out of fear. Hence there is an imminent danger that their decision will be detrimental to them, that they will devote all their senses to matter and by doing so also choose the lord of this world, to whom they will fall victim once more and return to the abyss due to their wrong decision. Because they should turn their eyes towards heaven, they should strive to ascend and turn away from the world. Then the right choice was made, then the course through the whole of creation was successful, then earthly life will result in the being's culmination, then the soul has found the right

Lord and will hasten to meet Him. Then the person has passed the test of will on earth and can discard the heavy earthly body and enter eternity as a pure spirit, and then the former long earthly progress on earth has not been in vain. *The being has found its way back to its source; it has recognized the Father and surrendered itself to Him for all eternity."*

Chapter 3: The Resurrection Event



The Resurrection Event, The Resurrection of the Body in the Eyes of the Church, The Sequence of Events when the Soul Leaves the Body, God Leads Man to Eternal Bliss – the resurrection, The Sleep of the Soul, The Two Resurrections – body joins the soul, The Sleep of the Soul, Return to God Necessitates Sincerity of Will, The Path of Return to God, Duration of Returning to God, Union With God, Love is the Key to the Spiritual Kingdom, Jesus Christ Leads us on the Right Path, Jesus, the good Shepherd . . . and much more

The Resurrection Event - 1Cor15:50

This I declare, brothers: flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God, nor does corruption inherit incorruption. Behold, I tell you a mystery. We shall not all fall asleep, but we will all be changed, in an instant, in the blink of an eye, at the last trumpet. For the trumpet will sound: the dead will be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. For that which is corruptible must clothe itself with incorruptibility, and that which is mortal, must clothe itself with immortality. And when this which is corruptible clothes itself with incorruptibility, and this which is mortal clothes itself with immortality, then the word that is written shall come about: "Death is swallowed up in victory. Where, O death is your victory? Where, O death is your sting?

The sting of death is sin, and the power of death is the law. But thanks be to God who gives us the victory through our Lord, Jesus Christ. Therefore, my beloved brothers, be firm, steadfast, always fully devoted to the work of the Lord, knowing that in the Lord your labor is not in vain.

The Resurrection of the Body in the Eyes of the Catholic Church and According to New Revelation

Ref: Kurk Eggenstein "Resurrection of the Body" by Jakob Lorber

Certain passages in the Old Testament (Book of Daniel) have been quoted as "the first definite sign" that the Jews believed in the resurrection of the body. [29] The cryptic passages in Daniel are, among others: "Many (not all?) of those who sleep in the dust of the earth will wake, some of them to life eternal, the others to eternal shame and contempt." "And the man enquired of the one in linen garments who was above the waters of the river: 'How long shall it be till these wonders cease?' He said: "Go, Daniel, for the meaning of the words must remain sealed and secret till the time of the end." (Dan 12, 2, 6 and 9)

It has to be said: that is no suitable basis on which to establish doctrines. Mark 12, 26-27 does not tell us the nature of the resurrection Jesus spoke of. Paul therefore asks the question: How are the dead raised? With what kind of body shall they come? (I Cor 15, 35) "A sensual body is sown, but one that has become spirit is raised." (1 Cor 15, 44) "So I tell you this, my brothers: flesh and blood cannot achieve the Kingdom of God, and that which is mortal shall not attain to immortality." (I Cor 15,50)

Paul held the view, wrongly, that the end of the world would come in his day. He therefore wrote: ". . . and was a warning for us, who experience the end of times." (I Cor 10, 11) "The time is short." (I Cor 7, 29) "You see, I will tell you a secret: We shall not all die, but we shall all be transformed, and this suddenly, when the last trumpet sounds. For the trumpet shall sound; the dead will then be raised immortal, and we shall be transformed." (I Cor 15, 51-52) Paul, as we know, was mistaken. The end of the world did not come. But it is important to note that Paul spoke of the body 'become spirit'.

In the 5th century, Augustine, a man who evolved many erroneous and often incomprehensible, absurd doctrines and yet absolutely dominated Western thought for centuries, developed a strange concept of the resurrection of the fleshly body in the next world.

"By no means shall we believe these to be mere spirits, for they are rather bodies of tangible flesh." (*Civ. Dei* XIII. 22-23) This put him in direct opposition to the teaching of St. Paul. He did experience some doubt, however, as to whether the awkward physical body would actually fit into the world of spirits, but this certainly did not make him give up his absurd notion, and he tried to get around the problem by adding that the life-giving spirit in the next world "does not admit physical heaviness." (*Civ. Dei* XIII. 23) [30]

Augustine's crude notion of resurrection in the flesh and of a fleshly body entering into the world of spirits persisted right through the Middle Ages. The Council of Toledo (A.D. 675) declared: "This body, in which we dwell, exist and move, will rise." (Denz 287)

Pope Leo IX (1053) spoke of a genuine resurrection "of the very flesh I am now clothed in" (Denz 347), and the Lateran Council (1215) of "the selfsame bodies that we have now." (Denz. 429) [31]

Following 2nd Vatican, Catholic theological lexicons now say the exact opposite of what church fathers, popes and councils have taught. An example taken from Professor Karl Rahner's *Herders theologisches Taschenlexikon* (1972, page 255 f.) reads: "Whenever the New Testament refers to resurrection, it speaks of the 'resurrection of the dead', never of the flesh . . ." "As to the biblical concept, it should be evident from the above that its real core cannot be a concept of bodies being restored, although the Bible does present this as an image throughout." Joseph Ratzinger uses almost the same words; "Thus it is now also established that the real core to the concept of resurrection is not a restoration of bodies, though it has been reduced to this in our thoughts." [32] With this, Catholic theologians are now coming very close to what New Revelation has to say.

After this doctrinal chaos of conflicting opinions over the centuries, let us now turn to the words of New Revelation: "When the soul has become ripe, it leaves this body forever, and the body is consumed. It is all the same, then, by whom or in what way. Anything in it that is still substantial, belonging to the soul, is also restored to the soul. Everything else (physical matter) becomes nourishment for a thousand other forms of creature life." (Gr VI 53, 11)

"The human being will, however, at different times also have a different body." (Gr VI 54, 4) (It should be noted that the billions of cells in the human body are completely replaced in the course of seven years.)

"It can never be in accord with God's eternal scheme, for God Himself is a pure spirit, and men, too, in the end are destined only to become godlike pure spirits, for all time. What purpose then would their bodies serve to them?" "Yes, men will have bodies in that world, too, but not these earthly bodies of coarse matter, but wholly new ones that are spiritual and originate from the good works they have done on this earth, in accord with the teaching I have given to you. When these things are as I have said, how can anyone think that the resurrection of the body refers to these earthly bodies being revived in time to come? The resurrection of the body consists merely in the good works that alone give the soul true everlasting life, good works the soul has performed for the good of its fellow men in this life of the flesh. Therefore, any man who hears My teaching, believes in Me and acts accordingly shall be raised by Me Myself on his day of judgement which will immediately follow the moment the soul leaves this body." (Gr

"Therefore, understand the resurrection of the body to mean the good works of true love of your neighbor! These shall be the flesh of the soul and thus rise with it to everlasting life as an unalloyed ethereal body on its judgement day in the spirit world, following the true trumpet call of this My teaching. If you had borne a body a hundred times on earth, in that next world you shall have but one body, and that the one described to you." (Gr V 238, 1)

"Since the flesh of man is principally given to a spirit brought out of condemnation (spirits who fell with Lucifer, author) only so that he may go through a new trial of freedom in it, as in a world wholly of his own, you will now find it easy to see that a body of flesh would be quite unnecessary for spirits who already are perfected (in the next world, author), in that the flesh is but a means, and never in all eternity an end, for in the final instance everything has to grow wholly spiritual again and no more material." (Gr I 165, 9)

"So not the smallest grain of the flesh that has served the soul here will in the next world arise united with the soul to enter eternal life?" one of the disciples asked Jesus. The answer he received was: "where the outline of the outer form of the soul, and particularly its garments, are concerned, the soul ether parts of its body on this earth shall be united with it again, but not a single atom of the coarse organic body." (Gr X 9, 14-15)

The Gospel of Luke and the 'Youngest Judgement'

Ref: (GH3,333 – 19/3/1864) Jakob Lorber

Jesus is speaking: "The named apparent discrepancies you will also find in the gospel of Luke; for this evangelist have written his gospel and the apostolic history only fifty years after My time. His gospel is also a collection of what he has brought together through diligent research. He sent all he wrote to his known friend Theophilus of Athens, upon which Theophilus have written a gospel from the gospels of Luke, have enriched it with several additions – but also mixed in some errors – giving rise to some dissensions, especially regarding the literal, natural meaning of My [alleged] highly tyrannical behavior connected to the 'youngest judgement', which does not correlate at all with the most correct, shortened gospel of John; yet it still does allow spiritual enlightenment – and we will still talk about this and many other things in the next word. This is enough for today. Amen. (Luke 1:3; 21:25-27; Matt 25:31-46; Acts.17:31)

I have already told you yesterday about the peculiar ***'youngest judgement'*** mentioned in the gospel of Matthew (L'Rabbas) and even more so in the gospel of John and that exactly this youngest judgement, was and still is mostly responsible why many people turn away from My teachings, created out of themselves teachings purely out of their intellectual cunning and taught this to their fellow men and lived and acted according to this themselves, not wanting to hear and know any more of the frightful day teaching and the prophets. (Matt 25:31-46; Luke 21:25-27; Acts 17:31)

For they said – and were not wrong – 'How could an endlessly wise God, whose small and great creatures see, feel and breathe only love, create the greatest number of people to only send them, after a short material life, anyway, consisting only of death and many miseries, after the transition to the afterlife, to

eternal torture and torment for the transgressions they committed in their bodies on earth?'

I tell you, such will not be possible even for the most severe and malicious tyrant on earth, for it is surely not unknown to some of you from primordial, pre-, after- and contemporary history that too great tyrants at the end became afraid of themselves. Some of them began to flee, without reason except for their increasing fear for themselves – and so came to their end on such a flight.

I can additionally tell you here regarding such excrements of human cruelty (as explanation) that they, after a time of tyrannical rule, become possessed by more and more evil or unfermented demons and become a tool for their demonic urge for revenge which they wanted to direct against the nation.

If you would gather all these tyrants whom, in the eyes of the world really did these cruelties upon cruelties and condemn them therefore in hell, then would you as judge, yes yourselves be a greater tyrant than they were. How could I (If I where such a sharp judge), plead the Father as being the eternal Love in Me, to forgive those who crucified Me, since they did not know what they have done! (Luke 23:34)

For the Pharisees, from the high priest Caiaphas down to the soldiers who nailed My body to the cross – none of them really knew who they worked with in Me. The Pharisees regarded Me, despite My deeds and teachings, firstly as a chief magician from the school of the Essenes (this thought still lingers), whom they intensely hated. Secondly, they saw Me as an instigator of the Jewish people, creating an opportunity for the Romans to remove all freedom from the Jews and ultimately their religious culture.

Therefore, the more signs I performed, the more My enemies, whom you know, multiplied.

But concerning the soldiers, they were mostly hired Roman soldiers, hired from all the nations of the Roman kingdom and the more heartless and gruesome they could be in battle and smaller executions, the more advantageous and useful they were. For an emotional Roman soldier would be worthless to the war-minded Romans. You can deduct from this that the general Roman soldier knew even less what they did as did My arch enemies themselves. Again, it can be asked whether it would really be right and righteous, according to My Godly wisdom, fair to condemn them to hell tor ever for what they did to Me and throw them into eternal torture and pain? (Matt 25:31-46)

Have I damned the criminal who, as you know, hung on My right-hand side because he mocked Me? It is written nowhere; but the other criminal who recognized Me as being righteous and seriously scolded the right-hand-side criminal because of his mockery. Therefore, I gave him the assurance that He would be with Me in Paradise even that same day, even if he did die on the cross because of robbery and murder. (Paradise is the state of peace, but not yet heaven) (Luke 23:39-43)

Where is then the terribly sketched judgement day according to which barely a decillionth of all people would end up in heaven but all others in hell forever?

How could He have preached of such a frightful day, He who has written the guilt of the woman caught in adultery in the Temple's sand and at another

occasion called out in the presence of many sinners: “Come to me, all who are weary and burdened, I will give you rest!” (John 8:3-11; Matt 11:28)

Again I once said when a scribe asked who fostered a half-measure faith in Me: “Master, I recognized that you have taught rightly and justly and no one can say anything against what You taught; yet You say in Your message: 'Who believed in You and act according to Your word, those will have life; also then, if it would be possible, die a hundred times in this world.” But now, look at the nations and people on this earth which will in twenty thousand years hear nothing more of Your message. How will they believe in You and live according to Your word? Will those almost innumerable number of people all go into eternal death because they will not be able to believe in You and live according to Your words? (John 8:51; 6:40,47)

Since that scribe have asked Me such a question per occasion, *I showed him the firmament which was filled with stars: “Look up there, this is the house of My Father. In that infinitely big house is much room. Who could not get to know Me here and could not hear My living word, there will definitely be found, in this great house, an opportunity for the purpose of his life? Therefore, you should not worry yourselves about those who would not hear of Me now or later, for 'My Father' know them all and have not called them to eternal fall, but unto eternal resurrection to life out of His love and wisdom. In this you have thus asked Me an apparently wise, yet still a vain question. (John 14:2)*

Have I therefore damned the 'bad overseer' which all of you are in some or the other aspect, because of his bad household management, because he deceived his employer, yet gave benefit to his debtors and this the more because he knew that his employer would fire him? Have I not said: Do not become like this overseer, but do the same as he did and those for whom you did spiritual and physical kind actions, will someday receive you in their heavenly homes? (Luke 16:9)

Where is found in such a message anything of the fearsome youngest judgement day, with which these two known revenge-evangelists, L'Rabbas as Matthew and Theophilus as Luke, made themselves guilty of concerning various facets of My Love and wisdom?

Yet, the most appalling was only done after the great church council of Nicea – also from the Greek side and even more by the Roman bishops; for they spared no trouble to ad in the most livid colors the youngest day judgement, the purgatory and the hell – partly from the heathen Tartarus and partly from the old Jewish Sheol; and they gave Me the role of judge over the deceased souls, taken from the known-to-you Äakus, Minos and Rhadamanthus. Accordingly, I have to relentlessly and discompassionately judge, condemn and curse to hell for eternity all those who did not obey the precepts and commands of the so-called 'holy father' in Rome.

I intend to sufficiently prove here that neither I, nor any of My true evangelists could have been the discoverers and teachers of all this. I would not then allege of Myself that I am the highest love and compassion and tomorrow commit the highest vengefulness, relentless mercilessness and eternal punishment and lust for torture against My children on grounds of their transgressions of which they often, at the bottom of it all, do not carry even a

hundredth of all guilt. I did not come to make that which are lost, even more lost; but to visit it in all love and bring it back to the light, for not to let it get lost. As Savior, I came to the world only for the sake of the sick, not for the healthy ones. Should I then make the sick even more sick than they already are? This would have suited the teachings and liking of the Pharisees, especially the many so-called holy fathers in Rome, but not to My liking, since I did not even let Myself as man be addressed as 'good master'. Then it must be impossible. I said: "Why do you call Me good, nobody is good, except for God alone"; therefore, also you should call no one 'Father', except for your father in heaven, and no one is holy except alone your God. (Matt 18:11; 19:17; 23:8-10; Luke 15:4-7)

How then should you consider the so-called 'Vicar of God on earth', which let himself be called 'Holy Father' and 'Your highness'; and what of the youngest judgement and the preceding peculiar judgement, purgatory and hell, which is mostly taught by him?

I tell you, just as little as of his holiness, of his subject officers, of the chair of Peter in Rome – which city Peter never saw – and of the particles of that cross on which I was crucified, which can on grounds of very wise reasons not be found anywhere on the whole earth, like My – false - garment which were displayed often in Trier in Germany; or the bodies of the three kings in Köln, or the three iron nails in Meiland, since of those in all Roman and Greek churches combined so many exist that a small train can be built of it. About the other things you can come to your own conclusions, and it is not necessary for Me to say any more about it. You will know that they already have found three true heads of John, that in the alleged cave of My birth was picked up petrified milk of My mother Mary and is sold to pious pilgrims among many other holy relics.

Stay therefore only with the Gospel of John; for that gospel, like his Revelation, has been written by his hand. But the other two evangelists, that is Matthew and Luke, I already have shown you the circumstances surrounding these two. After John, Mark is the most important one to look at, for what he says very briefly, he mostly have created from the writings and teachings of the apostle Paul. With this, be done with the alleged utterly frightful day of the coming youngest day of judgement at the end of all time. Amen."

The Sequence of Events when the Soul Leaves the Body

Ref: [GGJ.04.129.01] Jakob Lorber

Jesus is speaking I say: "This you should immediately know so please therefore listen! The visible vapor cloud - which is distorted but nevertheless has the size and shape of a present-day human being - is the consequence of the profound distress experienced by the soul at the moment of separation, when the soul, because of all the fear and terror, becomes in a way unconscious for a few moments.

It is an extraordinarily stressful activity for the separating soul to try to maintain itself in the consciousness of its own existence. All its elements are subjected to exceptionally intense vibration, so violent that even the spirit's very perceptive inner eye cannot make out any specific shapes.

A similar phenomenon from nature is to be found in the bass string of a harp. When it is firmly plucked, it will quickly vibrate to and fro for a time and

during that movement you can only see the string itself as a transparent nebulous thread. When the string stops vibrating, its true form again becomes visible in its rest position.

You have the same phenomenon if you consider a buzzing fly whose wings you can only see as wings after the fly has stopped flying and has therefore also stopped buzzing. When it is in flying mode, you only see the fly surrounded by a small misty cloud.

When the soul makes its exit at the moment of separation from the destruction of the torn, subsequently unserviceable body, it often vibrates with oscillations as great as a hand span and so quickly that you can accept its speed as one thousand to-and-fro and up-and-down movements in one single moment but when this vibration is taking place, even the most attentive spectator will find it completely impossible to identify any kind of human shape. After a while the soul's movement progressively slows down so that the human shape again becomes visible. Once it has completely returned to its rest position, the state which it achieves immediately after the final separation, it can be seen as a perfect human shape, provided only that it has not been excessively distorted by the variety of sins it has previously committed. - Do you now understand all this?"

The Two Resurrections – the body joins the soul

MVN 1943:265

Jesus says: "Before closing this cycle there is something to be said about the two resurrections.

The first being, when the soul separates from the body and appears before Me in the individual judgment. But it is only a partial resurrection. Rather than a resurrection, it could be called the liberation of the spirit from the sheath of the flesh and the spirit's waiting to rejoin the flesh so as to reconstitute the living temple, created by the Father, the temple of man created in the image and likeness of God.

A work in which one part is missing, is incomplete, and thus imperfect; Man, as a work, perfect in his creation, is incomplete and imperfect, if he is not joined together again in his different parts. Destined to the Kingdom of light or the dwelling of darkness, men must eternally be in one or the other with their perfection as flesh and spirit.

The first and second resurrections are thus spoken of. But observe:

The one who has killed his spirit with an earthly life of sin comes to Me, in the particular judgment, with a spirit that is already dead. The final resurrection will cause his flesh to take on again, the weight of the spirit, to die with it completely. Whereas the one who has overcome the flesh in earthly life comes to Me, in a particular judgment, with an alive spirit that, on entering Paradise, increases his mode of living.

Those being purged are also 'alive' Sick, but alive. When healing is obtained in expiation, they will enter the place which is Life. In the final resurrection their spirits, alive with my Life, to which they will be indissolubly united, will take on the flesh again to make it glorious and live with it totally, just as I've lived with it.

That's why the first and second deaths are spoken of and, consequently, the first and second resurrection. Man must arrive at this eternal possession of the Light - for in Paradise you possess God, and God is Light - by his own will, as by his own will he wanted to lose the Light and Paradise. I give you help, but the will must be yours.

I am faithful. I have created you free, and I leave you free. And if you consider how worthy of admiration this respect by God for man's free will is, you can understand how right and proper it would be for you not to abuse it by doing evil therewith, and how right and proper to maintain your respect for, gratitude towards, and love of the Lord God.

To those who have not acted dishonestly I say, 'Your dwelling in Heaven is ready, and I ardently desire that you should be in my Blessedness.'"

God Leads Man to Eternal Bliss – the resurrection of the body

Ref: (GH3,333 – 19/3/1864) Jakob Lorber

Jesus is speaking: "Human beings live with complete free will, either based on God's teachings or according to their own ideas of pleasure.

During life on earth, their souls are imprisoned in their bodies and have no memory of their previous spiritual life. **As soon as the bodies can no longer serve the souls (due to age or illness), the souls leave the bodies and immediately enter the world beyond. This is the judgment day or first day in the world beyond. After 25 to 100 years, the discarded material bodies are gradually transformed into energy free of matter and then added as an eternal covering of the energized soul. This is designated as the resurrection of the body.** On Easter morning, the body of Jesus was also transformed into pure energy and added to his soul as a covering. The Roman soldiers saw this as a flash of light. Additionally, the resurrection of the body means that the good and bad works of man accompany the soul eternally (viewed spiritually). Each soul takes all of its thoughts and dreams and lives in them for the future. By its nature, the soul is our ego consciousness in an energized body, which lives in the world beyond as does the material body in this life. After passing over to the world beyond, the souls are as imperfect as before. They are shown the true teaching of God, free of false doctrine, by the angels. These consist of:

We human beings should love God, our heavenly Father, above all, who, unknown to most, walked the earth in the person of Christ Jesus. And we should love our neighbors as ourselves. We should become humble, living and acting according to His commands.

No single soul is forced to accept this teaching of love. Also, in the world beyond, souls possess complete freedom of will. Only those souls can obtain eternal bliss, which willingly live according to the principles of Heaven (humility, love of neighbor and love of God).

With their growing perfection, the souls become younger and more beautiful until, fully youthful, they can live in eternal joy. From Jesus they obtain increasing power, and, on His behalf, they can do great things for the well-being of their neighbors. Also, as quick as a flash (speed of thought) they can travel the whole universe.

There are stubborn, blind souls who did not come to believe in God on earth and lived only based on selfishness, hedonism, pride, and imperiousness, at the expense of their fellow men. For them, it can take thousands or millions of years until they are ready to stop living by the principles of Hell, but by those of Heaven: true humility, love of God and love of neighbor."

The Sleep of the Soul - Misguided Teaching

BD No. 6541 of 05/06/1956 taken from book 70

Jesus is speaking: "It is extremely wrong to deem the souls of the departed as being in an eternal sleep until the arrival of Judgment Day. This idea proves total ignorance of the soul's process of development, furthermore, it proves a wrong attitude towards Me or a person could not think so wrongly, and it proves that there is no belief in the soul's life after death, for an eternal sleep of death, as presumed by people, cannot be described as 'life after death'.

But this misguided thought is also a great disadvantage for the departed souls, because prayers will not be offered for them and thus, they will not receive the help which they need so badly. But people who adopted this doctrine and were taught wrongly will not accept being taught otherwise, and yet they hold on to the error as if it was gospel truth. Here, too, My adversary's work is obvious, who particularly wants to stop people from praying for the souls, because such prayer could help to set them free, which he tries to prevent. But even when these misguided teachings are confronted by the truth, people will not take the only path which could provide them with clarification. They need only ask Me for an explanation, if they do not want to believe those who would like to correct their error, they need only approach Me Myself. But they won't take this path, and therefore they are beyond help and refuse to let go of their error.

However, these departed souls suffer immense hardship if they are not remembered in prayer. And people on earth cannot receive instructions for the better from the spiritual kingdom either, because they do not believe in a connection between the world of light and people on earth and therefore do not make themselves mentally available to the knowing powers. They are only concerned about their earthly life as human beings until death. Their idea of an 'eternal sleep of the soul' until 'Judgment Day' only proves that they lack all knowledge about the spirits' process of redemption, about My fundamental nature, which is love, wisdom and omnipotence, and about Jesus' act of Salvation. Their knowledge is very limited and does not correspond to the truth in the slightest, and when truth is brought to them, they resist it. And yet they try to prove their point of view with the Word of God, with the Scriptures, but it is not their 'awakened spirit' that finds those references, rather, My adversary himself makes use of My Word when he wants to cause confusion. But he is only successful when a person merely uses his intellect and does not ask Me Myself for enlightenment through the spirit when he asks for an explanation.

The letter kills, only the spirit gives life. Anyone who does not entrust himself to Me first, so that I can guide his thoughts correctly, will truly be killed by the letter, since My adversary can use the letter too but will interpret its meaning completely differently and thereby make the biggest error seem acceptable to people. The doctrine about the soul's sleep of death is a truly dubious teaching, a

teaching which also causes great indignation in the needy souls of the beyond, who 'live' and yet are so weak that they would be grateful for every gift of strength a loving prayer could impact on them. People should frequently remember those souls in their prayers, whose family members on earth believe this misguided teaching, so that they can gather strength, ascend, and mentally help them in turn. Although a life of love on earth will soon provide the souls with clear understanding, they first must let go of erroneous teachings before they can be assigned to a field of activity themselves, since every activity in the spiritual kingdom consists of spreading the pure truth.

Hence, a soul that lived a life of love on earth is blessed; indeed, it will easily detach itself from misguided attitudes and wrong spiritual knowledge. The others, however, will find themselves in utmost adversity, because every misguided teaching has damaging effects on the soul, but especially the teaching about the eternal sleep of death, since it can actually lead to a kind of darkness similar to death, and at the same time reduce the opportunities for help due to the belief that prayers are futile. However, anyone who sincerely turns to Me Myself will become clearly aware how misguided this teaching is."

Return to God necessitates Sincerity of Will

BD No. 6823 of 05/06/1957 taken from book 73

Jesus is speaking: "Anyone having made it his goal to travel his earthly path in accordance with God's will can also always be assured of assistance on the part of God, because God only allowed him to embody himself for the purpose of aligning his will to divine will. And since, during this time on earth, only the human being's will makes the decision, this very will, has already passed its test and thus God can now take care of the person in every way without exerting any coercion of will. As long as the human being is still undecided or even still adheres to God's adversary, the human being's will is indeed fought over by God and the beings of light, that is, it will be just as influenced by Him as by the adversary's side, so that it should freely decide.

But once the human being has freely decided to subordinate himself to God's will by living a way of life in divine order, then he will also have entered His sphere and God will no longer let him fall prey to His adversary. But his will has to be sincere. The apparent fulfillment of God's will as a result of a church upbringing is not enough, nor will it suffice to carry out deeds of love which, again, are mere church requirements and are more or less fulfilled as obedience towards these demands. Wanting to belong to God has to be an innermost endeavor, the inner fully conscious surrender to Him must voluntarily have taken place, thus he himself must have directed his will towards the One, Whom he has recognized as God and Father of eternity. And from this follows that the return to God is not a mass movement, that every individual person must have set out on the path by himself and therefore he also has to do everything necessary for it himself: to recognize God and to acknowledge Him and to appeal to Him for strength to be able to accomplish the return to Him. But he will not appeal to God in vain, for He knows of his will, of his sincerity and also of his weakness, He knows that it will not be possible for him alone, that he will need help.... But it is assured to him. He

had lost his strength the moment his will had turned away from God, and he will receive it again when it turns back to Him.

And therefore, an external formality alone cannot suffice, words alone cannot guarantee a truly God-devoted will and belonging to a religious denomination cannot demonstrate this change of will, rather, it has to be proven by action, and this consists of unselfish loving activity without coercion and without law. God certainly gave people the commandments of love, nevertheless, love has to be practiced voluntarily, for even what is done as fulfillment of a commandment can be accomplished without the innermost will, which then will lessen its value. Therefore, the attainment of beatitude, the return to God, has to be every person's very own affair, which he cannot pass on to other people and which no-one else will be able to accomplish on his behalf either. And even the deed itself is not decisive, only the innermost will is important, which truly is obvious to God but which is also supported in every way. And whatever will then happen to you humans in life is only due to the influence of God or the world of light, which make sure that your will shall aim into the right direction, that it shall voluntarily submit itself to God and that it shall regard its return to God as its only goal.

However, once this act has been accomplished, once the human being's innermost thoughts are turned towards God and he makes an effort to live on earth according to God's will, then his earthly life will not have been lived in vain, and it will, with certainty, also result in freedom for the human being's soul. It will be able to detach itself from its tormentor, it will be able to strip itself of the shackles which kept it imprisoned for an infinitely long time, it is now on its path of ascent and no longer needs to fear God's adversary, who has no further power over the soul because God Himself will seize it, and will safely guide it upwards, for the human being's will has turned towards Him, from Whom he once had emerged as a created original spirit."

The Path of Return to God

BD No. 7257 of 01/16/1959 taken from book 77

Jesus is speaking: "I will always come to meet you when you take the path to Me. Believe Me that your distance from Me is giving Me little happiness, although you humans should not imagine a concept of sorrow on My part either, but I long for your love, and as long as you remain separate from Me I feel the absence of this love. Hence it will also be comprehensible to you that I watch your every step, that I see when you turn them into My direction and that I will then also come to meet you in order to shorten your path of return, so that you arrive at your goal faster. Even so, I will have to stop in My track if you come to a standstill yourselves, if you change your mind again or look back to the region you want to leave. I don't want to determine you free will by any means, I can certainly lure you, which in fact I do, but I cannot compel you, for your return to Me must be and has to remain a completely free act of will. Yet you ought to know and believe that no thought of yours which applies to Me will fade away or fail to reach its goal. And every such thought will be assessed by Me as free will and appropriately rewarded by constantly staying near to you and doing everything in order to attract your attention time and again. You don't know how infinitely profound My

love is for you, My living creations, you don't know that this love will only ever yearn for you and that I therefore will not write off any one of My living creations, even if it still keeps its distance from Me of its own free will. Even then My love will still take care of it and try to approach it, but how much more so with a child who is and wants to remain My Own, which just keeps looking sideways because it gets excited and attracted from all directions. But I know how it thinks in its heart, I know that its love is intended for Me and that it is just too weak to resist all kinds of enticements. For, time and again, it will assuredly find its way back to Me, it will remain on the path to Me and will not divert from it either, since the longing of its heart applies to Me alone.

The path to Me leads steeply upwards, it is arduous, it just won't do that I should make it easy, that I should combine it with enticement, because this path should be taken for pure love of Me and not for the sake of other advantages, which is only ever a hostile intention to attract people into taking other paths which will lead far away from Me. This is why you will quite often get tired during your excursion to the top and yet longingly look back to the world you want to leave. And I allow this to happen but only for your own sakes, for every voluntarily accomplished ascent will have the most glorious results. I will come ever closer to him and he to Me, and in My presence the human being will then experience the bliss which will compensate him for everything he had relinquished for My sake. And this presence should be the goal which you should pursue with absolute determination; you should not rest until you have reached Me, who will assuredly shorten your path by coming to meet you. Thus, you will not be separated from Me for much longer, as long as you only desire My presence and steadfastly continue on the path you have taken, even if you occasionally find it difficult because you can't see any obvious progress and believe not to have climbed up even one step. If you were able to look back into the abyss you would also be able to assess the significant distances you had covered so far, and you would happily cover the last short stretch of the path which still separates you from Me. But you can rest assured that I will prevent you from falling back into the abyss. I will invisibly hold on to you and continually pull you upwards, after all, My heart rejoices in the fact that a child is returning into the Father's house, and I will truly help on this last short path to reach it and walk beside him imperceptibly until he sees Me at the goal and My arms are able to embrace the child which has returned home to the Father, from Whom he once had originated."

Duration of Returning to God

BD No. 7529 of 02/23/1960 taken from book 79

Jesus is speaking: "And even if the work of return continues for eternities.... one day I will achieve My goal that everything I once had created and which had fallen away from Me will return to Me of its own free will and thereby 'living creations' will have become 'children', as has been My plan since eternity. The duration of the process of return depends entirely on the spiritual being which, during its last test of earthly life as a human being, has to prove its will. And since free will so often fails because it cannot pass the final test, one period of Salvation is not enough, and time and again new developmental eras are required. And

therefore, one can speak of eternities until this process has been accomplished one day.

Yet the processes of development are times of adversity and torment. And for this reason alone, I aim to shorten them for you, and My constant concern is to influence you such that you will preferably reach your goal during one such developmental process, during one period of Salvation, that you will improve your nature and sincerely look for unification with Me, because then you will also be close to your perfection and close to the goal. To Me a thousand years are like a day. I personally don't mind how long you take to return to Me, yet you are the ones who will suffer if you excessively prolong your time of return and thus also have to endure immeasurable agonies and adversities. And since I love you, I take pity on you, and only for this reason do I try to win you over sooner, for only I know how much time lies behind you and subsequently also ahead of you, if you fail in this earthly life. I know your process of development and would like nothing better than for it to be finished when you leave your last form as a human being on this earth. I don't want you to suffer even longer; I would like to make you all blissfully happy in My kingdom. But I will only be able to do so if you have shaped yourselves in such a way that you are close to your original state. If this transformation has not taken place during your earthly life I cannot spare you a repeated process through the creations, and then it will take eternities again until you have to make your decision of will as a human being on this earth. For only free will can take you close to the goal, even if My love for you is infinite, I nevertheless cannot ignore your will and provide you with a fate which you do not deserve as a result of your will, which is still against Me and therefore you cannot be called perfect either. And fate corresponds to maturity, or, only the will determines the fate of the soul, the once fallen original spirit, who shall return to his source by himself, to Me, who is God and Creator of all of you, but also your Father. One day I will reach My goal, one day you will return to Me again.

But how much time it will take is determined by you yourselves in the stage of a human being. Hence you are burdened by a tremendous responsibility during the time of your earthly life, and you should always remember this and do what I ask of you through My Word. For in My Word I Myself come near to you in your earthly life and inform you of My will. If you comply with it, you will also be close to your perfection, and you will still reach your given goal before your earthly life comes to an end. And then the dreadful torments and adversities will be over for you, and you will enter into My kingdom, which is a kingdom of light and bliss and which you will recognize as your true home. And I only would like to call on all humans: Take care that you reach your goal during this earthly life, use your will correctly, and then you will live in accordance with My will, then you will also change your nature and become what you were in the beginning once again, beings, which are allowed to take pleasure in light, strength and freedom close to the Father's heart, beings, which are infinitely happy.”

Overcoming Matter - Spiritual Kingdom

BD No. 5796 of 10/26/1953 taken from book 63

God the Father is speaking: "As long as your thoughts and wishes merely apply to the world and its commodities you will hardly inherit My kingdom, for My kingdom is not of this world. My kingdom can only be attained by relinquishing everything you humans still find desirable. My kingdom necessitates the overcoming of matter, you will only be able to liberate yourselves from the form and enter My kingdom if you detach yourselves from everything that belongs to My adversary. This material world is his realm, albeit he has no influence over matter as such.

But greater is his influence over people, who shelter the spiritual essence as soul within themselves, which has now reached the stage of development where it can escape his dominion, where it can release itself from every external form with its correct use of will. Then he will exert his influence to excess by attaching a person to matter in order to direct their will wrongly so that he will strive again for something he had long overcome already. The material world is your greatest test of will, for you should renounce it, you should voluntarily do without everything you consider desirable in the course of your earthly life, you should strive for the spiritual kingdom, thus you should choose and decide in favor of either My kingdom or the kingdom of My adversary.

He will tempt you with his commodities, but consider that these goods are transient, that they by themselves can perish or that they will have to be relinquished by you at the hour of your death. You cannot hold on to them forever, sooner or later you will irrevocably lose them. Think of this and therefore start early by producing, working and acquiring possessions which cannot be taken away from you, everlasting possessions whose value will only be truly recognized in eternity, after the death of the body, which then will be the soul's wealth and make it infinitely happy.

Your longing for matter makes you blind for spiritual possessions, you are unable to recognize them for what they are because your thoughts are only focused on earthly things leaving you insensitive to spiritual currents, for My kingdom is not of this world, but My kingdom will come to everyone who desires it. Therefore, detach yourselves from what prevents your entry into My kingdom. Free yourselves from the longing for earthly possessions go without and abstain for as long as you live on earth in order to then receive in abundance My possessions of love in the spiritual kingdom."

[Note: Jesus is speaking: "When you look back only about one hundred years, you see how you did not have cars or most of your electronic gadgets, and not even air-conditioners as in the vision. This increase of knowledge and all of man's inventions is another sign to you that you are living in the end days. You have televisions that could provide the image of the beast, and you have chips in the body for buying and selling. Many of these technologies have come from the dark side to hasten the day of the Antichrist's declaration. Now that control over people's minds is possible, and the one-world people are ready to give this electronic control over to the Antichrist, it is time for the tribulation to come about. Evil will be allowed a short reign to test humanity, but I will bring about My

Warning to prepare souls for the coming trial. Take advantage of this time for preparation and be ready both physically and spiritually for this test of My faithful elect."] John Leary 9/5/2011 message

Union with God - The Human Being's Goal

BD No. 4871 of 03/31/1950 taken from book 55

Jesus is speaking: "Your goal shall be the union with Me. Do you know what it means to be as one with your Father of eternity? Being able to create and shape like Him in strength and wisdom and being able to constantly work for the still imperfect spirits, and to be eternally happy?

Your past life will appear like a bad dream to you which, however, will no longer frighten you but only let you realize the Creator's love for His living creations, which guided you through infinitely many stages of maturing. And in the realization of what you are now in the kingdom of light, you will look up to Me full of gratitude and love, who is close to you now and bestows upon you beatitudes without measure.

To be united with Me means to be perfect, just like you were in the beginning before you became sinful. To attain this perfection is the highest goal of the human being on earth, because it is a prerequisite for a blissful life in the light. And the only means to achieve it is love, which consumes everything imperfect and shapes a light-receptive and divine soul which will be able to accept My emanation and, once it is touched by it, will feel indescribable bliss. The transfer of My love onto the being is the epitome of blissfulness and thus a prerogative of the perfect being which is no longer separated from Me but has fully united with Me.

The transfer of strength, however, includes everything else.... realization of truth, light and strength, so that the being will therefore move within wisdom and use the inflowing strength correctly, that it thus, in accordance with God's will, will be able to create and give life to what it has created. Hence the being comes into all rights of childship, it knows no boundary, it knows everything, and its strength enables it to work in accordance with My will, which now is its own will, so that every activity will delight the being because it works for Me and finds rich reward in My love. The being yearns for My love, and I constantly fulfill its yearning, and its happiness knows no bounds.

The union with Me can only be achieved through love, since love is the most effective fire which melts all hardness, purifies everything impure and clarifies all ambiguity.... love is the agent which releases and bonds at the same time.... It releases the pressure of oppression, the shackle of sin, and it forms the bond between the living creation and Me, which remains insoluble for all eternity.... And once a person has formed the bond with Me he will remain connected to Me, for as soon as My strength of love has flowed through him he inevitably becomes My possession which I will never abandon to My adversary. Anyone who succeeds in detaching himself from My adversary has already become My Own and proved himself as My child and is now always able to be constantly in the vicinity of the Father, who will never banish it from His presence again."

Love is the Key to the Spiritual Kingdom

BD No. 5314 of 02/10/1952 taken from book 59

Jesus is speaking: "You will only be able to comprehend Me through love. There is no other way you can win Me, no other way to recognize Me but through love. And thus, you have the key which will open the door to My heart for you, the gate into the spiritual kingdom, to your Father's house. Without this key all access will remain blocked, everything My love, wisdom and omnipotence has created in the spiritual kingdom will remain hidden from you, without this key all knowledge of truth will remain concealed, you will lack all divine wisdom because without love you will be engulfed by darkness, since only love will give you light, thus leading you into realization. You would be incredibly mighty if you would heed My Words and live a life of love; for love is also strength and nothing would be impossible for you if you would change your nature into love. Hence, with these Words I Am giving you the promise of an abundance of light and strength, of blissfulness, through the inflow of My Fatherly love, if you just unite yourselves with Me through deeds of love, if you just reciprocate My love for you. Yet you don't believe My Words or you would all endeavor to live a life of love.

Why don't you put it to the test? Let go off all selfish love, look around yourselves and wherever you see hardship try to bring help, wherever you find people suffering physical or psychological ailments try to heal them, give to them earthly and spiritually whatever they need, give them food and drink, and let go of your possessions if you thereby can ease the hardship of people in need. Try it and you will experience the truth of My Word, you will grow in strength and light, you will rise above your own earthly suffering, nothing will affect you which previously appeared to weigh you down, you will feel the strength of love in yourselves and the happiness of your union with Me, which you establish with every deed of love, will compensate you a thousand fold for what you have given away. You will recognize Me and feel My hand holding you, you will feel the flow of My love's strength pour into you and being spiritually brightly enlightened, you will be able to hear and behold what otherwise is hidden to you humans.

Take the test and believe My Word, practice love, and you will win Me and never ever lose Me again. Believe Me, for I truly won't instruct you wrongly, I want you to become blessed, and since only love is able to turn you into happy beings, I constantly just urge you to love.

Yet then you will have to combat the spirit within you which is lacking all love and to which you owe your earthly existence. He impels you to selfish love, he wants to extinguish the divine spark within you, he wants to prevent you from living a life of love. Hence you will have to fight it, that is, you have to fight your own cravings which only increase your selfish love and weaken the true love towards Me and your neighbor, so that you will be unable to experience the strength of love yourselves. Fight against it and follow Me, accept these Words in your heart and act accordingly, and your fate will be the complete union with Me and infinite bliss."

Jesus Christ, Leads us on the Right Path

BD No. 5733 of 07/28/1953 taken from book 62

Jesus is speaking: "The right path will truly be pointed out to you if only you are willing to take it. In that case you just have to let yourselves be guided by Me and you will be urged onto the right path, because I Am only waiting for you to take stock of yourselves, so that you want to achieve what is your real task on earth and live a right and righteous life on earth. Then I will take over your guidance Myself, for your present will entitles Me to do so. As the man Jesus I walked this path as an example for you, as the man Jesus, I showed you the goal which you, too, ought to pursue; as the man Jesus I demonstrated to you what a human being can achieve if he takes this path.

And therefore, I keep making His earthly progress clear to you, I draw your attention to Him, Whom I sent to earth to help you take the same path, because this is the only path which will lead to Me, to your God and Father of eternity. He had achieved the goal on earth, He ascended to heaven as a perfected being, as the cover of Myself, and I enabled My disciples on earth to witness this process so that they would have a testimony of what a human being can achieve on earth, so that they were able to behold Me Myself in Jesus Christ, Who had entered into eternal unity with His heavenly Father and thus was united with Me for all eternity. And I want all of you to unite with Me, I want all of you to return to Me as My children, that all of you take the only path which leads into the Father's house from whence you once originated. You, however, wander around and don't know this path, you cannot find it because you are not looking for it, you live on earth oblivious of your purpose, you walk on a broad road which will never lead to the goal because it is not the path which Jesus had taken. And therefore, I have to keep sending you messengers to show you the right way, who want to guide you onto the right path.

I have to make the Word of Jesus Christ accessible to you humans, which He taught on My instruction on earth, the Word which I spoke through Him to people who listened because they believed in Me, who spoke through Him. This Word of His will direct you to the right path again, and you have to listen to this Word because it gives evidence of Me, who is the path Himself, the truth and the life. And if you listen to this Word the path to the goal will be shown to you.... and no-one will be able to say that he had been without guidance on earth if he just entrusts himself to Me, if he wants to reach Me and has the will, not to stand still, but to attain the goal which was given to him for his earthly life. References are made to you time and again because I will not abandon any human being to his fate but am concerned that they all shall find the right path, however, I cannot to take care of someone who lives without a sense of responsibility, for in order to be able to lead him he has to entrust himself to Me of his own free will. Where this will is missing, I will keep Myself back.

Yet it will always be made easy for him to enter the right path, no compulsion will ever be exercised. I always demand his free will in order to be able to take his hand and lead him to ascent, for I can certainly advise and help you, yet I will never compel you."

Jesus, the good Shepherd

BD No. 7455 of 11/15/1959 taken from book 78

Jesus is speaking: “I will send people your way to whom you shall proclaim the Gospel, yet there will only ever be few who will listen to you and take your words to heart. It is just a small flock which will follow Me, their shepherd, and I will keep this small flock together and won't allow My sheep's pen to be broken into and My sheep stolen, for I Am a good shepherd, Who will sacrifice His life for His sheep. All of you who listen to My call as soon as it is voiced belong to My flock.

And My call is always My Word by which I Myself speak to you from above. My call is the coaxing call of a good shepherd Who does not want to lose even one small sheep from His flock, and Who speaks Words of love to you in order to hold on to you, in order to warn and admonish you so that you do not get entangled in the snares of the one who wants to steal you from Me. I will indeed let you have free will, and if you roam over wide pastures, you will be able to go wherever you want but a good shepherd will follow his flock and look for those who have gone astray, who have left the right path and got stuck in ravines or on heights. A good shepherd will coax and call to let them find their way back to him, so that they will take refuge by pushing close to him and return home with him, where peace and tranquility will await them at the end of the day and after the long walks through the pastures.

The characteristic of a good shepherd rests in the fact that he will not leave his sheep to their fate when the night sets in. For so many a small sheep will go astray, it will digress from the right path and get stuck on the heights, it will venture into unfamiliar fields where it can be caught and killed, it will leave the path and lose its flock and the shepherd. And then a good shepherd will follow and call until he has found it. And joyfully he will bend down lifting the small sheep onto his arms in order to carry it back to the flock and drive them towards the home enclosure. And thus I, too, will follow all people who had left Me as their good shepherd, who are taking their own paths, who have gone astray in the world and intend to go up in the world. They are all small sheep who have gone astray, who are particularly close to My heart and whom I dearly want to win back for Myself again, whom I would like to count as My Own and whom I therefore continue to coax and call with My Word, so that they will comply with it and lovingly approach Me again, from Whom they had distanced themselves. And therefore, My Word will sound from above time and again, and whoever receives it shall pass it on in the world, for people urgently require My Word, My loving appeal which is intended to call them back home.

And I truly know who will need My Word, and these are the ones I will send to you so that you will be able to carry out your vineyard work on them, so that you will be able to do labors of love for Me as the good shepherd and also be able to return the little sheep to Me again, which had left the flock and yet shall come

back to Me once more because they will not be able to become blessed without Me.

There will not be many more who will be impressed by My Word, rather, most people will refuse to listen to you, for My flock has scattered and has been driven away by the enemy who unlawfully takes those who refuse to surrender of their own free will. And yet the good shepherd's coaxing call shall sound time and again, for as soon as they voluntarily turn to Me once more, I will also be able to fetch them back and lead them to their home enclosure.

Therefore you, too, shall coax and call when you spread My Gospel throughout the world. Tell people about the good shepherd Who is continually searching for His sheep and wants to place them under His faithful protection. Tell people that a God of love exists Who is only waiting for them to come to Him in every adversity, Who, like a good shepherd, wants to lift every small sheep onto His arms, Who is offering refuge and protection to it in His presence, so that all human beings will be safe and secure with Him."

Chapter 4: The Souls Fate in the Beyond

About life and death and in the beyond, Different spheres in the Spiritual Kingdom, A Death Experience, The Appearance of a Spirit, Experiences in the Beyond, The Soul's Fate in the Beyond, Helplessness in the Beyond, The Souls' Great Hardship in the Beyond, The Soul's State of Darkness in the Beyond, God's Justice Demands Atonement, Fate in Eternity Corresponds to Will, Fate in the Beyond, Needy Souls Beg for Prayers, Remorse in the Beyond – Ascent, Transference of Light in the Beyond, The Soul's Fate after Death Varies, . . .

About Life after Death and in the Beyond

Ref: Biblical Accounts by Jakob Lorber

Jesus is speaking: “Sooner or later we all have to die, that is our bodies have to die. In fact, dying is necessary to come home from where we came before we rebelled with Lucifer against God.

So, our bodies disintegrate with our brains until nothing remains. Those who negate God say that with the death of the body everything is finished, while the believers hope to resurrect on "judgment day".

But there are big doubts about what judgment day is and what resurrects and lives on in the beyond. The New Revelation of Jesus Christ finally tells us precisely that there is an immediate continuation of the life of our soul and its indwelling spirit. The resurrection of the flesh (and not of the dead!) means the gradual transfiguration and transformation of our shed body into an energetic garment of our soul. First of all, Jesus teaches us that there is no general judgment day but a specific one for every human being, the day of our death.

As everybody on earth experiences an "oldest day", his last day, the day of his death, everyone experiences - whether his days were good or evil - a youngest day (Judgment Day) in the beyond as well. So, when the soul of a human being leaves the body, it finds itself immediately in the beyond. Most of the time the soul (he/she) will be welcomed by late family members, who will lead it on the way to bliss - if it agrees to be led - because every soul has its full freedom of action, whether with or without a physical body. Nobody forces anything on it or pushes it into heaven. The fact of individual freedom also answers the question of reincarnation on earth. Should the soul in the beyond have the earnest wish to live a life on earth again, it may. However, this wish is very, very rare and is not a rule at all. The reason is that the soul feels such a great freedom in the beyond that it does not want to be locked into a body. Imagine having to live in a diving suit all of your life and being able to finally get rid of it.

There was a good reason Jesus told us in the New Testament to become perfect. What we can achieve in this life with the grace of Jesus in a short time can only be achieved with much difficulty and over a very, very long time in the beyond. And there are targets which cannot be achieved.”

Different Spheres in the Spiritual Kingdom

BD No. 3316 of 11/03/1944 taken from book 43

God the Father is speaking: “Immediately after physical death the soul leaves the body and moves into the spiritual kingdom which, depending on its maturity, can be close to or far away from earth. This should not be understood in a three-dimensional sense, the distance is the result of the difference between the spheres which indeed belong to the spiritual kingdom because they are away from and outside of the earthly-material world and the immature soul has to travel a long path in time before it arrives in the spheres of light. By comparison, a mature soul arrives in these spheres as fast as lightening after its physical death since it requires neither time nor space to overcome the distance from earth into the light spheres. It only needs the strength which its state of maturity has acquired.

However, imperfect souls cannot separate themselves as swiftly from earth, partly because they are too weak to elevate themselves and partly because their

senses are still attached to earthly matters. They do not want to leave earth and thus remain close to earth for a long time, mostly within the surroundings they used to occupy during their lifetime. Subsequently they cannot always feel their change from the earthly into the spiritual kingdom either. Their surrounding still appears earthly to them and the souls are frequently unaware that they are no longer physically alive. Nevertheless, they find it strange that they cannot establish a connection with the people on earth any longer that they cannot make themselves heard and are ignored by people. This condition gradually makes them aware of their situation; they come to understand that they no longer live on earth but that they are beyond earth in the spiritual kingdom. But as long as the soul is still earthly minded it cannot remove itself from this surrounding; it is still grounded and experiences this as a painful condition because everything it desires or believes to possess is unattainable.

And now it slowly has to overcome its desire for earthly possessions; only when it has succeeded in doing so will it gradually move away from earth, the spheres will take on a different appearance, and depending on the soul's maturity it will no longer see earthly but only spiritual creations, i.e. the spiritual vision of the soul will be able to see spiritual creations which the immature being cannot see even though they are present. But when a mature soul departs from earth it can instantly distinguish its surrounding in the spiritual realm since its maturity has acquired the ability of spiritual vision. Such a soul will also recognize the souls it meets in the beyond whilst immature souls are unable to do so, i.e. they only recognize souls who walk in darkness like themselves, who are in the same imperfect state. However, beings of light are invisible to them, and even when these disguise their light and come close to them they cannot perceive them. Spiritual vision only develops during a certain state of maturity but then the souls are also surrounded by light, while those who are unable to see due to their undeveloped spiritual vision are surrounded by spiritual darkness.

However, the earthly items they desire are visible to them; nevertheless, they are mere illusions which do not really exist but which appear due to the soul's longing, only to disappear again like a mirage as soon as the soul wants to touch or use them, because their fleeting nature should make the soul understand that it ought to strive for higher values than temporary earthly possessions. Consequently, no beings of light will come close to the soul as long as it still desires such belongings, since earthly minded souls will not listen to the beings of light when they arrive in disguise to bring the Gospel. In this situation they can only be helped by the prayer of another human being, only then will they turn away from matter and look for an alternative in the spiritual realm. Then beings who are willing to help will meet them, instruct them and direct them to the path of ascent. And the more willingly they accept the light beings' instructions the sooner they will acquire spiritual vision and are thus delivered from darkness, they have entered the spheres where they may receive and give light. They have travelled the path which can take a short but also a very long time, depending on the soul's determination for material possessions which keep it attached to earth until they lose their appeal, and are then introduced to the pure truth by the beings of light in order to work for the kingdom of God in the beyond by sharing the knowledge with needy souls who are still living in spiritual darkness."

A Death Experience

Ref: [GGJ.04.128.03] Jakob Lorber

Mathael is speaking: "When I [Mathael], a disciple of Jesus] was about seven or perhaps already eight years old, five people suddenly died of an epidemic like a plague. They were a neighbor's wife, two of her elder daughters and two otherwise completely healthy young girls.

It was however strange that this unusual epidemic only killed otherwise very healthy adult women and young girls. When in the neighbor's house the wife became ill, the two daughters and the two young girls having died on the previous day, the neighbor came to us full of despair and sorrow and implored us to help him, if at all possible, to save his wife's life. My father, who owned a very fine property near Jerusalem and lived there most of the time, also acted as a doctor during emergencies and it was therefore for him a call of duty to respond to his unfortunate neighbor's request. I was not allowed to stay at home as you will readily infer from the fact, that I often recommended quite good remedies to my father as the voices of my spirits often entrusted them to me.

My father was very confident that I would be joined by my spirits in the neighbor's house, who would suggest a cure for the critically ill wife and so I was nolens volens (if I wanted to or not) taken along. My father was not mistaken as I actually saw a number of spirits - certainly a mixture of good and bad. This time however there was no recommendation of a healing remedy and a great spirit wearing light grey pleated clothing, said to me, when I passed on the request from my father for a cure: 'Look at this woman who has passed away! Her soul is already hovering above her chest cavity, which is the usual way the soul exits the body!'

I now looked more closely at the dying person. From the pit of the chest a white vapor arose, continued to expand above the chest and also became increasingly more intense; but I could not detect any human form. When I looked at it quizzically, the large, light grey spirit said to me: 'Just observe how the soul is departing from its earthly dwelling forever!' I said, however: 'Why is it that this departing soul has no shape while all of you who are also souls have very proper human images?' The spirit said: 'Just wait a moment; when the soul has left the body completely it will gather itself together properly and will then become quite beautiful and agreeable to look upon!'

As I watched the vapor continue to spread and thicken above the patient's chest cavity, the body was still alive and groaned now and then, just like someone who is troubled by a bad dream. After about a quarter of a Roman hour, the vapor cloud, about the size of a twelve-year-old girl, hovered about two hand-spans above the body of the dying woman, only connected to the chest by a finger-thick column of vapor. The column was of a reddish color and now and then it would suddenly become longer and then shorten itself again. However, after each of these lengthening and shortening cycles, the vapor column became thinner, and the body twisted by visibly painful convulsions.

After about two hours in Roman time, the column of vapor freed itself completely from the chest cavity and at the lower end it looked like a plant with a fibrous root. At the moment the vapor column became completely separate from the chest and I observed two phenomena. Firstly, the end of the body's death

throes and secondly, the instant transmutation of the very white vapor cloud into the easily recognizable image of the neighbor's wife. She was immediately shrouded in a white, pleated shift, greeted all the friendly spirits who were present, but also clearly asked where she now was and what had happened to her. She was also quite astonished to see the pleasant surroundings which she was now enjoying.

As I could see nothing of these surroundings. I asked my large light-grey spirit where they were to be seen. The spirit replied: 'You cannot see them from your own body because they are merely a figment of the life-time imagination of the person who has passed away and will only gradually assume a greater and more permanent reality!' I was discouraged by these words and the spirit then started to speak in a tongue completely foreign to me. He must however have made a pleasant comment to the unfettered soul because there was a happy look on her face.

It seemed odd to me, that this free soul was apparently unconcerned about the fate of her earlier body and began immediately to converse quite fluently with the spirits - but everything was in a very foreign tongue. After a while the two daughters as well as the two handmaidens who had died were led to her, greeting their former mother/mistress in a most friendly way but not in a manner which indicated that the ones were her two daughters and the others her former maidservants, rather giving the impression of a meeting of genuine, good friends and sisters. All of this took place in a foreign tongue completely incomprehensible to me. However, no one appeared to be at all concerned about their former bodies, which were certainly being honorably cared for, and it also seemed that they could not see any of us who remained behind as mortals.

Although it was strange that the soul of the dying woman, immediately after its exit from her body, could still express its amazement about the beautiful surroundings in the Hebrew language but afterwards when she had, so to speak, collected her thoughts and concentrated her mind once more, she made use of a language which, according to my poor knowledge, is not spoken in the whole world by any of its mortal inhabitants.

I therefore turned again to my light grey spirit and asked him: 'What are the five new arrivals in your kingdom discussing and what tongue are they using?'

The light grey one responded: 'What an inquisitive boy you are! They are talking in this specific language of the spirit world because you are present, and they do not wish you to eavesdrop. They are aware, and rightly so, that you are here as someone who can see and converse with the spiritual side of his body just like a Burmese from the mountains of India. They also know and sense that their bodies are still here, but they are as unconcerned as you would be about having discarded some old very ragged clothing. You could now show them all the kingdoms on this earth and offer them the prospect of completely healthy lives for a thousand years, but they would still never return to their bodies! However, the conversation they are having would not be understandable to you even if it was in your own tongue because they can now see at this very moment that the great promised Savior is already present in this physical world, even if only as a tender child. When you are a man, you will recognize Him in Galilee.'

This was all the information which the light grey spirit quite courteously and generously imparted to me. That was certainly a very thought-provoking occasion which impressed me, a boy at that time, just as deeply and vividly as I see you all now to be. That the light grey spirit did not tell me a single untruth is proved by the fact that I have now truly found You, My Lord, here and now in Galilee, just as that spirit told me I would.

I would just like to have a little explanation of the reason why the soul, at the moment when it takes flight, emerges as a vapor from the chest cavity and why it does not appear as a fully developed human form. - Lord, with Your loving grace and supreme mastery of all aspects of life, could You give us an explanation?"

Do not Forfeit your Eternal Life

BD No. 7096 of 04/18/1958 taken from book 75

God the Father is speaking: "Do not forfeit your eternal life. Admittedly, one day it will be granted to all of you, but eternities of infinite agony and darkness may still go by when you are in a state of death and entirely without strength and light. And you can prolong this agonizing time indefinitely so that you can indeed speak of 'eternal damnation,' but which I have not given to you, instead you volitionally cause and continue to cause it yourselves if you fail to use your human existence to achieve eternal life for yourselves.

I will not let you be lost forever, because you are My living creations whom I loved from the start and will never cease to love either, but I cannot give life to you prematurely if you yourselves prefer the state of death, if you are unwilling to accept life from Me. However, you can easily acquire it by merely entrusting yourselves to Me, who is eternal life Himself.

And for this purpose, earthly life is given you, where you are in possession of intellect and free will, where you can accept instructions concerning your task on earth and thus you need only want to emerge from the state of death. And this time on earth is very short, no great sacrifices are expected of you considering what you shall receive if you use your will correctly. The lifespan of a human being is very brief indeed, but it suffices to let you reach the goal.

Yet your preliminary development took an infinitely long time until you were able to enter the stage of a human being. And it will take an equally infinitely long time until you will receive the grace again to repeat your test of volition. The length of these infinite times is beyond your human comprehension since your thinking is limited in your imperfect state. And just as you do not know of this agony, because retrospection of your preliminary development is taken from you during your earthly life, you do not know of the indescribable bliss either which is integral to the concept of 'eternal life.' You do not know of the splendors awaiting you in My kingdom when you decide to finally return to Me. And neither one nor the other information can be proven to you, since then it would be impossible to make a free decision of will.

But you should believe it even without proof and live your earthly life accordingly, you should not forfeit the bliss of a 'life' in My kingdom, you all should include this possibility in your intellectual consideration even if it seems implausible to you, and you should live such that you need not reproach

yourselves when the hour of your departure from this earth has arrived one day. You should also listen to those who talk about such things which are unrelated to the physical world. And you should reflect on it and imagine how you would fare if they were right.

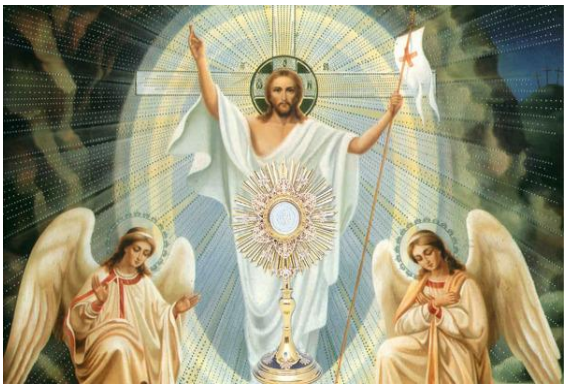
There is too much at stake for you humans, it is not just a question of a few years like your lifetime on earth, it concerns eternal life, it concerns the never-ending state of supreme blissfulness, a state in light and strength that was yours in the beginning. And for this eternity in light and strength you only need to renounce utterly worthless things for a very short time, for a 'moment' of this eternity. But you value these things exceptionally high, and hence will forfeit 'life' and continue to remain in a state of death for an endless time again.

And all I can do to help you attain life is to constantly send My messengers to you humans, who warn and remind you on My behalf, who should inspire you to try to arrive at the truth, who point out to you that I, as the only Truth, enlighten your thoughts, who advise you to establish the connection with Me Myself, so that I can then seize and draw you to Myself. But you have to take the first step, since I will not force you for the sake of your beatitude. But I will support and strengthen even the weakest will which turns to Me. I caused the entire creation to come into being in order to give you life.

I do not want your death, I want you to live and finally escape your state of death, which has already lasted for an infinite time. I want to impart My love on you again and offer you a wonderful fate which will never end again. But I cannot stop you from taking the path into the abyss once more if you volitionally follow My adversary again who once had taken your life and delivered you unto death. I can only ever call to you again ***'Do not forfeit your eternal life.'*** But you have to follow My call voluntarily, *you have to endeavor to achieve life while you live on earth*, and I truly will help you achieve it because I love you." (Life is in the Holy Eucharist – the Word of God)

God Offers Himself to You in the Eucharist – My Word

BD No. 7909 of 06/03/1961 taken from book 82



God the Father is speaking: "How often has the significance of Holy Communion been explained to you already, how often has the offering of My flesh and My blood been described to you as **the offering of My Word**. How often have I told you that I Myself Am the Word of eternity, that I offer Myself to you, that you eat My flesh and drink My blood when you accept My Word in your heart. Your soul needs nourishment which will help to heal and strengthen it, since prior to that it is sick and weak. It must be fed with the bread of heaven and be given the water of life. It needs healthy nourishment which only I Myself can administer, for it must be spiritually fed, it must accept food from the spiritual kingdom. And this is why you must partake of the Supper at My table with your host, Who invites all of you to come to

Him and let yourselves be fed by Him. Your soul shall receive bread and wine, My flesh and My blood is the proper nourishment, and thus it accepts Me Myself when it accepts My Word which I Myself convey to the soul from above. For regardless of whether I speak to it directly or whether it accepts My Word through My servants. I always break the bread Myself, I always give the water of life Myself, and then it will always partake of My Supper at My table, which is richly laden so that no soul wanting to be My guest will lack nourishment. Yet by this I do not mean an outward practice, I Am not satisfied with the fact that you perform external rituals and acts in the belief that I Myself will then be within you, that you unite yourselves with Me when you take part in the ceremonies which you understand as the Lord's Supper, as Holy Communion. They will only ever remain mere external acts and rituals if you do not wholeheartedly desire to hear My Word, to be addressed by Me, if your soul does not hunger and thirst for the bread of heaven and the water of life: for My Word.

For I Myself Am My Word, and only when you are seized by great longing for My Word can you say that you intimately unite yourselves with Me and take Supper with Me, for only then will I be able to offer you bread and wine. My flesh and My blood. Only then will you have come to My table in order to take Supper with Me, then you will receive Me Myself, as I have promised. I Am the Word. And the Word has become flesh. And thus you should understand My Words correctly which I spoke on earth 'Whoso eateth My flesh, and drinketh My blood, hath eternal life.' Only the person who hears My Word and allows the strength of My Word to affect him can attain eternal life, for his soul will heal, it will mature fully, through My Word it will know My will, and My Word will provide it with the strength to live in accordance with My will, hence it will not just hear My Word but also live it and gain the true life, which it will never be able to lose again. And because I know how urgently you humans need nourishment for your soul, I send My messengers into the world and invite everyone to come as guests to My table and take Communion with Me. And no-one will need to leave My table hungry, for it is richly laden for all those who come to Me with the desire to receive food and drink from Me. I have wholesome food and a health-giving drink waiting for all of you, but you must come to Me yourselves, hunger and thirst must drive you to Me, then your soul will receive refreshment; time and again it will fortify itself anew for its pilgrimage on this earth, it will not exhaustedly fall by the wayside, for time and again it will be offered nourishment as soon as it desires it, as soon as it closely unites with Me and requests to be fed by Me. I Myself will come to you, I will knock at the door of your heart and with anyone who willingly lets Me in I will indeed take Holy Communion and he with Me. However, do not believe that you can find Me where only outward formalities are being observed, where you close your ears to My Word which comes to you from above, for anyone who does not listen to My Word does not listen to Me Myself either; anyone who rejects My Word rejects Me Myself and his soul will remain without nourishment. It will have to starve and enter the spiritual kingdom in an immature and poor state when the hour of death arrives."

Death in the Mystical Body

MV NB1943:354

Jesus is speaking: "Know, know, O all of you that weep over the pain of a recent loss, that the one you weep for is not dead, but lives in Me. Know that the very same Bread which fed your soul while you were together on earth maintains life and communion between your spirits living here below and the trans humanized living in Me.

The little death can do no harm to the immortal spirits. The great death is the one to be feared, the one that really takes a relative of yours, a spouse, or a friend away from you eternally. The great death – that is, the damnation of the soul – which really separates from Me cells of My Mystical Body that have fallen prey to the gangrenes of Satan.

But for those who have died in my Name and have nourished in themselves the life of the spirit with the Eucharistic Food (My Word), which does not perish, and which is always preservation from eternal death, no, for them there is nothing to weep over; but reason to rejoice, for they have emerged from the danger of death to enter into Life.

Consider, all of you consider that it is quite hard for someone who has fed on Me to be a brother of Judas, like the one for whom my Bread was not Life, but Death.

According to their capacity for spiritual assimilation, my Bread – that is Myself (the Word became flesh and dwelt among us) made into food to give men the strength to conquer Heaven and the currency to enter it – will give them a more or less prompt entry into the Kingdom of glory, but *in ninety-nine percent of cases it always gives the salvation of the soul.*

Do not weep, then, parents left without children, spouses left without your consorts, orphans left without parents. Do not weep. As to the mother in the Gospel, I, who never lie, say to you, 'Do not weep.'

Believe in Me; I will give you back the being that you love, and I will give that being back to you in a kingdom where the sad death of earth has no access and where the horrible death of the spirit is no longer possible."

How Difficult is it to Repent in the Beyond

Ref: [GGJ.10_113,01] Jakob Lorber

Jesus is speaking: "And look, the soul of this man, whom I have shown you, became more sober, more patient, more humble, and more pure because of the suffering and pain that he caused to himself by living his life that is contrary to the order. And he became stronger to work on his inner life and examined himself more seriously and deeper. Also, the souls in the big world of the beyond are in time purified by all kinds of sufferings, experiences and also pain that they only caused to themselves. Purified because they begin to feel a real aversion to their wrong way of acting and abhor them more and more deeply in themselves. So, they completely change their love, their will, and with that also their thinking and striving. They turn into themselves as into their true spirit of life, and in this manner, they gradually pass over, as if step by step, to a clearer and happier existence.

However, in the big world of the beyond it is more difficult and more troublesome than in this world, and with a lot of souls who sank too deep in their life against My order, the time needed before they will find in themselves the way to My eternal and unchanging order will be unimaginably long.

On this Earth, every person stands on firm ground, and he has a great number of good and bad ways before him and all kinds of advisors, leaders and teachers around him. With only a little examination he can easily choose for all that is good. So, he also can change his love and his will, and in this way he can - acting according to My order that becomes more and more clear to him - become more and more perfected. But in the other life, the soul of a person has only himself and is the creator of his own world, just like in a dream.

So, in such world there can also be no other way than the one which a soul, out of its love, will and fantasy, has made for itself.

If its love and will are, according to My order, good and just - even if it is only for the greater part - such a soul will soon, after a few bitter experiences that it probably made on some way that is contrary to My order, of course sooner or later choose to follow the correct way. Then it will observe it, and so will pass over from its existence of fantasy and dream into a true and real existence, where, in the increasing bright light, everything will become more and more understandable to it - things that before could never come into its mind.

And such soul, which already became purer because it improved its life, will then of course make quick and easy progress. But on the other hand, a soul who lives in a world of dreams and evil fantasies - which originated from its own love and its own will, both contrary to the order, and where often hardly halfway within the order exists or can exist - will have much difficulty on its way, a way which is hardly noticeably, and which passes only half within the order. After a long time, it will have trouble to choose an orderly way and that leads to the true light of life, and to raise itself entirely within My order on that way on which it still will have to fight against many obstacles.

Then how will a soul fare in the beyond who has not even half or a quarter of a way within My order, and who will thus also not be able to find one? Look, this is already the actual Hell.

Such soul will pass on all his numberless evil ways of his dark world of dreams and fantasies and will even want to exalt himself to rule over Me.

But since he not only will accomplish nothing by that, but will only lose more and more, he also becomes more and more angry, furious, and in an ever-greater rage, more revengeful, and by that also more and more dark and powerless.

Now just imagine the countless, disorderly, and most evil ways in the foolish fantasy world of such a soul. When will it have experienced all of them until it comes to a point where it will realize a little that all its attempts, strivings and efforts are useless and foolish, and awaken a certain desire and activity in it to obey instead henceforth rather of wanting to rule over everything itself?"

The Appearance of a Spirit

Ref: [GGJ.10_173,01] Jakob Lorber

Jesus is speaking: "The supreme city judge said: 'Then let me see and speak to my father who died already 12 years ago and whom I greatly mourned because he was a very dear and righteous father to me.'

I said to the supreme city judge: 'It will happen according to your wish.'

And look, at that same moment, the father of the supreme city judge stood in the guestroom, visible for all those who were present.

His son recognized him immediately and said to him: 'So you really continue to live after the death of your body?'

The father said: 'Now you believe it because I was forced to appear to you in this way by the power of Him who is with you, and you can see me now because He opened your inner sight. Why did you not believe your mother who is still living, and your 3 sisters who saw me and spoke to me shortly after my departure? At that occasion I revealed to them briefly that the life of the soul after the death of the body is quite different no matter what people think in this short earthly life.

The worst in this short time of life is for those who do not believe at all that the soul survives after the falling away of the body, because in the beyond, for a very long time, they still keep the belief which they took along from here and they still expect the eternal extinction which however will and can never come.

The result of their misbelief is also that they are lazy and slow to undertake something for their progress in the beyond. And so, they live in the beyond - as I have heard - often a couple of thousand years, and they do not let themselves be dissuaded from their senseless belief by even the lightest spirits. So, beware my son that you will not separate from the world with such misbelief.'

Then the supreme city judge said: 'Truly, father, it is you. For you spoke the same words to me as to mother and my sisters. I wrote them down and I am still keeping them as something holy, although I did not really believe in them up till now. I also wanted to see and speak to you myself, but I was not that lucky.'

On this, the father said to him: 'How would this have been possible? Because no matter how often I came to you, you were never at home and you were always busy in the outer world and its light, and there it is impossible for us to appear to someone and teach him. Now in our being we are not anymore, the appearance accomplished by another power. We are the power itself which acts in all elements. Sensorial man can see it, but the active power, which is the actual true being in himself, can as little be seen by an outer person like you as no matter what other power that is active in the material world unless he would return into himself in his true being and would by that open up his inner sight. And then he will also perceive the true being of the active powers, see them in their true being and also be able to contact them.'"

Experiences in the Beyond

Ref: [GGJ.10_174,01] Jakob Lorber

Jesus is speaking: "On this, the supreme city judge asked his father: 'Then where is the place you are staying and what does it look like?'

The father said: In our realm there is certainly no place of which one could say: 'Look it is here, or there, and this is what it looks like, and this is the way it is arranged', for with us everyone has his unique place where he lives, and the scene and characteristics of that place correspond in every respect to the inner characteristics of the person.

According to an earthly calculation I am already quite some time on the other side and should have seen and experienced something special, but until now I did not see anything that would somehow correspond with what one did believe, think or invent about the world of the beyond. I searched for the river Styx and Charon the skipper and found neither of them. For some time, I also had a fear of Tartarus of a fury and of the three relentless judges Minos, Aeacus and Rhadamanthus, but I saw nothing of all that. I searched for the Elysium, travelled around far and wide as if through a big sandy plain, and look, no Elysium could be found. In short, I did not see or find anything nor anyone except myself and the very loose ground on which I stood.

After searching for - according to an earthly calculation - about 2 years, during which I searched in all directions through that endless sandy plain, I finally saw someone at a great distance who seemed to be in exactly the same condition as I was. I quickly walked to that person and was soon close to Him.

When I came to Him, I immediately asked Him: 'You seem to be in the same condition as I am. Nothing but a sandy plain under our feet, and it seems that there is no end to it. A haze above our heads which is more dark than light gray, and besides that, we only can see ourselves and our footsteps in the sand. Also, there is no wind, and certainly no water or another object. According to an earthly calculation I am wandering around for about 2 years in this sandy desert and cannot find anything with which to satiate myself or to quench a possible thirst. I know that I left what was temporal and wander around as a real poor soul in this desert, which is truly very unpleasant to me. I really tried in this apparently spirit or soul world to seek and discover everything in which I partly believed in the world, but nothing of all that.

After 2 years You are now the first appearance who are like me. Maybe You can tell me what can be done here and what can be undertaken to finally find a place that is more or less bearable, for I am tired of searching in this vast sandy plain and I do not like to make any more step forward or backward?'

Then the person, who seemed to be like me and in the same condition as I was, said: 'Yes, my friend, there are countless people like you in this realm who searched for many centuries for what you are searching. If you want to find something here, you should not do it in the same way as in the material world where one searches everything only outside. The one who will do that here will forever not find anything, for there is no other place or region here except himself, even if he would search it in all places of endless space.

So you should return into yourself with your thoughts, with your striving and willing and begin to search, to think and to form yourself. Only then will you find a place that corresponds to your thinking, forming, willing and your love. So, behave as if you do not see this sandy plain and this gray haze above you, but go into the fantasy of your inner mind, then soon everything will come into another form for you. I let myself be found by you to tell you this.'

After these words, that person suddenly left me again and left me on my sandy plain. I took his words to heart and went into myself and began to think very lively, and as well as I could I drew in my fantasy a region and a place, and see, it did not take long to see my fantasy actually stretched out before me.

It was a valley through which a brook was flowing. Left and right were pastures and also trees and bushes, and at a certain distance I also discovered a village made from simple huts of farmers, and I had the feeling that I should go to that village.

But I thought by myself: 'If I will walk again, I finally will lose everything again that I created for myself with difficulty. Instead of that, I just will try to form such hut near this place. Then I very gladly will forever live in it and keep it.

I imagined something like that, and soon there was the hut, surrounded by a garden full of fruit trees with which I was completely satisfied.

I entered the hut to see in a certain way into myself what else there would be. Coming into the hut I saw that it was completely empty and went even deeper into myself and thought about things upon which soon all kinds of objects appeared into that hut: chairs, benches, tables and also a resting bed, completely as I had thought.

And I further thought: 'The table is there now but there is no bread, wine or other food on it.'

While I was intensively thinking about it, there was already the bread and the wine on the table in sufficient quantity. When I looked at it, I did not hesitate very long, grabbed quickly the bread and also the wine, for I was already very hungry and thirsty. And look, soon after that, I felt greatly strengthened, and my thinking and fantasy was much more lively and stronger.

Guidance in the Beyond

Ref: [GGJ.10_175,01] Jakob Lorber

Then I walked out of my hut and saw that everything was like before. Then I thought by myself: 'All this is very good, but I nevertheless am and stay alone. If I only could wish that former friend to come to me to express my thanks to Him for the good advice, he gave me', and at that wish I looked into the direction of that faraway village that I mentioned before and saw that soon several men from that village came into my direction.

They soon were close by, and among them I at once recognized also that friend who had given me that good advice in the sandy desert before, and He said to me: 'Awaken now in you a sincere feeling of love, compassion, mercy and charity. Then soon several men will come to you who are in the same condition as you were before. Then share your bread of life and your wine of life with them, and they soon will become happier and will be your neighbors. But the one, who does not want to accept anything from you, let him go his way to find a place and housing according to his wish. Then will happen to him as happened to you when you were searching. But you, continue to grow in love, mercy and in the living desire to do good to the poor blind ones as you are able. By that, you yourself will become richer and by that also happier.'

Then those who visited me in my loneliness returned, and again I followed the further advice of my still unknown friend. And look, soon a big group of poor souls came to me, and I asked them if they saw or noticed anything.

They answered: 'Up till now only an endless sandy plain under our feet and a gray haze above us.'

I went into my hut and brought them bread and wine.

A few of them saw the bread and the wine immediately when I said to them: 'Here you have bread and wine. Strengthen yourselves.'

But many others did not see it, because they thought that I intentionally wanted to play a joke on them, and they continued their way.

However, those who took the bread and the wine saw also immediately my hut and the very beautiful landscape, and they stayed with me. I taught them in the manner as I had been taught myself, and soon my former lonely hut was surrounded by a big number of other huts that were well arranged. And so, I found and acquired my first village and my first company, and I stayed there till I extended my inner being more and more by the love for my neighbor.

Soon after this extension, also the environment extended itself, became more lively and more beautiful, and I became happier and more enlightened in it, and the more the inner light in me extended itself and imagined something, it was also right there.

In that condition I also began to think about my relatives whom I left behind in the world to tell them about my ideas, especially that an indestructible life of the soul exists after the falling away of the body.

And look, soon after that, your mother and a few sisters came to me, and I could talk to them, just like to you now. They believed my words and they also told you, but there was no belief in you until now because you went too much into the hard and dead outer world with your whole thinking, loving and willing.

I finally want to make the remark that this good friend, who was the first in the desert to give me that good advice, looks, for what His facial features are concerned, very much like this Lord next to whom you are sitting, and at His first glance I felt within myself the light idea that He is Lord of this and also of our world. As I am speaking to you now, it is not as if I am speaking from another place, but only from the place where I live. From this you can conclude that it is not necessary for me to leave the place where I am living in order to associate with someone in this world, but where I am and speak, the place is also with me.

Apart from that, I also want to draw your attention that you, for what your soul is concerned, are now also travelling around in the outer world on merely sand. And above you, that means in your mind, you have nothing else but a dark gray haze.

But this Earth, and what you see on it and above it, is only a place that is created by the highest Spirit, just as my village was created out of me on a small scale.

The love of the great Spirit, His extremely clear thoughts of light, His almighty will and His great mercy are the initial elements from which He forms and also maintains such wonderful places as long as He wants. So, in this world you can see nothing else except that kind of place that came in a certain order into

existence from the great Spirit. But it only remains visible to your soul as something that exists as long as your soul is covered with matter.

When that covering will be taken away from you, you will be without a place, without any solid ground and without a certain light above you, except if you found the way to your inner being already in this world. Then of course it will be different in the beyond, because then everything, the place and what you need, will go with you to the beyond and you will not have to be informed by a friend as to how to obtain a habitation and company here with us. Remember that my son."

Now the son still wanted to talk further with his father.

However, he said before leaving (the father): "For all the other things that you still want to know you should turn into your heart to the One who sits next to you, for He knows all things, in this world and in ours."

After these words, the spirit disappeared."

The Souls' Fate in the Beyond

BD No. 6920 of 09/16/1957 taken from book 74

God the Father is speaking: "As yet you still wear the earthly garment; as yet your soul is still enclosed by a cover preventing its carefree flight into the spiritual realm, you are still bound to this earth. But the time will come when the soul will leave its fleshy cover, when earth will no longer be able to hold it and it will lift itself up to heaven, if it has acquired sufficient strength to raise itself from the earthly sphere into a world without obstacles, where it will be able to zoom through time and space and enjoy blissful happiness in radiant heights. But this flight of ascent requires strength, the kind of strength which should not be confused with the vitality of life but by which it is permeated when it has entered into heartfelt union again with the eternal source of strength, with its God and Father, when it has returned to its Father's house, where no hardship or suffering but only happiness and eternal life exist.

However, it is also possible that the hour of death will not denote a great change for the soul. It will indeed also be able to leave the physical body and yet not be free, if it is weak and unable to elevate itself from earthly spheres because matter had dominated its mind, because it completely allowed itself to be ruled by it and never accepted the divine strength of love. Then it will indeed also occupy spiritual spheres, that is, it will exist beyond this earthly world, yet it will lack vitality and be condemned to inactivity. And this is a state of torment for the soul, a state of helplessness and darkness, and yet it is aware of itself.

Death is the conclusion of a developmental chapter; the soul will change its abode in any case, but the sphere the soul will then occupy may well be rather different. And the human being himself creates on earth his soul's fate after death. And therefore, he should value every day as an immeasurable gift of grace, he should be prudent with every hour and use it for the salvation of his soul, he should not content himself with earthly joys and pleasures since the beatitudes in the spiritual kingdom will outweigh them a thousand-fold.

However, the unrepentant sinner, who does not think that death can be close at hand, as his judgment can be near, and he enjoys himself and abuses saying: 'Later I will repent.' I tell you solemnly that he will not have time to do so,

and he will be condemned to be forever where there is dreadful horror, where there is only blasphemy and weeping and torture.

The human being should always remember that he has to take it into his own hands to acquire an abundance of bliss, and so he then also has to be willing during the short lifetime on earth to renounce what gives the body a sense of well-being but is detrimental to the soul; for the soul is enclosed by a layer from which it should free itself in earthly life. The impurities still adhering to the soul obstruct God's light ray of love from entering. They first have to be dissolved so that the light of love can fully permeate the soul, and this also means that after death the soul will be able to raise itself entirely unburdened and enter the spheres of the blessed. And heartfelt prayer to God, deeds of love and even various forms of physical suffering will cause the dissolution of this layer.

Love and suffering are the most effective means of purification, love and suffering internalize the human being, love and suffering distance him from the world and its pleasures. The path of love and of suffering is the path Jesus took. He called upon people to become His followers, and He has promised life to those who follow Him. For His path will lead to the goal for sure. It leads out of the kingdom of darkness into the kingdom of light, and He will also help anyone who loves Him and wants to follow Him carry the small cross, when it seems too heavy to the human being and he turns for help to Him, to the divine bearer of the cross. But once the physical cover is shed the soul will rejoice and jubilantly enter through the gate to eternity. Then it will have fulfilled its purpose of earthly life, it will have returned to its true home of eternal life and eternal beatitude."

Helplessness in the Beyond

BD No. 3206 of 07/30/1944 taken from book 42

God the Father is speaking: "If the soul does not receive strength, it will remain inactive. This condition of inertia can only be remedied by actions of love which the soul is unwilling to do when it finds itself in this helpless state in the beyond. However, on earth this willingness can be stimulated by the Word of God. The human being can be shown that deeds of love are a blessing to him, and then he can take God's Word to heart, he can reflect on it and voluntarily decide to act kindly, because on earth he does not lack the strength to do what he wants to do. Then the soul will receive spiritual strength and further its development. But it is different in the beyond where the helpless soul can do nothing else but want. And whether or not the being will receive strength depends on this will. Thus, the soul in the beyond is reliant on the help of more mature beings, whereas the human being on earth can use his will without help from spiritual beings. Therefore, the human being should not remain indifferent if he does not reach his goal on earth in the mistaken belief that he can make up his neglect of earthly development in the beyond. This is a deceptive hope which he shall bitterly regret one day, albeit the state in the beyond is not entirely hopeless. The soul has to endure appalling distress which it can easily avoid by seriously striving to ascend while it is still on earth. The state of helplessness is something terribly dismal; it is a state which the soul cannot remedy at will, rather, it is dependent on the love of other beings. And this love, which corresponds to its own love towards other suffering souls, is at times difficult to perceive by the soul.

Thus, an uncaring soul can spend eternities in its helpless state without being approached by a caring being if it holds on to its selfish love, if it merely cares about itself and its fate without compassion for another soul's fate. According to divine law it cannot receive what it is unwilling to give to other souls, and its selfish love prevents the approach of beings of light to bring relief. And since it is unwilling to give or to help itself it cannot be given anything or helped either. Worst of all, it cannot be given God's Word which could remove the soul's spiritual blindness since God's Word is light, and as a result of its unkindness the soul is still unable to accept light. On earth, however, the Word of God is even offered to unkind people, because this is God's mercy for the lost souls on earth who may accept or reject it in line with their will. Whereas the being in the beyond is only touched by God's mercy in as much as it is free to want and to stimulate loving thoughts within itself, after which it will receive strength too. Yet many a soul is so hardened that it cannot have loving thoughts, and then it is in an intolerable situation which it is unable to end by itself.

However, these souls are surrounded by fellow sufferers who could kindle their love, and thus they can improve their situation at any time if they allow themselves to love, because even the least resolve to help their fellow sufferers will give them strength. As soon as they notice this influx of strength, they become more helpful, and this helpfulness towards other souls results in inner happiness, and then they have overcome the helpless state, the state of complete inertia. From this point on they can also receive God's Word, i.e. the teaching beings of light can approach them and reveal God's laws and why they have to be fulfilled. The light beings' lessons then have to start so that the uninformed souls can receive light and strength, i.e. knowledge which they then can pass on with lovingly care to improve the fate of suffering souls. But such helpless souls might have to do without help for eternities, and this condition could be easily avoided if the human being would make the best of his opportunities on earth in order to enter the beyond with a maturity which will give him light and strength and enable him to be blissfully active in the spiritual realm."

The Souls' Great Hardship in the Beyond

BD No. 5767 of 09/11/1953 taken from book 63

God the Father is speaking: "Souls which lack light suffer incredibly great hardship in the beyond. To describe this condition to you humans on earth would be truly sufficient to drive you to live your own life differently, but that would be the end of your freedom of will; driven by fear of the same destiny you would inevitably make an effort to behave differently, thus indeed comply with what is expected of you but not of your own accord, motivated by free will. Yet you shall know about the soul's fate, it shall be imparted to you, and then it is still up to you to believe it and to draw your own conclusions from it.

On entering the kingdom of the beyond these souls have lost everything they loved on earth, they own nothing, for they can only take across what they had spiritually acquired, and this is what they are mainly lacking. Since they lived a godless way of life they are engulfed by utter darkness and are totally powerless, yet they are not insensitive, for their environment causes them torment and terror, and these torments and terrors will also be experienced by a soul which had

fearlessly and powerfully implemented on earth what had subsequently plunged it into darkness. These indescribable sufferings will then either awaken the soul's desire to escape this condition or increase its evil instincts so that it will also look for satisfaction in this realm, which means that it will completely submit itself to the forces of darkness. Yet even the souls which had not left their earthly life in such sinfulness, but whose life had been devoid of love and indifferent towards all spiritual notions, are in a very difficult situation, for they, too, are extremely tormented by darkness, although this will, from time to time, give way to twilight if the soul is not yet entirely hardened, so that it will ask for light, for only the desire will enable the soul to attain the light.

But all souls are lacking the strength to want what is right, and according to the law of eternity they cannot be given help if they don't desire it themselves. God's act of compassion is certainly not over once the soul has left the earthly body, but what it failed to use on earth even though it had owned it in abundance, it first has to acquire in the beyond, and it is too weak to do so. Just always imagine them as extremely weakened, helpless beings which suffer indescribably and depend on help in order to be released from their suffering, you would be overcome by pity for these beings if you were able to see their hardship. And you all know souls in the beyond of whom you don't know in what state they entered the spiritual kingdom; you all have lost people through death who had been close to you. At least remember the souls who had been dear to you and help them, for even the smallest work of redemption on these souls will result in further redemptions, and you will have contributed much towards it.

You can only help them through loving thoughts and prayers, through intercession on behalf of these souls which, admittedly, will not release them from their torment but it will give them strength on account of which the soul will be able to change its will and strive towards the light. It cannot be released from its painful situation against its will, but in order to want what is right it needs your intercession, a prayer given with love, as soon as it enters your thoughts. For you should know that the soul is asking for your help as soon as it enters your thoughts, that you are constantly surrounded by souls hoping for your help, and that you should not resentfully suppress thoughts of the deceased if you don't want to add to their agony. The fate of these souls remains hidden from you so as not to impair your free will; you and the deceased souls occupy two worlds which are separated by a dividing line; you cannot look into their world and yet it exists and you are able to send much love from your world into theirs, the effect of which expresses itself in a way and to an extent that countless souls will be able to escape their situation. Often remember these poor souls and don't ignore them in their adversity, for you will be richly rewarded for what you do for them out of merciful love, in as much as that you will receive spiritual help on earth from all souls which have come out of darkness into the light."

The Souls' State of Darkness in the Beyond

BD No. 3952 of 01/04/1947 taken from book 49

God the Father is speaking: "And your share will be light or darkness. You will stay in the light if you had allowed the light to enter you, if you had let it flow into your hearts and thereby dispelled the darkness you lived in until you were touched by the light from the heavens. However, if you avoid the light darkness will be your fate. And spiritual darkness means wandering about lonely, it means being all alone in darkest surroundings without goal and without hope for a change in your situation. Hence a soul staying in darkness in the beyond suffers indescribably, since previously it had physical eyesight enabling it to recognize everything surrounding it, but now it will require spiritual vision in order to behold spiritual things, however, the soul will be spiritually completely blind. And thus it will stay in a dismally barren region, and if it encounters other souls it will be unable to recognize them and thus will have to depend on other soul's help for guidance, for providing it with an occasional glimmer of light to recognize its environment.

The enlightened souls, however, will take care of such poor souls, yet their help is limited according to God's will, for they are not allowed to give light to them against their will. As long as the soul does not miss the light it has to languish in darkness, no matter how long it will last. It has to long for light, its condition has to become intolerable, and it must demand a change of its situation, only then will the bearers of light approach and provide it with a small glimmer of their light, they will offer a few explanations and, depending on its willingness to listen and to accept them, the light will then take effect on the soul.

Its insufferable situation can awaken or enhance the soul's willingness to help as soon as it encounters other suffering souls. It will clearly recognize the suffering even though it is unable to recognize much, and as soon as the suffering of these souls stimulates its will to help it will become brighter within and the opportunity to help a suffering soul will present itself. Then it will feel an influx of strength, and it will use this strength to render assistance and in turn will be assisted itself by the beings of light, which will never leave such a soul again. It will receive because it gives, because love will have awakened within and every activity of love on earth as well as in the beyond results in receiving strength; strength and love, however, are always together, it will become stronger and its realization will grow. The darkness is penetrated, and for the time being it will give way to a twilight which is followed by a golden dawn, when the sun of the spirit has risen, that is, when the soul receives knowledge on every subject from the beings of light, which delights the soul and will impel it into constant actions of love, that is, into giving of what it owns itself, to souls which still languish in utter darkness.

Every soul is able to escape the darkness; every soul is able to deliver itself, yet the reason for imparting light must always be a loving thought, for without it the beings of light are not allowed to distribute gifts, because free will has to strive for light or eternal night will continue to engulf the soul and the consequence can

be a descent into the deepest abyss. Light, however, belongs to beatitude, and once the soul has developed spiritual vision it will recognize its task and behold splendors and never again descend into darkness."

God's Justice Demands Atonement

BD No. 7625 of 06/18/1960 taken from book 80

God the Father is speaking: "Every injustice has to be atoned for by the sinner. This is demanded by My justice. And this sin has to be removed on earth or in the beyond and when a soul, burdened by sins it had committed on earth, enters the spiritual kingdom, it can take an infinitely long time until it has removed this guilt of sin. Yet it is unable to make amends for the original sin of the past apostasy from Me in the kingdom of the beyond, because the original sin is too great for the being to remove it itself, whether on earth or in the spiritual kingdom. Nevertheless, even a soul still burdened by the original sin is demanded to make amends for sins it had committed on earth, and for these alone it might have to endure an unspeakably difficult and agonizing fate, because My justice demands compensation for every sin.

Yet My infinite love has taken pity on all sinners, it has redeemed the guilt of sin, it has made reparations for it, it accomplished the act of Salvation on behalf of sin-burdened humanity, and it also paid for the original sin, so that the souls will be able to enter the spiritual kingdom truly redeemed when they have to leave the physical body. I have made the atonement Myself in the human being Jesus through My bitter suffering and dying on the cross, through an act of compassion which only love was able to accomplish. And thus, even the greatest sinner can be released from his sin and enter the kingdom of light, provided he accepts Salvation, provided he voluntarily approaches Me in Jesus Christ and for the sake of the crucifixion appeals to Me for forgiveness. Yet this path to the cross has to be taken in free will, otherwise the human being places himself outside the act of Salvation, otherwise he does not belong to those for whom My blood was shed as atonement for humanity's guilt of sin.

You will only be able to appreciate the great importance of the act of Salvation if you consider that it depends on you yourselves as to what kind of fate you will sooner or later experience in eternity, if you imagine that immeasurable suffering will await you because you have sinned and do not accept the mercy of Jesus Christ Who wants to release you from your guilt of sin, if you consider that you yourselves will not even be able to redeem your immense sin within an eternity and will therefore have to linger in unspeakable torment and darkness for eternities. And, if you consider that you can also be released from your own guilt by just handing yourselves over to Me in Jesus Christ, if you walk with your guilt of sin to the cross and appeal to Me in Jesus for forgiveness. You have to answer for every sin and make amends and you all have sinned in your earthly life.

But you all can also find forgiveness; you can become free from your guilt and enter redeemed into the kingdom of bliss by just turning to Jesus Christ, to the divine Redeemer, Who has served Me Myself as a cover, because My love wanted to accomplish the act of Salvation for you humans and this could only take place in the external shape of a human being, Who took all sins upon himself, Who suffered and died as a human being and Who shed His blood out of love in order

to help His fellow human beings and release them from spiritual adversity. You need only direct your path to Him, you need only entrust yourselves to Him in your spiritual hardship, confess your sins to Him and ask Him that He might also have shed His blood on your behalf, so that you will be released from you guilt of sin, so that you will be able to enter the spiritual kingdom when the day of passing away from this earth has come for you.

And He will accept you, He will wipe out your guilt of sin, for He has satisfied My justice. He has endured the suffering and pain which you should have endured and which you cannot be spared if you leave the earth unredeemed, without Jesus Christ. Admittedly, you will still be able to call upon and find Him in the kingdom of the beyond, and even then, you can still be redeemed, but the path is long and difficult, and you often lack the will to do so. Yet without Jesus Christ the gate to the kingdom of light remains locked for you, without Jesus Christ you will never be able to become blessed."

Fate in Eternity Corresponds to Will - Love of Matter is Wrong

BD No. 3969 of 02/06/1947 taken from book 49

God the Father is speaking: "Whatever the human being strives for he shall receive, for his will alone determines his fate in eternity. If you strive for the kingdom of God you will also acquire it and become joint ruler of all worlds, yet if you strive for the world, for fulfillment of all earthly wishes and longings, then the world, that is, worldly commodities, will not leave you even though you will have entered the beyond, for your wishes also create your soul's environment. The possession of these goods, however, will not make you happy, for soon you will realize that they are unreal, thus your cravings can no longer be satisfied yet you continue to crave, and this longing will torment you, consequently, you already ought to endeavor on earth to let go of such cravings, you ought to desire spiritual possessions if you want to be blessed one day.

Whatever you strive for will be your share. And thus, every human being creates his own fate and should therefore be conscious of his great responsibility, for he is facing eternities ahead of him, eternities which he can either spend in beatitude or experience in wretchedness. For eternities can pass by until he has overcome earthly matter, in view of the fact that the temptations in the spiritual realm are far worse since he offers them little resistance, whereas he can easily detach himself on earth if he seriously wants to do so.

A soul which has risen above matter and enters the kingdom of the beyond in a free state is indescribably happy, since the pleasures awaiting it are far more magnificent than people on earth can possibly imagine. This soul, too, will desire, yet it will find constant fulfillment, for it desires spiritual possessions, it is God's emanation of love which beatifies it without end, for which it constantly yearns and which it will constantly receive. And this emanation of love spiritualizes its whole being, it will bring itself ever more into line with the eternal love and will constantly feel attracted by it, it will incessantly desire the presence of God in order to be united with Him for all eternity and thus to be indescribably blessed. People on earth demand earthly joys, physical pleasures and only ever strive for material possessions. And all that will come to an end with the death of the body. They will be unable to take anything along into the spiritual kingdom if they have

failed to gather spiritual possessions which, however, can only be gained by neglecting earthly wishes. If they are still able to detach themselves from the world before their physical death, if they still recognize its worthlessness before and ponder thoughts of the hereafter they can be considered blessed, for then their path of ascent in the spiritual kingdom will no longer be closed to them, even though inexpressibly difficult to climb, but then they will no longer strive for earthly possessions and no longer have to fear the awful temptations which weaken the soul and render it incapable of resistance. Then they will soon find support from the beings of light which will help them by handing out spiritual possessions, if only within certain limits, until the soul makes its own effort to increase them, until it has recognized its task in the spiritual kingdom and strives to comply with it. What it wants it will receive. Only its will is decisive, and in order for the will to make the right decision God constantly instructs people of His will, yet they won't listen to Him, they will continue to desire the world and thereby seriously endanger their souls.

Therefore, God has mercy on them, and He clearly shows to them the value of earthly matter by allowing people to lose it, by time after time taking away what they own and what is dear to their heart without realizing that they harbor the wrong kind of love within them. He takes away what they don't want to give voluntarily, in order to show them on earth already that it can be overcome, in order to help them become free from their longing for it, to content themselves with less and to turn their love to spiritual possessions which are incomparably more valuable and everlasting.

Every earthly loss affecting the human being is God's help; it is a gentle admonition to turn away from it and an indication of the fleeting nature of worldly things. And anyone looking around with open eyes will be able to recognize God's activity everywhere, Who wants to help people become spiritually minded, so that they will still learn to despise matter before the death of their body and only strive for spiritual wealth, so that they will create for themselves a blissful fate in the afterlife, so that they will become blessed because it is their will."

Fate in the Beyond

BD No. 6054 of 09/16/1954 taken from book 65

Jesus is speaking: "Your thoughts and wishes on this earth will be your fate in the spiritual kingdom after the death of your body. If you searched for light and truth on this earth, light will be waiting for you over there, if you preferred the darkness because earthly matter had deluded you, then you will stay in dark surroundings over there too, in a realm where you feel unhappy for lack of light. Yet it happens in accordance with your will. Light is constantly made available to you on earth and the path to eternal life is clearly and brightly illuminated, you need only enter it to find the kingdom of light after the death of your body. If, however, you escape the light, if you walk the dark path, then you can only arrive in dark regions too.

You humans occupy yourselves very little indeed with what happens to you after your physical death. You dismiss such thoughts from your mind when they occur to you, you constantly turn towards the world and its matter, and since this is transient you cannot take it with you into the spiritual realm. If material goods

are your only riches on earth, you will indeed arrive poor and naked in the spiritual kingdom. Why do you not gather possessions on earth which are long-lasting, which accompany you on your way into the beyond, why do you only lust after the transient possessions of this world?

The consequences of your way of life are presented to you time after time, your attention is drawn to your fate after your departure from this earth, yet you pay little attention to the warnings and reprimands, you scrupulously carry on living from day to day even though you could be called to your final resting place tomorrow. And then you receive what you desire on earth, light, or darkness, you can't be given anything else but what you have acquired during your life on earth. Consequently, as long as you live on earth think of the time after your death, think of your soul which is immortal and whose fate in the beyond you prepare while you live on earth, strive towards the light on earth and create your soul's happiness in the spiritual realm."

Involuntarily Premature Deceased People - Beyond

BD No. 1589 of 08/31/1940 taken from book 25

God the Father is speaking: "The undeserved fate of those who have to sacrifice themselves against their will on account of unjust actions by malicious nations will not remain without punishment, for there has to be just retribution if souls lose their embodiment's permitted time of grace on earth due to human fault and thus were unable to mature fully, as is possible in a long lifespan. It is an unmerited shortening of earthly life which admittedly releases them from the body, but they enter the beyond in an immature state. The soul can only receive what its state of maturity merits; it has to enter the spheres which correspond to its degree of maturity. But it has to be understood that terminating human life in a certain state of compulsion has to be atoned, for nothing that is unjust before God can remain unpunished. For no-one is entitled to take a fellow human being's life. On the other hand, however, the human being's soul has to be given the opportunity in the beyond to continue the self-redemption which was interrupted on earth. And therefore, especially these prematurely deceased souls are assigned a rich field of work in the beyond, so that they only need to be of good will in order to advance their soul's state in line with earthly life. If the soul's progress of development is interrupted due to someone else's fault, the beings in the beyond have the most incredible opportunities at their disposal to, nevertheless, still reach the state of maturity providing they have an active will and the being desires to reach God.

However, particularly a prematurely deceased person is at great risk that his soul will be unable to detach itself from the earthly sphere since it had left it before it was able to overcome its fondness for matter, for all earthly pleasures. And there is great danger that it will not make use of the opportunities in the beyond as it is still far too earthbound but, nevertheless, just as in earthly life, has to abandon this will in order to be able to travel the path of higher development. Nor can its will forcibly be directed towards ascent, the soul is just as free as on earth to voluntarily strive towards ascent or the abyss, although countless beings of light will try to help such a soul.

But those who have caused the premature demise of a human being will gain little spiritual success from earthly life, for their guilt will thicken the layer of their own soul and the release from such a layer will be extremely difficult. Consequently, the person will have to struggle tremendously to free himself from this immense guilt, the state of his soul will be very low once he leaves earthly life himself, and he will have to do bitter penance for his guilt in the beyond."

Suicide - Fate in the Beyond

BD No. 1951 of 06/13/1941 taken from book 28

God the Father is speaking: "The path of the flesh has to be taken until the end, that is, every being also has to experience the embodiment as a human being. The earthly path prior to this cannot be deliberately shortened or interrupted. However, in the stage of free will the human being is able to use his free will and therefore also end his earthly life as a human being arbitrarily without being prevented. But the consequences of such interference in divine will are awful. A person like that is still immature, that is, he is without recognition, or he would not take this step which deprives him of a great blessing.... to be able to improve his character until God Himself ends his life. Nevertheless, he will become aware of his wretched action in the beyond and his remorse will be beyond description.

If it is God's will to end a life, irrespective of whether the person is still young and not ready for eternity, then God recognizes the necessity of it and terminating the earthly life is an act of grace, either to avert peril from the soul or to offer this soul an opportunity in the beyond that will raise its state of maturity within a short period of time. The forcible termination of life is, however, spiritually a great step backwards, for the being is suddenly without strength to improve itself and depends on the mercy of the beings of light or people, that is to say, if they don't help it will forever remain on the same level of imperfection. The soul first has to come to realize this in the beyond which will trigger an indescribable state of remorse. But if the soul is willing it will use every opportunity to be helpful, yet its struggle will be too difficult for words. In a manner of speaking, it has to carry on bearing the earthly suffering in the beyond, which it had wanted to escape; the same things it had thrown away are still clinging to it and torment it dreadfully.

Yet God is not without mercy even towards a soul which had disregarded His will, providing the soul is not entirely obstinate. After some time, which to the soul seems to last forever, it will also be given tasks in the beyond which will ease its situation. And then it will have to use its will again. If it agrees to help suffering souls in the beyond it will soon notice an obvious improvement in its circumstances. But this may well be after the time God had designated for its actual earthly life, thus it will not have arbitrarily shortened its earthly path after all and will still have to linger in the state of suffering in the beyond, that it thought unbearable on earth, until God takes pity on the soul.

Hence its intervention in divine will was entirely pointless; it deprived it of the grace to mature fully on earth but by no means ended the ordeal of earthly existence. Consequently, such souls are pitiable; for it will take a long time until they are redeemed and the awareness to have thrown God's blessing away is so

agonizing for the soul that it is in a sorry state in the beyond. Such souls are especially in need of people's prayers. Only people's love on earth can relieve their torments and impart the strength to improve their fate by using their will, in as much as the soul in the beyond is prepared to be of service and thereby, after an apparently endless time, will be able to change its lightless abode which, understandably, is its share (fate?) until it is saved by God's love and mercy."

Intercessions for Poor Souls

Prayers for Souls in the Beyond

BD No. 2165 of 11/24/1941 taken from book 31

God the Father is speaking: "An unredeemed soul's path of suffering is impossible to describe to people, and yet they should know that it must endure an inconceivably hopeless state because this knowledge is intended to impel people into helpfully supporting such souls, hence they are constantly admonished not to forget these souls. They will thank those people a thousand-fold who ease their agony by praying for them. Souls in the beyond which leave people behind on earth with whom they were lovingly connected have an advantage compared to those which did not acquire love for themselves on earth. Loving thoughts and devout wishes follow the former, or such souls receive strength through heartfelt prayer, which can substantially improve their situation. Every loving thought is soothingly experienced by the souls and awakens love again, which then will manifest itself towards equally suffering souls. However, souls which lived without love on earth must starve and suffer unspeakably. They are quickly forgotten, or they are only thought of unkindly, and this has appalling consequences on their state in the beyond. Every kind thought of people on earth for the souls in the beyond alleviates their torments, every bad thought increases them and the souls themselves are unable to defend themselves or enforce people's love for them.

Now the soul is perceptively affected by love or heartlessness which either eases or impedes its struggle towards ascent. Souls which entirely lack people's love on earth have to completely depend on themselves in utterly dark surroundings and suffer indescribable hardship. These souls should be particularly considered on earth in prayer so that they, too, feel the blessing of intercession, so that they feel the strength of love within themselves and thus an inner change takes place. For as soon as a loving thought fleetingly touches such lonely souls, they notice it and turn towards the place of origin of this thought, they come close to the person who mercifully thought of them and observe him and his characteristics, his actions and his train of thought. They will never harass a person who is good to them either, although they themselves are rarely capable of good feelings. Yet they dwell on the reason why their state of suffering eases when they are close to these people, and they sense noticeable relief through the prayer on behalf of the struggling souls in darkness. And they learn to recognize that love is the only means for improving their situation. And once the soul has gained this realization then it will also become gentle and helpful towards other souls, and they will have escaped the bitterest hardship. People on earth would be able to redeem infinitely many souls from their hardship if they tried to imagine the helplessness of these souls. For if they feel a spark of love within themselves

their great suffering should move them and arouse their will to help these souls. People should include these poor souls which lack the strength to help themselves in their prayer, they should call upon God for grace and mercy for these souls, they shall give them their love and never think heartlessly of a deceased person so as not to increase his pain. For then the soul will be in great danger of becoming completely hard and every good inclination in it dying. But the souls should be redeemed and people on earth can contribute an awful lot towards achieving it.'

Strength of Intercession

BD No. 5161 of 06/30/1951 taken from book 58

God the Father is speaking: "You should give the strength of intersession to all those who have departed from you, irrespective of the degree of maturity you may think they have, for they all still need strength and are grateful for any help. It is a happy feeling to have helped souls to ascend, which you will only fully realize when you have entered the kingdom of the beyond yourselves and see the hardship of many souls who are not remembered in prayer, because no one on earth will remember them lovingly and provide them with the necessary strength in order to ascend. Once these souls have experienced the strength of love they will work with immense enthusiasm and use this strength, but the first impulse has to be given to them by people's loving intercession, because this is what will affect them first and change the direction of their thoughts.

But this intercession has to be rendered consciously, i.e. with the intention of helping the souls to advance. You humans should know that your prayers are valuable; you should familiarize yourselves with the suffering of departed souls and with a loving heart pray for a gift of strength for these souls. They will surely experience this gift of strength and also gratefully feel the love intended for them which will cause them to love in turn, which will thus affect their environment like a small light that benefits all souls. You humans could do so inexpressibly much to release the souls if you have the will to alleviate hardship and suffering, for this will motivates you to pray from the bottom of your heart, and only this comprises redeeming strength. You should do everything consciously; external formalities or lip-prayers have no effect, because they exclude the conscious will to help. Only love is liberating, this has to be said time and again.

You can achieve inconceivably much with love, you can send bright light into the darkness through loving intercession, so that many souls will gather there and be touched by this ray of light, always with the result that their feeling of love will also be awakened and will want to express itself. Loving intercession is a tremendous flow of strength the effect of which will never fail. Include all your loved ones in your prayer, mentally call them to you and tell them that you want to help them and that they should accept your help quietly and without objection; mentally instruct them that they, too, will be able to ascend it they want to use the strength they receive through your intercession. And always point them to Jesus Christ. Only One can redeem them, and this One can only be reached through love. Therefore, inform them that they should use their imparted strength to help other souls in turn who also suffer great hardship, that these deeds of love will bring them ever closer to Jesus Christ Who, with utmost mercy, will then draw all souls to Himself and guide them into the kingdom of light.

Once you have helped a soul to use its given strength correctly its progress will be assured, then the weakness of will and lack of strength will disappear and it will eagerly ascend and take untold souls along, for it then will also share its knowledge with them, and thus a single correct intercession will result in unforeseen blessings. You humans on earth should not underestimate the strength of intercession, but always remember that it should be made with a loving heart in order to truly give strength. And include all your loved ones, for they all are still in need of strength and will thank you forever if you increase their strength and remember them with love."

Needy Souls Beg for Prayers

BD No. 2381 of 06/24/1942 taken from book 32

God the Father is speaking: "Listen to the pleas of the dead. Do not refuse them your intercession when they remind you of themselves and know that without your help they have to suffer indescribably. The fate of an unredeemed soul is extremely sad, and you don't know whether a soul is redeemed or whether it is suffering in this painful state and requires your help. You can only help these poor souls with prayer because then they feel your love and this gives them the strength to improve their own fate. They change their will, and this is first and foremost necessary to initiate a transformation of their sad situation. The souls are grateful for even the least amount of support because they completely depend on you or on the mercy of the souls who have already attained a higher degree of maturity. But these are only permitted to help them when the souls will request a change of their present situation. However, the will of such souls is weak if not completely inactive and therefore they often have to languish for an infinite length of time if they do not receive support by means of intercession which gives them the strength to change their will, i.e. to activate their will. If you could understand such souls suffering you would not let them ask in vain, because every thought of a deceased is their way of bringing themselves to your attention and a call for help in need.

Humanity is very unkind to each other and without belief in life after death. That is why it does not remember it's deceased and thus they suffer greatly. Time and again they push themselves into the thoughts of the human being to induce him to pray for them. There is immense hardship in the beyond and even the souls of unknown deceased come close to those who compassionately remember the poor souls, because they experience every gift of prayer as beneficial, as an increase of strength and will to ascend. Deeply compassionate people on earth are always surrounded by needy souls who are hoping for their help. Even the resolve to help such souls is a gift of strength to them and every loving thought which includes them strengthens their will. And then helpful beings in the beyond can come to aid these souls by conveying the strength which is necessary to lessen their overwhelming suffering. Human beings do not really know how to value prayer as a gift of mercy. They can achieve everything by right prayer because God Himself has offered this blessing to them and imposes no restrictions. However, the soul cannot help itself in the beyond but depends on help. And you should give them this love and help to save them from the most painful condition and to facilitate the start of their self-deliverance. Once the soul has overcome the

point of weakness then its aspiration only strives upwards, and its greatest need is remedied. However, it has to receive the strength for this by means of loving intercession because only the action of love leads to the redemption of the soul. If the soul itself is too weak to do works of love the human being should lovingly support, it so that it receives the strength which it needs for its progress. For that reason, you should not forget the needy souls, because they implore you to help them."

Appeals for a Gift of Strength for the Souls of the Deceased

BD No. 9014 of 07/13/1965 taken from book 94

Jesus is speaking: "Whenever you can't help but think of a departed person you should know it is always an appeal for help which you should provide since no one else is taking care of them. And when they see your light, they too would like to gather around you and draw strength from this light, for they often don't know the meaning of this light, especially if they were caught up in error until now. Then it will suffice to send just one thought to the soul inviting it to join you and accept a lesson. For especially the souls which are not followed by loving intercession suffer much hardship and they, too, shall be helped to come into the possession of truth. Just one conscious invitation to take part in your instructions is already enough to attract the souls permanently, with the result that they will not leave you anymore, that they will join the large group of those whom I will then be able to address Myself. And you will be constantly surrounded by souls wanting to increase their knowledge in order to pass it on to those who are less knowledgeable and whom they want to help as well. And then it will be essential that you inform them of My act of Salvation, for only when they have found Him and deliverance from their guilt will they accept profound knowledge. This first necessitates their activity of love, as they will only be able to understand it if they employ their will to love again in order to help souls which are suffering the same hardship. Only then will they themselves penetrate the truth ever more and they will find it easy to hand themselves over to the divine Redeemer and appeal to Him for forgiveness of their guilt. Then, however, will the divine Word constantly flow to them, and they will also accept it, irrespective of where and how it is offered to them. Yet especially the first step is very difficult for the soul until it has experienced the strength of intercession, which will express itself as a change of will and thus it is easier to influence, so that the soul will also comply when it receives its calling.

Therefore, pay attention to every such request and offer assistance to the souls which desire help, which indeed remind many people on earth of themselves yet will only find intercession with those who are able to help them spiritually because they are in conscious contact with Me and I Am able to reveal Myself to them. And the fact that the strength of My Word is tremendously effective may be experienced by every soul once it has joined you, for its progress will be guaranteed.

Once I Am offered the opportunity to reveal Myself to a person through the working of My spirit, this person will stand amid a gleam of light which will attract many souls willing to accept the same as you have been offered, and due to you all souls which you include in your intercession will then no longer be able to go

astray. For then you will only be motivated by love for these souls, and for the sake of this love I will also give strength to those on whose behalf you pray. I also have to apply the laws in the beyond and these first and foremost include the being's free will, which may not be infringed upon, neither by Myself nor by My adversary.

Therefore, it matters that you, who also have to respect free will, lovingly remember the souls which are still weak-willed but unable to resist the strength of intercession and whose will you are therefore able to influence. Since they were beneficially affected by the strength of love they will no longer resist and be irresistibly drawn to you so that you then will also be able to convey the Gospel of love to them.

If only you knew how ardently your adherents (the souls) accept My Word, how they constantly feel that they are progressing, and how grateful they are to you that you, due to your intercession, helped them to participate in your instructions, you would not stop praying for such souls and even be pleased with their progress, for they, too, will protect you whenever possible, to prevent the receiving of the Word being interrupted, you will also purify your surroundings, so that no one will become subject to the adversary's temptations as soon as they surround you. Precisely this makes your activity so important, since it enables you to contribute towards the redemption of many souls by offering them bread and wine, thus the delectable elixir of life and the most effective nourishment, and one day you will feel the inner joy of having been able to contribute towards the ascent of those who, without your help, would still have languished in darkness for a very long time.

Therefore take notice of every thought which reminds you of someone deceased, consider it a call for help which you must not reject, and then consciously call him close to you and the first step up will have been taken, for as soon as a person intercedes on behalf of such a soul, I will also be able to grant strength to the soul for the sake of this person, which otherwise would not be possible for Me since it contradicts the law of eternity, as only free will can request strength, but which I now recognize in the loving intercession and thus grant My mercy to this soul and then will also be able to provide it with the grace of My Word through you.

People would be able to redeem all souls through loving intercession, but how few are aware of this and how great is therefore My adversary's power who will try anything to disrupt such contacts from the spiritual world to earth, but who will be unable to take effect if a human being hands himself over to Me with love and thus I will also protect him, especially if I want to speak through him to the souls in the beyond, which My adversary will never be able to prevent Me from doing. For where the will for redemption exists people will be delivered from the one who had held them captive long enough and whose only weapon is love which will defeat him and from which he takes flight, because it is and will remain My share for eternity."

State of Twilight in the Beyond

BD No. 7418 of 09/29/1959 taken from book 78

Jesus is speaking: "Souls passing over into the kingdom of the beyond without having found their Redeemer will find themselves engulfed by thick fog, providing they don't enter the kingdom of darkness due to their totally God-opposing way of life on earth. But there are people who have not become guilty of any explicit wrongdoing, whose offence generally consisted of failing to do good works, who can neither be called bad nor good and whose spirit is therefore not so dark as to be expected by profound darkness in the beyond. Nevertheless, they are not suitable for the kingdom of light either, for their souls are not yet receptive to light, their souls are still encased in thick twilight, they have absolute minimal realization, depending on their deeds of love which a soul will be able to look back on.

And most souls called back from earth are in this kingdom of twilight, people, who were apparently righteous in the world and yet have little faith because they lacked love on earth. And these souls are now facing a time of utter barrenness, a time when they wander about lonely and alone with their thoughts. They are unable to recognize anything in their surroundings, they are spiritually blind and also incapable of perceiving anything but themselves, however, they have not lost their sense of identity, they also remember their past earthly life yet only rather indistinctly and occasionally. They are in a permanent state of drifting about and searching, for they cannot find what they are looking for, a place of peace and safety, since they failed to acquire it during their earthly life. They effectively had been parasites on earth, they had lived without having fulfilled their true purpose of life, they have only ever taken and given nothing in return, irrespective of whether it is understood in an earthly or spiritual way. They had not acquired any spiritual possessions for themselves but utilized their earthly life in line with their demands. They had spent their earthly life without having seriously thought about its meaning and purpose and living their life accordingly. And this is what they will receive in the kingdom of the beyond; they won't find anything because they didn't acquire anything that is of lasting value in the spiritual kingdom.

Only now will it show as to whether such a person will be lovingly remembered. For every loving thought is like a firm foundation on which the soul is now able to move with a certain sense of confidence. Every loving thought provides the soul with a glimmer of light wherein it is able to recognize its surroundings, if only for a brief moment, but it is stimulated to reflect on it, and its state can only change through deliberation, by experiencing the blissful relief of every loving thought, by starting to regret when it realizes what it had failed to do on earth. And, depending on its nature, its willingness and its resistance, the state of such a soul can change equally soon, if it is not entirely obstinately minded, in which case its blindness can last for an extremely long time before the twilight will give way to a small ray of light. And since only loving thoughts can provide this relief, much strength of intercession has to be bestowed upon the soul, it should not be left to its fate, which would merely infinitely prolong its lightless state, for only love will be able to change it, love, which fellow human beings will forward to

such a soul and which the soul itself lacked in earthly life, but which will be accepted by God on behalf of such a soul.

But it is possible for all you humans on earth to render much help with your love, and you should therefore constantly stay in mental contact with the souls of the departed, time and again you should tell them about the Gospel of love and that they, even in the beyond, will still have to comply with these two commandments, to love God above all else and their neighbor as themselves. For this is the only way by which they will be able to make contact with Jesus Christ, without Whom it will be impossible for any soul to enter the kingdom of light. The souls still wandering about in the twilight have not yet made any contact with Jesus Christ, they have not yet found salvation, which was the reason for their life on earth, but they absolutely have to attain it in the beyond if they don't want to descend into the abyss. Souls wandering about in twilight have not yet been pushed into the abyss, they still have a slight opportunity to find their path into the kingdom of light, for after a long time of barrenness beings of light, which, however, do not identify themselves as such, will repeatedly direct them towards the right path leading to Jesus Christ.

And in order that they follow the beings of light, in order that they surrender their opposition, they will require much intercession which you should not deny to the souls. They will be eternally grateful to you if your love prevents their fall into the abyss, if you help them to find their way out of the twilight into the kingdom of light, for your loving intercession will prevent their regression, their souls will become softer and more yielding, and they will find Salvation through Jesus Christ, who forgives everyone if only he remembers Him and calls upon Him."

Remorse in the Beyond - Ascent

BD No. 7199 of 11/01/1958 taken from book 76

Jesus is speaking: "Sooner or later you will bitterly regret the time you had lost in your earthly life, and you will realize in the beyond what you had forfeited in your earthly life. And lost time during your earthly life is every day which was purely spent in an earthly way, when you gave no room to any spiritual thoughts, which thus did not correspond to the actual purpose that is the reason for your embodiment as a human being. As long as you live on earth you don't take this knowledge seriously, even if you have it. Yet in the kingdom of the beyond it will burden you like a heavy stone which you will be unable to shift. You will remember these days' time after time, and you will regret every pointless deed, just as you will bitterly regret every missed opportunity which you could have utilized for the benefit of your soul.

And still you can count yourself privileged if you come to this realization in the spiritual realm, if you don't belong to those who are utterly immersed in darkness and don't even feel remorse, because they simply don't realize what they had inflicted on themselves, who will still have to struggle for a long time in order to ever get to the state when they can see a small glimmer of light and only then realize how futile their earthly life had been. For once this glimmer of light exists the soul can still be motivated by bitter remorse to turn inwards and change its thoughts and will. And then it can be given enough strength to enable it to actively

help suffering souls, and after that it will certainly progress, even if the conditions are far more difficult than it would have been possible in earthly life.

Hence remorse has to precede progress, for only a soul which begins to understand will try to change its situation, and any realization will also reveal to the soul the futile path of earthly life, which will always result in bitter regret but also signify a turning point in its wretched state. But for this reason, it is also of greatest significance for the human being that he will still arrive at some, if only minimal, knowledge while he is still living on earth, that he will begin to recognize the purpose of earthly life and still try to improve himself before he passes away from this world. For to be able to pass over with even the smallest amount of knowledge will always signify a glimmer of light for this soul, it will not be moved into total darkness after its physical death, it will be able to find its way about in the twilight, and in a flash, it will understand and then also do everything in order to acquire light for itself.

It will also recognize that much work is waiting for it in the spiritual kingdom if only it is willing to work, and the small glimmer of light will guide it onto the right path, which it indeed will take with a feeling of remorse for not having used its earthly life correctly yet also in constant hope for help, which it surely will be granted as soon as it recognizes Jesus Christ and appeals to Him for help. Then it will not be hopelessly lost, it will be able to ascend; it will just never be able to achieve the degree which results in unlimited beatitude at the Father's heart, the childship to God, which is the fate of those who on earth endeavor to fulfill the task they were given, who looked for and found unification with their Father of eternity on earth already."

Transference of Light in the Beyond

BD No. 6735 of 01/13/1957 taken from book 72

Jesus is speaking: "A bright light shines for the souls in the beyond wherever I Am able to convey My Word to earth. These souls are often surrounded by such profound darkness that it is causing them overwhelming pain from which they would like to escape. And if their desire for light arises then I will also let them recognize sources of light because then the souls will go to them, And this is the beginning of their ascent, albeit at first it is almost imperceptible, but once a soul has visited a place where it has detected a ray of light it will keep returning to it, and then there is no further danger that it will descend into darkness again. But what is the nature of the light that makes them feel good and want increasingly more light?

Souls who apathetically stay in dark spheres are entirely devoid of strength and thus incapable of recognizing anything in their environment. However, they are aware of being alive, of not being obliterated, and this awareness is tremendously agonizing for them, since they are able to think even though their earthly acquired information has become confused. Nevertheless, they are able to contemplate their wretched state and thus start to question themselves whether and in what way they have caused this state themselves. And if such questions arise in them, I Am also prepared to answer these questions. But I cannot do so directly; instead, I just have to offer them the opportunity to find someone willing to instruct them accordingly. And every such question and the desire for an

answer is already a desire for light. All lack of knowledge is the equivalent of darkness for the soul, all correct knowledge is light. A soul which no longer occupies its body, which therefore is no longer able to see with its physical eyes, is blind as long as it is completely ignorant, and for this period of time it will be engulfed by night.

But it may be given light, it may receive clarification, and as soon as it willingly listens to these explanations it will also perceive that the night is becoming lighter. At first it will enter into a twilight state, it will begin to formulate clear thoughts and thereby experience a sense of well-being, and then it will become increasingly more illuminated within; it will be able to see what it was previously unable to see, however, its sense of well-being is not caused by earthly-material impressions, rather it is gladdened by a state of inner enlightenment because it also knows that it will be able to escape its dreadful situation and how it can achieve it. Besides, it is faced by a sphere of activity which it finds indescribably attractive after its former state of inactivity, for now it has the strength to work, since it is motivated to do so by an urge to love.

Hence, the places where My Word can be heard are such places of enlightenment which emanate a glow of bright light attracting innumerable souls, but which will only be perceived by those who yearn to leave their darkness, who long for light. For there also exist souls which shy away from light, which have sunk so low that the light is painful to them since it reveals their depravity, and who therefore fight the light believing themselves able to extinguish it. However, such souls will be pushed aside, whereas every light-desiring soul will be attracted by or guided to it by helpful beings, and as soon as they merely listen without resistance to what is imparted to them, the state of darkness will change into a state of twilight. Now these souls will be stirred by an impulse for life, and they will become hopeful, they want to live in order to become active, and their resolve will also give them the strength.

Light is knowledge, light is truth, and thus light is the only thing that needs to be transferred to the souls in darkness so that they, too, will awaken to life. And this is why you will always be besieged by light-hungry souls which want to participate in the transference of light when My Word is conveyed to you, when I enlighten you humans, when I impart the pure truth to you through My spirit. This is why there will always be a glowing light attracting countless souls as soon as you make contact with Me in order to receive My Word. For the concept of light in the spiritual kingdom only ever has to be understood as the transference of the pure truth from Me. Light is realization, light is knowledge which originates from Me, which is radiated by Me Myself to earth in order to penetrate the darkness, to enable you humans to become blessed, but which you only ever will be able to receive if you make contact with Me, with the light of eternity."

Doctrine of Re-incarnation - Misguided teaching - Celestial bodies

BD No. 4590 of 03/17/1949 taken from book 53

God the Father is speaking: "Do not be misled by supposed contradictions, rather, see the reason in the fact that your ability of comprehension does not

always suffice in order to understand something properly, and that there need not be a contradiction, but you only suppose it to be. It should be sufficient for you to know that I will never teach you wrongly and that I will always give you the information such that it will benefit your soul.

The doctrine of karma does not encourage you to increase your spiritual endeavor. It is far more likely to encourage you to conduct your life half-heartedly in the spiritual sense. For this reason alone, it is of little benefit for the soul, and it does not meet My full approval that you humans count on a return to earth and as a result become negligent in your effort. Although I support the soul's higher development in every way, and wherever I recognize a reliable opportunity to advance your soul's maturity I Am willing to give My consent, but it always has to be on the basis of My lawful eternal order and never for the sake of a deliberately created opportunity. Hence it must be understandable to you that I will not inform you of a repeated process of development on this earth, which presupposes your total failure during your earthly life, but that I would like to protect you from this failure, and therefore caution, warn and instruct you in order to prevent a failure.

It would be a wrong instruction if I were to offer you the prospect of another path to reach your goal while the right path is still ahead of you, thus you should, and could, walk this path with correct use of your will. I only inform you of the infinite number of previous embodiments because I want you to become aware of your great responsibility for the short path of earthly life. This knowledge is only intended to increase your effort, but you should not draw the wrong conclusion and neglect your endeavor in the hope of repeating your incarnation on this earth if you do not reach your goal. My spirit will definitely enlighten you, and if you ask Me faithfully, I will let you know through My servants to what extent your thoughts are correct.

If you knew of the endless many opportunities to achieve maturity on the innumerable celestial bodies in the universe, you would never come to the conclusion that a soul will be returned again to earth. However, the immature soul has to go through many more embodiments indeed where it is able to prove itself and thereby make further progress. Thus, the doctrine of re-incarnation is in fact based on truth but it does not mean that the soul will be born again in the flesh on this earth. It merely indicates the many opportunities of higher development on other creations, where the soul, either in physical or in spiritual form, is again presented with a task, the fulfillment of which will assure its ascent. It is an exception if a soul returns to this earth again to fulfill a spiritual mission, it cannot be generalized; Souls having passed away in a state of immaturity will also deem themselves living on earth. The areas they occupy make them believe that they were transported to extremely dreary, barren stretches of land, but they are actually on another planet which is suited to their souls' maturity, and which is inhabited by the most primitive creations, resulting in a meager, depressive stay for the souls.... This is an opportunity for purification of very materialistic minded people, who have to overcome their desire in order to be placed on another work of creation for the purpose of further ascent, depending on their will.

You still love this earth too much and therefore associate the word 're-incarnation' only with this earth as the dwelling place for a re-incarnated soul. But you should consider My love's incredibly extensive work of creation, which only

came about for the countless spiritual beings who have to take the path to perfection, and who will take this path in some form or other, in physical creations, as long as the soul is not yet spiritualized and receptive for light, and in spiritual creations, where the spiritual soul can constantly ascend too, where it purifies itself ever more and makes itself receptive for the emanation of Myself.

Imagine eternity, behold the starry sky whose countless stars are the creations of My will of love, destined to accept souls in need of development, and you will realize that this earth is not the only carrier of beings who are supposed to ascend and that it is truly not necessary to return the failed souls to earth again, although it is the only place for achieving the childship to God, but it cannot be deliberately and repeatedly chosen as a place to mature.

And thus, the doctrine of frequent re-incarnation on this earth will have to be declared as a misguided teaching, which needs to be opposed as being harmful for souls, because it weakens people's will and endangers the being's sincere change in view of the expectation to be able to make up for any neglect in a repeated life until ultimate perfection."

The Souls' Fate after Death Varies

BD No. 8745 of 02/05/1964 taken from book 92

God the Father is speaking: "I Am present with you Myself when you hear My Word, and My presence has to fill you with light and strength because I Am the primary source of light and strength Myself. The fact that you do not feel it in a purely physical way cannot be helped for your own sake, since My permeation of light would destroy your weak body if I did not just impart it to the soul which is already able to tolerate a greater measure of light and strength and is happy in this state.

Hence you have to believe this, for I cannot provide you with any other evidence but for the fact that you hear My Word and that this Word also has to make your soul very happy, it demonstrates My direct contact after all, for My Word is strength and light and this is what you hold on to, it cannot vanish anymore, it is the obvious sign of My presence which continues to please you even if you detach yourselves from this heartfelt bond by complying with the world and its requirements again. But you have an abundance of light and strength and are able to resist all temptations by the world, you constantly look into My direction, and you will no longer leave Me, just as I will not let go of you, who have become My Own through your heartfelt bond with Me.

And time and again I want to delight you anew by initiating you into profound secrets, into knowledge which only I Am able to impart to you, because it touches on spiritual areas which are still locked to you as human beings as long as I Myself don't open them for you. And such knowledge will always please you and demonstrate My boundless love for you:

The transition from earthly existence into the spiritual realm entirely corresponds to a person's state of maturity and varies considerably. A still imperfectly shaped soul possessing little love usually does not know that it is physically dead, it still moves within the same environment and just can't quite understand itself, for it keeps coming across obstacles arising from the fact that it still believes that it is alive and yet it is neither listened to nor able to do the things it used to do on earth. And such souls are also in darkness which, corresponding to their low degree of love is impenetrable or occasionally changes into a faint state of twilight. A soul like that is not blessed, it wanders about, it clings to similarly natured souls on earth, it tries to impose its thoughts on them and resists all beings wishing to improve its position, which can last, or even get worse, as long as it does not withdraw and reflect on its state.

If, however, a soul departs from earth which had not lived a bad way of life, which even had acquired small merits through deeds of love but had little will to believe and failed to find Me in Jesus on earth, it will also be frequently unaware that it is no longer physically alive on earth, it will walk through vast deserted regions, admittedly in a slight twilight yet unable to perceive anything, it will meet no other beings and be alone with its thoughts. And it will still dwell on many worldly thoughts, hanker after many different things and grieve its lack of possessions, which it is unable to understand and thus believes that it was placed into barren stretches of land as a result of disasters or by people with ill-intentions, and will then keep looking for ways out.

And it is possible that it will wander through such areas for an infinitely long time until, due to the bleakness, it will gradually change its way of thinking and subsequently also meet similarly minded beings, which will then signify a small ascent. As soon as it is able to communicate with others it will be possible to instruct such souls, for they are usually approached by beings of light under the same cover in order to help them become aware of themselves. And then these souls will also gradually start their ascent.

And a soul which leaves its earthly body having recognized Me on earth, having lived a life of love, believing in Me in Jesus and is thus redeemed from its original sin, will enter the kingdom of light, that is, it will find itself in a delightful region where it will feel profoundly happy, where it will be met by beings which, like itself, are permeated by light, it will meet its loved ones again, it will have discarded all earthly heaviness, it will be able to move itself to wherever it desires to be, wherever it wants to stay, it will experience the kind of bliss it had no idea of on earth, it will come aglow with burning love for Me, Who prepares such splendors for you, it will also recognize in a flash what it didn't know before, be it awareness of profound wisdom, be it the spiritual sphere which cannot even remotely be described to you on earth, overflowing with love it will turn towards the beings requiring its help, be it on earth or also in the kingdom of the beyond. It will want to serve Me in utter devotion and unite with equally mature beings for greatest activation of strength in order to tackle rescue missions which necessitate immense power. The transition from earth into the spiritual kingdom is but an awakening from a hitherto dead state into life for these souls. For now that it has attained true life, it considers the state as a human being merely as a state of death, and with an abundance of merciful love it will devote itself to the 'still dead'

in order to help them come alive as well. For 'eye has not seen, nor ear heard, the things which I have prepared for those who love Me.'

If only you humans on earth were able to get an idea of what fate might await you on the other side, you would truly strive to create this fate for yourselves; yet this knowledge cannot be given to you in advance, it can certainly be presented to you, but as long as you have no evidence of it the knowledge will mean too little to you as to make serious use of it.

Nevertheless, it is extremely wonderful for a soul if it is able to immediately exchange its life on earth after death with the spiritual kingdom, if it no longer has to go through the difficult process of maturing in the beyond, for this can often necessitate an infinitely long time if it does not receive loving intercession on part of people, and again, only those will experience this intercession if loving thoughts follow them, and this will only ever be gained by the person who has carried out labors of love himself. In that case his further development will proceed more easily, and the longing to meet his loved ones again can also be a great incentive, just as every instructing spiritual friend will help him to reach maturity faster, if his instructions are accepted by the soul. But as long as you humans live on earth you will be unable to form an accurate concept, just as the various spheres in which the souls will be able to stay can only vaguely be described to you. And every human being should be grateful for all kinds of ailments and afflictions, which will guarantee to lead to a better fate for the soul, irrespective of its nature, than if it would depart from earth without suffering, providing its degree of love and faith do not assure the soul the kingdom of light.

Yet the majority of people are without love and faith in Jesus Christ. And their transition from life to death will not be a pleasant one, for they will meet on the other side what they had pursued on earth. The longing for the earthly world will still be excessive in worldly people and yet no longer be fulfilled, in its illusive existence the soul will indeed create a world for itself, however, it will soon realize that it only created mental images, until it eventually loses interest and realizes that it is in a miserable state and yearns to change its situation. Then it will also receive help.

Yet even those who neither lived a good nor a bad life on earth cannot expect an enviably fate in the kingdom of the beyond. Admittedly, they will not be depressed by most profound darkness, yet their lack of knowledge will torment them, for they cannot understand why they are unable to see anything, unable to speak to anyone and yet exist. They will have little strength, and only when they think of Me will it become a little lighter around themselves, and only then will My messengers of light be able to cross their path and help them to improve their situation, providing they allow themselves to be taught and let go of their previous attitudes. But blessed are those who won't have all these difficult experiences in the kingdom of the beyond, for whom the kingdom of light is open and who may take possession of all glories which the Father offers to His children in abundance because I (He) love them and now they also respond to My (His) love."

Chapter 5: Beyond the Threshold

Ref: Beyond the Threshold by Jakob Lorber July 27, 1847

Deathbed scenes: A famous man. A scholar, A rich man, A young lady of fashion, A general, A Pope, A minister, Reunion in the Great Beyond . . .

Deathbed scenes A HINT FOR THE READER While recording the "Deathbed Scenes" Lorber received an additional message, which was meant to facilitate the comprehension of that which is here being presented and because of its importance serves as an introduction. It is also intended to answer criticism declaring certain scenes and phrases incompatible with the divine inspiration of these dictations – *without considering that the soul in the beyond, prior to uniting with its spirit, cannot think, talk and act otherwise.* Here the statement: ... "Some scenes are here rendered pictorially and verbally as they really take place in the spirit world, so as to give clear proof to the reader of this revelation of the following fact: *man, after the shedding of his body, remains exactly the same person as to his outward appearance, his language, his opinions, his habits, behavior, inclinations and passions. This applies also to his actions arising from the latter. All this is so until he has achieved the full spiritual rebirth. Therefore, this condition after transition is called the "natural (material) spirituality", while a fully reborn spirit finds himself in the condition of the "pure spirituality". However, the locality is always a reflection of the true inner nature of the spirits concerned".*

May this hint be of help to the new reader of the presented scenes in the beyond and of the great works on the beyond which because of their volume, appear as separate works.

Introduction:

The Transition from the Material to the Spiritual Life

Ref: Beyond the Threshold by Jakob Lorber July 27, 1847

"Brother A. wants to know how the transition from the material to the spiritual life or the so-called life in the beyond takes place, particularly with the worldly great. This transition can be quite easily and naturally described. You see, what difference does it make to the water, as to whether an important man or a poor, insignificant one falls into it? Listen, both will drown in the same manner! Or what distinction does the fire make? Listen, it will consume the emperor as well as the beggar! If a beggar and a minister or emperor were to fall from a tower at the same time, both the one and the other will come to his death through his sudden fall. What distinction does the grave make between great and little, between rich and poor, beautiful and ugly or young and old? You see, none at all! Everything decays and becomes the filth of worms and, finally, insignificant dust. As the body fares in the realm of the so-called natural forces, the soul fares in the realm of the spirit. Whether it was a beggar or an emperor on earth, in the realm of spirits this is completely irrelevant. No one is given special treatment. In this way no one's pride is nourished, and the great man is no longer blinded by his greatness and the poor man – having suffered much hardship in the world – no longer by his claim on the Kingdom of Heaven, nor the pious by his expected reward of the Kingdom of Heaven. As often mentioned, in the beyond – mind you – in the beyond nothing but the purest love is of value. Everything else is like rocks thrown into the ocean, where the diamond sinks down into the eternal, stinking slime, just like the most common sandstone. In themselves they remain what they are and what they were outside of the ocean, but their fate is the same, only with the difference that the sandstone is dissolved sooner than the diamond. This applies in the beyond also to the worldly nobility or to the worldly lowliness. In the ocean slime of the inexorable eternity, they will continue for a long time, fancying to be what they once were in the world. There the emperor will fancy to be emperor and the beggar, with the claim for compensation, a beggar. In spite of that, in the great Reality both will share the same fate in the ocean slime of eternity. Only the poor man should go through fermentation sooner, where his nature will be filled sooner

with the true, innermost little bubbles of humility, which will then pull him out of the mire, carving him up to eternal light and life, then the emperor or some other great man of the world. You can precisely judge the transition of every human being according to this pattern or this cardinal rule. Therefore, adhere to love, lest you share the common fate one day. Amen, Amen, Amen."

Death Bed Scenes:

A Famous Man

(28 July 1847)

Jesus is speaking: "Let us go to the sickbed of a great, very famous man of the world – some hours prior to his transition to eternity and look at his behavior here and his entrance into the beyond and how the two worlds meet and merge with one glance, and you will immediately and clearly see that the aforementioned cardinal rule describes the full truth.

You see, this man's deeds and actions in the world were of such a kind and carried out on such a soil – the resounding echo of which traverses the whole earth like a hissing meteor, so that they drew the eyes of all people to them and, on account of the strong ground echo, were heard on all points of the earth and thoroughly described and discussed pro and contra on so much paper as to cover all Europe with it. Now this great man, this philanthropist, this ardent pseudo fighter for the political and religious interests of his nation, is lying stretched out full length on his bed, full of despair and fear because of the approaching last hour, which he can no longer hope to escape.

In a sort of numb, painful confusion he, an atheist in secret, alternately sees the eternal destruction of his existence and feels the presumed pains of decay, for which reason he stipulates for embalmment. Expecting not ever to wake up in the grave, his heart and bowels must be separated from the body and, to prevent these severed parts from boredom, they must be buried in such a spot which is not too infrequently visited by people.

In the midst of such devastating thoughts, Catholicism intrudes with its painful threats of hell, at which the man had laughed while expecting to live for a hundred years. But like quickly fleeing furies, they return and plague the heart of the dying man horribly, which is conscious of many a great sin. And so neither communion nor extreme unction, or the many Masses and the loud ringing of the bells can set his heart at rest. In the sight of his soul the flames of hell burn all the more horribly and eternally.

Now all his former manly vigor and all his philosophy are at an end and his breaking heart is sinking already into the growing night of death. And the soul, threatened by the greatest fear from all sides, looks with the last gasps for a little spark in the already dying furrows of the heart, which once had so much worldly courage. But everywhere there is emptiness and, instead of consolation, it is faced with eternal destruction or with hell and all its pain.

Thus, it looks on this side; now let us also take a glance into the beyond. Look, three veiled angels are standing by the identical bedside of our man gazing at him.

Now A says to B: “Brother, I think for this one it is over. On this thornbush no earthly grapes will appear. Look how his soul is twisting and wriggling without finding a way out and how stunted the poor spirit in it looks! So, reach with your hand into the already rigid intestines and snatch this miserable soul from its night, and I shall breathe at it in the name of the Lord and awaken it for this world. And you, Brother C, lead it then on the Lord’s paths toward its destination according to the freedom of its love. So be it!”

Now the Angel B reaches into the bowels of our man and speaks: “In the name of the Lord, awake and become liberated, brother, according to your love. So be it!”

On this side, the mortal remains now sink into the dust, but in the beyond a blind soul is rising!

But the angel steps up to him and says: “Brother, why are you blind?” And the newly awakened one says: “I am blind. If you can, make me see, so that I may learn what has happened to me, for all of a sudden, all my pains have left me!”

Thereupon A breathes into the eyes of the awakened and he opens them and looks around in amazement. Seeing no one except angel C, he asks him: “Who are you? And where am I? And what has happened to me?"

Answers the angel: “I am a messenger of God, of the Lord Jesus Christ, destined to lead you on the Lord’s paths, if you desire it. You, however, are now bodily forever dead for the outer, material world and are now in the spirit world.

Two paths are open to you: the path to the Lord in the heavens or the path to the realm of hell. Now, it is completely up to you as to what you will do. For you see, you are here completely free and can do what you like. You will fare well if you let yourself be guided by me. However, if you prefer to be your own master, you are also free to do so. But this much know, namely, that here there is only *one* God, *one* Lord and *one* judge, who is Jesus, the One Whom they crucified in the world! Adhere to Him alone, and you will attain to the true light and to life. Everything else will be deception and illusion of your own fantasy, in which you are now living hearing this from me.”

Thereupon says the awakened one: “This is a new doctrine and in contrast to the doctrine of Rome and therefore a heresy! And you, who are trying to impose it on me in this remote spot, seem to be rather an emissary of hell than of heaven; so leave me alone and do not tempt me any longer.”

And the angel C says: “Good, in the name of the Lord Jesus your freedom relieves me of my care for you. Therefore, the light be given to you; so be it!”

Then the angel C disappears and the newly awakened one enters his natural-material sphere and is among his acquaintances in the world and hardly remembers what has happened to him. And so, he continues to live in the world like before, doing what he used to do and caring little about heaven or hell and even less about Me, the Lord. For all these are for him three vague things held up to ridicule, like a dream, and whosoever should remind him of these things is told to leave him alone.

You see, from this first example you can already gather into what kind of “water” our great, famous man has fallen. The following examples will elucidate this matter even further.”

A Scholar

(2 August 1847)

Jesus s speaking: "Let us go to the sickbed of a scholar, for the preservation of whose life – as you like to say – there is no longer a herb growing. There we look at this second famous man and see how he spends the last hours of this life, how he awakens in the beyond and into what direction his love points him.

The man whom we shall put under scrutiny was in the world a philosopher as well as an astronomer "in optima forma", as you say.

In his great zeal to investigate the stars, this man has reached an age of seventy-odd years. On a very cold winter's night, while watching the stars, he caught a cold and was found almost frozen stiff at his telescope. Taken to his warm lodgings by his friends, he was provided with the best possible medical care, so that after a few hours he had rallied sufficiently to make known to his friends his so-called last will and testament, which was as follows:

"In the name of the inscrutable Deity! Not knowing how long the inscrutable Fate will allow a man to hang on to this miserable life and not knowing what will replace it, this is my will. First of all, I want you, my dear friends, if I should die, to preserve my body through embalmment and take it in a well-made copper coffin to a vault containing several of my most esteemed colleagues, who, as it were, are waiting for me. But the entrails, which are first to decay, preserve in alcohol in a special urn and display them in my museum in a conspicuous spot. In this way I win live on at least in the memory of the people since there is no hope of survival after physical death anyway.

As for my property, you, my friends, know anyway that in this world a scholar rarely ever has more than is absolutely necessary for his daily spiritual and physical sustenance, and so it is now with me as it has always been. I have never had any money and can, therefore, leave none. Soon after my demise sell what I have to leave, so that you can do with the money what I first asked you to do.

When I am deceased, inform my three children, who are all well provided for; the eldest son, my favorite child, who follows in my footsteps, shall inherit my books and writings in their entirety and as soon as feasible arrange for the publication of my unedited writings.

This is my last will concerning this beautiful stellar world, which henceforth I shall no longer behold and consider.

Oh, what a miserable being man is! Full of noble ideas, full of hopes for a beyond while he is still treading the earth as a healthy man, but before the open grave all that evaporates like the dreams and imaginings of a child and their place is taken by the sad reality, namely death as the last moment of our existence and with it, annihilation which knows no limits!

Oh friends, it is a heavy, terrible thought to pass from "existence" to "non-existence" for the one who, like I, now stands at the open grave! My innermost is calling out to me: you die, you are dying! Only a few minutes, and the black night of eternal, limitless annihilation has seized your whole being!" Oh friends, this call is horrifying for the one standing on the brink of the grave, looking with one eye at the dear beautiful stars and with the other at the eternal, dead night, where no idea enlivens the decaying ashes, no consciousness, no memory!

Where will this dust have been blown to in a thousand years? Which gale will unravel it from its grave, which wave of the ocean, or which other, new grave will swallow it?

Oh friends, give me a drink, for I am terribly thirsty. Give me a consolation to lessen my great fear! Give me of the best wine, so that I refresh myself once more and, intoxicated, find it easier to wait for the terrible death!

Oh, you horrible death, you greatest disgrace for the majestic human spirit, which has created such glorious things and made discoveries to its greatest honor! This spirit must now die, the greatest disgrace is its reward: death, eternal annihilation!

Oh Fatum, Oh Deity, having created eternal stars, why not create an immortal human being? Oh folly, how great you must be in the Deity to take a pleasure in creating what is most noble only to destroy it again forever or to form ignominious worms or infusorian out of human beings!

Must I die? Why must I die? What did I do, what did millions do to deserve death? Truly, a better creation could have been established in a madhouse than this mortal one by a supposedly wise Deity!"

Here the surrounding friends and doctors admonish our astronomer to calm down, if he wants to recover. For it was nowhere written that he had to die because of this certainly very heavy cold; on the other hand, such mighty emotional upsets could in all earnest cost him his life.

This admonition had little effect on our astronomer, for he flared up even more and said in great excitement: "Away, away with your help! Away with this miserable accursed life! If man cannot live forever, life is the greatest and most disgraceful deception, and death and non-existence only the truth. The wise man must be embarrassed about such a sham life lasting from today till tomorrow. Therefore, I will no longer live! This most miserable life now disgusts me a thousand times more than the most miserable death. Therefore, give me poison, give me the strongest poison, so that I can get rid of this sham life as soon as possible. A curse on such a life, such a gnat's life, and eternal shame to the primordial force or Deity or whatever sort of sewer spirit it may be, which could not or would not give a life to the noble man which would compare favorably with the stars in duration also.

So away with this life, away with this divine deception! If it cannot give a better life to man, why should man care for it; let it keep such a life! Good-bye, my dear friends. I am dying, I want to die, yes, I must die, for as a most noble human spirit I could now no longer bear the shame of this sham life!"

Here the doctors again admonish our astronomer to calm down. But he falls silent, not saying another word. The doctors give him musk, but he flings it away. They entreat him to take medicine, but he talks less and less and begins to gasp for air. He is given massage in an attempt to rouse him from his lethargy, but in vain. After some time, the death rattle subsides, but it is replaced by a strong delirium – as it appears to the world, in which the astronomer says the following words with a hollow, shrieking voice:

"Where are you, which I loved so much, your beautiful stars? Are you ashamed of me, hiding your lovely countenance from me? Oh, do not be ashamed of me, for the same fate, which has now come upon me, is in store for you. Also,

you will die as I have now died. But for this do not be angry with the weak Creator, as I was angry with Him. You see, He surely had the best intention, but too little wisdom and power, wherefore all His works are so feeble and perishable. He would certainly have done better if He had never created anything, thereby making only a fool of Himself before us, His wise created beings; for an imperfect work cannot be traced back to a perfect Master. Therefore, no more recriminations for the poor fellow of a Creator, who will in the end have to do to sustain Himself beyond the limitless transience of all His works.

Oh, you poor Creator! Only now can I see that you are surely a thoroughly good being and would have the greatest joy Yourself, if Your creation had been a greater success, but "ultra-posse nemo tenetu" (nobody can go beyond his capabilities). A scoundrel who tries to do more than he can. You, however, did not go beyond Your capabilities, and so you are no scoundrel!

Oh, you good man Jesus, who has given to the world the wisest moral teaching together with many a pseudo miracle! You too relied too much on your presumed God – Father, who then forsook you owing to his evident weakness exactly when it would have been time to support you with an omnipotence scattering your enemies like chaff! When you were hanging on the pillory, it was surely too late to exclaim: "My God, My God, why hast thou forsaken Me!" For you see, your God has had to forsake you long ago because he lost the power to support you, as well as now me. He did what he could, and would have liked to do more, but, you see, also here the "ultra posse nemo tenetur" still holds good.

Oh, but this is ridiculous. Now I have died, but I am still alive, like a deceived donkey. The funniest part is that I am under the impression that it is a sheer impossibility ever to die! But where did the earth glide to, and where are my good friends? I hear and see nothing except myself alone. At the same time I am fully conscious, my memory clearly reaching far back beyond my mother's womb. It is truly strange! Should the Deity try to show me that it can achieve more than I have expected of It lately? Or is my body still alive at the last moment of its annihilation, my present life resembling the afterglow of those suns which became extinct trillions of years ago and live on only in the emanation of the light through the infinite space?

However, as for such a sham life, which, mathematically thinking, must last forever, because the emanating ray can never meet a finite border and can therefore never be completely extinguished, I am now only too clearly aware, indeed, a thousand times more clearly than of anything in my whole earthly life. Only, as mentioned before, that I hear nothing and see nothing but myself. Oh, oh, quiet now! It seems to me as if I heard a low murmur, a whisper! Also, a light, very sweet sleep is trying to overwhelm me. Yet it is no sleep, no, no, it is only like awaking from a sleep?! But now quiet, quiet; I hear voices from afar, voices I know, well-known voices! Quiet, they are coming, they are coming closer!"

Here our astronomer fell completely silent, not even moving his lips. From this the friends and doctors surrounding him concluded that this meant his end was near; and anyway half the speech rendered here was heard by those present more like a gasping shrieking than an articulated expression of a presumed inner fantasy of the dying organism.

The doctors went to any length to revive him – but in vain – and allowed the astronomer who, they thought, had sunk into the most profound lethargy, to rest, waiting to let nature take its course. However, they waited in vain, for nature affected nothing but the soon occurring real death.

Where for the doctors the "ultima linea rerum" (the ultimate goal of things) is reached, they take their leave. And we too take our leave, but not like the doctors but like spirits, who can follow the just deceased man also into the beyond and observe what he will do there and where he will turn.

Look, he is still, just as in the world, on his bed and apart from the three angels mentioned no one is present. And over there, behind the three messengers there is Somebody Else!

Listen, he is still talking, saying: "You see, now I hear nothing again. What sort of acoustic deceptions had there been? Hm, hm, now everything is as quiet as a mouse. Do I still exist or am I dead? Oh, I am under no circumstances dead, for I have sensations, have the clearest awareness, thinking, remembering everything I have ever done in every detail, only the night, the night, the accursed night, which will not go! I must try to call out aloud for fun's sake, perhaps somebody will hear me for fun's sake?! Hallo! No one near who could help me out of this night? Help me, if someone happens to be in my vicinity!"

Now messenger A speaks up saying to B: "Brother, lift him out of his grave!" And messenger B bends over the astronomer and speaks: "Let there be what the Lord of all life and existence wants in all eternity: rise from your earthly grave, you earthly brother!"

You see, in an instant the astronomer rises, and his body falls back like a dissolving mist! But the astronomer calls out: "Brother, since you have pulled me out of the grave, pull me also out of my night!" And the messenger C speaks: "Thus it is from eternity the Lord's will that all His created beings, and particularly His children, shall have light and walk in clear vision in the light. So, open your immortal eyes and look and see what you will like. So be it."

Now for the first time in the spiritual world the astronomer opens his eyes and sees his surroundings clearly. And he is very happy to see, according to his idea, people again and the ground on which he stands. But now he asks: "Dear friends, where are you? And where am I? For on the one hand this looks very familiar and on the other hand very strange. Besides, I feel so light and unusually healthy and do not quite understand how I got here and how the power of your words made me see. For I was stone-blind in earnest."

Angel A speaks: "You have died for the world according to the body and are now – forever alive according to your soul and your spirit – here in the actual true world of life of the spirits. We three are angels of the Lord, sent to you to awaken you and guide you on the right road to the Lord, your God and our God, to your Father full of love, patience and mercy, Who is our Father also, holy, exceedingly holy, Whom in your last hour on earth you called "a weak Deity", since you were blind, and Who forgave you everything because you were blind and weak. Now you know everything, do accordingly, and you will be forever exceedingly blissful, like we are!"

The astronomer says: "Brothers, friends of God, lead me wherever you like, and I will follow you! But if ever I should have the endless grace of beholding God,

do strengthen me mightily. For I am feeling forever to miserable, despicable and worthless to bear this most holy sight. But there I see somebody else who regards us in a most friendly manner. Who is this Glorious One? Surely also a messenger of the heavens?"

Angel A says: "Yes, probably a messenger of all the heavens. Go to Him, the road is short. He Himself will reveal it to you."

The astronomer goes; and the certain Somebody goes to meet him and says: "Brother, do you not know Me?" And the astronomer replies: "How should I know you, since I see you for the first time? Who are you, dear, glorious brother?"

The Friendliest One speaks: "Look at My stigmata. You see, I am your weak Jesus and come to meet you to help your weakness with My weakness, for if I were to meet you with My strengths, you would have no life. You see, every beginning life is a tender plant, which cannot live without air, but the gale kills the life of the plant. Thus, I too am only a tender breeze which meets you to revive you fully, not a gale to destroy you. Love Me as I have loved you from eternity, and you will have the true eternal life.

Speaks the astronomer: "O You my most beloved Jesus! So, it is You, Who gave the most glorious teaching to the dwellers of the earth and was crucified for it?! Oh, teach me also the right path leading to God, which you taught. You shall not ever be crucified for it by me! However, if possible, let me at the same time contemplate in full clarity the great creation, which has been my main concern all my life.

Speaks Jesus: "Your road to God will not be far if you will enter it at once. If, however, you first want to travel through your stars, you will have a long road. Now choose what you prefer!"

Speaks the astronomer: "My most beloved Jesus, you see, I am far from being ready for God. So, if you can, help me to mature in the stars."

Speaks the Lord: "It will be done to you according to your love! Choose one out of these three angels, who will guide you and will show you at the end of your journey who your presumed Jesus is, whom you know as a man who was crucified."

Here you can again see how this astronomer is looking for his "water" in which alone he wants to swim towards Me, not heeding the fact that I had already been with him and he with Me! Therefore, beware of the too learned water of the astronomers and geologists, for it does not draw to Me, but after the love of science!

This longer example is for this purpose. Amen.

A Rich Man

(3 August 1847)

Jesus is speaking: "Here we are again, at the deathbed of a man, who was very rich, managed his wealth justly, brought up his children in the best possible manner and with all that always gave freely to the poor – of course also now and again for a so-called jolly hour to those poor but young harlots, who can be had for such jolly things for a ducat. Besides, he held the Holy Scriptures in great esteem, reading often and diligently in them and firmly believing that Jesus was

actually Jehovah. All this he learnt from the works of Swedenborg, all of which, with the exception of a few minor books, he had read.

Such literacy made him also flare up whenever he heard someone talk indifferently or even in a belittling manner of Jesus; and if he met such an "Antichrist" among his company, this person did well to leave early or else had to expect evil consequences, even physical attacks. In short, our man was a perfect paragon of pure Christianity.

This man fell ill at a rather advanced age after a great banquet where he had too much to eat, but particularly because after the meal, his blood being stirred up owing to the many strong wines imbibed, he cohabited twice with a young, voluptuous harlot.

When our man came home after this expedition, he felt a slight dizziness, which he mistook for intoxication. And as soon as he tried to get into bed, his legs failed him. He collapsed and was instantly completely dead, as you say.

It goes without saying that his loved ones, in great alarm, at once tried everything to revive the householder. But it was a vain effort, for whatsoever has once been picked up by angel spirits, will not wake up again for this world.

Therefore, not much more can be seen and heard in this world of this man, and so we will proceed at once to the spirit world and see how our man fits in, what he is going to do and where he turns to.

First of all, you must know that people who have suffered a stroke do not know and are not in the least aware of the fact that, and how, they have died. They find no change, nor in their household, as it was on earth, nor in their physical well-being, except that they are quite healthy, which they have usually been in the world also. Also, they fail to see angels, although these are close by, and they see nothing at all of the spirit world in which they are certainly and completely. In short, in everything they are still, as it were, in the world. They eat and drink, living where they always lived, in their house and within the circle of their family, where they miss no member of their family.

Thus, it was and is exactly the same case with our man – look, already in the spirit world. He gets into bed in good spirits in his well-known bedroom, which is in every detail identical to the one on earth. See how comfortably he stretches out on his bed seeking and expecting sleep! But this single detail makes our man somewhat puzzled, namely, that this time he cannot find any sleep, for sleep is unknown to spirits. Although they have a corresponding condition, which is there called rest, essentially it has not the slightest resemblance to the earthly sleep.

Now let us listen to our man personally and see how he is behaving in his new condition and what he thinks of it. Listen to what he is now saying while in his bed: "You, Lini, are you asleep?" Lini (his wife) sits up in bed and asks: "What do you want, dear Leopold, is anything the matter with you?" (Wife and children and others belonging to the household are represented as it were undercover by specially commissioned angels). Says the man: "No, nothing is the matter, I am quite well, heaven be praised. Only sleep, not the slightest resemblance to sleep is there. Go and give me my sleeping pills; I shall swallow a few, perhaps it will be all right then."

Lini gets up and fulfils her husband's will. But although the pills have been swallowed, sleep will not come.

After a while the man says: “Lini, go, give me a few more, for you see, I still cannot find any sleep. Instead of becoming sleepier, I am becoming more and more lively.”

Lini says: “Go on, forget the pills; you could easily spoil your stomach with them. Instead, make love to me, and you will perhaps have a better chance to sleep, since you want to sleep at all costs.”

Says the man in some consternation: “Yes, dear Lini, concerning the act, it may have its difficulty with me. For you know from long experience that I am never disposed of to it after a great feast. For in that case, nature refuses to cooperate. So, give me a few more pills instead!”

Says the wife: “Strange, my dear husband! But rumor has it that the rich, pious Leopold after such feasts usually goes to one Cilli, making love to her so that a youth could take an example from him. But if later the faithful, somewhat more aged Lini points out to him that she is Leopold’s wife and sometimes for certain reasons cannot find any sleep either, Leopold has always a thousand theosophical, philosophical and God knows what reasons with which to appease the wife’s justified and anyway rarely made demands. Look, Leopold, you friend of truth, how do you feel in secret when you utter such despicable and truly hypocritical lies to me, your always most faithful wife? How often you painted to me the ignominy of adultery in the most glaring colors! What do you say for yourself, if I can prove to you beyond doubt that you yourself are an adulterer?"

Says the husband, quite taken aback: “Lini, dear wife, how is it that you know such deeds of mine? Truly, this I could have done only heavily intoxicated, and if I did it, I count on your Christian patience with my human weakness, hoping you will not use it to dishonor our whole house! Be reasonable, dear wife, be reasonable and stop talking about it. You see, I still love you exceedingly. Just be good again, be good, my dear Lini wife, and I shall never again do this in all my life!”

Says Lini: “I believe that too. If someone has lived all his life like that, deceiving his faithful wife at least every two weeks and even contracting several times a nasty sickness, it will certainly be time to forget such actions, of which Scripture says: “Whoremongers and adulterers will not enter the Kingdom of Heaven!” Do tell me, my in all theosophy well-informed husband, what would you do if the Lord should suddenly call you away? How about your blissfulness in that case? Or do you have a written statement by the Lord, saying that He will let you love until your thorough betterment? I do not want to say anything on account of one Cilli, but what shall I say about the unmistakable amorous attachment to our own eldest daughter, which prior to her marriage you demonstrated in a manner as to imprint on your theosophical forehead an indelible blemish before God and all people, provided they knew about it? Or what will God say about it?”

Says the husband, even more startled: “O wife, you are beginning to torment me in earnest. Of course, it is, alas, justified, for it would be more than silly of me to deny it. But it is still hurtful, and I fail to comprehend how you, who as far as I know in all our married years never made mention of it, suddenly open all locks trying to downright destroy me?”

“Consider that we human beings are all weak in our flesh, even though we have the willing spirit, and you will easily forgive me all my weaknesses!

Remember that the Lord did not condemn the adulteress, and so also a repentant adulterer will surely find mercy with Him. Therefore, also you, dear wife, do not judge me, for I certainly confess and repent my great sin against you as well as the grievous sin against our married daughter. May the Lord Jesus forgive me, as you are forgiving me."

The phantom wife says: "Well then, let all that has happened be forgiven you in full. But see that from now on you no longer abuse your pretended weakness, or you will derive little blessing from this fullest forgiveness on my part! Therefore, I shall bear with you for some time more – and see! But you will not ever sleep, for look and listen you are no longer on the earth, but here in the world of spirits! And I, whom you mistook for your often mad wife, am not your wife, but – observe – I am your Lord and your God! Remain as you are, if you like; however, if you want to progress, follow Me out of this your old phantom room!"

The man recognizes Me and falls on his face before Me, speechless.

But I say to him: "Raise yourself up; for your love is greater than your sin, and thus everything is forgiven you! However, with Me you cannot as yet take your abode, as long as anything earthly is clinging to you. But look, angels are standing there in readiness, who will guide you on the right paths. And when your earthly house will be smitten with want and poverty by your guides, you will find a new abode with Me forever. Amen!"

You see, this is again another "water". Some remain for a longer time in the natural state like the one of our men. The reason why it was so short was because he did many loving and good deeds while on the earth and because he immediately showed earnest remorse for his transgression.

A Dandy

(5 August 1847)

This is the last hour and the early death of a dandy, who apart from tobacco smoking, gambling, gluttony, drink, paying court to all the better-looking females and being an excellent dancer and player of waltzes for the sake of this beautiful world, did not know much, although he had spent almost all his time at colleges and universities. The dandy demonstrated here was the son of rather wealthy parents, who, of course, allowed their promising, enormously spoilt son to take up all sorts of studies as soon as he had mastered the ABC.

So that the tender boy during the difficult learning of the Latin language should not do too badly, he was given into a very good boarding-house, where he had plenty to eat and could grow; however, not in wisdom and in favor with God and men, but only in body. And so that he should not waste away with all this heavy learning, he was allowed to repeat each year in case he could not finish – naturally in the easiest manner – a grade in one year. For this purpose, the professors, particularly in the lower grades, were heavily bribed and for every subject a goodhearted instructor was taken on.

In this way our student narrowly made it through the lower grades, only his head benefited little or nothing in this manner. As a consequence, he continually failed to pass in the higher grades. And since he had no great liking for learning,

he applied himself mainly to the above-mentioned free arts, namely smoking, gambling, gluttony, drinking etc.

Having gone through his studies and passed everywhere with just fair marks, he tried his hand in lawyers' offices, but the air reeking of paper and ink did not agree with him. He was always given so much money by his mother that he could live the life of a gentleman also without a lawyer's office. At the same time, he courted all the daughters of better houses and proposed to many, so that with all the prospects of matrimony held out to them, many a sweet girl ended up "expecting" without the marriage bond.

Apart from these beauties, whom he instilled with disagreeable, but living "hope", our "government official" also favored other females, whom he could have at any time for little money, without the promise of marriage and the fear of impregnating these beauties.

And so, it sometimes happened that he was infected with Syphilis in all degrees, finally so much so that even the most experienced doctors in this field could no longer help him. The consequence of this disorderly conduct was a general drying up of the natural vital juices, for which evil I, the Lord, at the creation of the world, alas, had completely forgotten to create a "healing herb". And so, our dandy had to prepare himself for death. Certainly, a rather disagreeable procedure for a fashionable man, who loved the world and its sweet pleasures. But as it so happens, everyone must go the way of the flesh. And finally, also this dandy, whose greatest earthly bliss was the flesh, was all the more forced to walk the true "way of the flesh".

Just look towards his smelly bed, where he twists and turns gasping for air and water. But he is no longer able to get any into his stomach, for all the ligaments of his gullet are dried out and are unable to draw even a drop of water into the stomach. His breath is short and very painful, since the lungs are almost completely dry. His voice is also quite broken. He is only able to utter a few painful, half-expressed words, the sound of which is like that of a bassoon in the hands of a pupil. And although he tries to curse like a dandy and to stammer a few learned phrases from Voltaire or Sir Walter Scott, the general dryness of his system does not allow it and the strong pains in all his vital parts leave him not even the time to concentrate his thoughts once more on one point. Therefore, he lies there gasping, only sometimes uttering a piercing, rasping bassoon sound from his completely dried out throat.

You see, this is how the end of such libertines often turns out in this world! However, since there is nothing more to be observed with this dandy in this world and, as you express it, death is about to claim him any moment, we will turn at once to the beyond and see how our man will arrive there.

Look, his bed is exactly like the one he had in the world. He still lies there like before, but at the same time you see by his bed only an angel with a flaming torch, destroying the dandy's last vital drops with its spiritual flame!

The reason why there is only one angel with such people is because their soul and spirit are completely dead. Only the angel of death, who governs the flesh and the nerve spirit, is here to torment and burn the flesh and the nerve spirit, thereby collecting the scattered remnants of the soul and the equally

scattered spirit in the nerve spirit, in this way preventing the dying person from eternal death.

He (the angel) will not speak to this man but will only burn him with his torch from the natural world into the spirit world. This usually happens, and must happen, with such people, for without this last act of grace they would lose their whole being.

This act is like the distorted pagan act in the fable of Prometheus. For the more spiritual original people observed such performances in the spirit world which, to be sure, were indescribably rarer than in this time, which is far more voluptuous than Sodom and Gomorrah. So, a few of their fables survived, only distorted beyond measure after a few thousand years.

Here the same Prometheus appears – as he acted in reality. But look, now the solitary angel has brought his work to a good end.

The flesh of our dandy is burnt to ashes through and through, and observe, out of the ashes, quite slowly and idly – not a glorious, rejuvenated bird Phoenix, oh no, but look – only a silly monkey, looking like an old decrepit baboon, is rising! He is quite dumb, but he can see a little.

The animal form is due to the fact that such people during the course of their debauched life totally waste the finer human soul specific particles through their lust, retaining only the coarser animal ones. In this case at least the monkey soul remained. But there are others who have spoilt themselves down to the ugliest of amphibians.

With this man the "water of his life" cannot be determined as yet, for he must now, as you say, "go into pasture". There he will be handed over to spirits, who are placed in charge of such degenerated animal souls. Perhaps they will achieve that, with all diligence in a hundred years, this soul will again attain a human form. It is not possible to say more of this."

A Young Lady of Fashion

(6 August 1847)

Jesus is speaking: "Here follows another early death, that of a young lady of fashion, who during a ball indulged too much in dancing with a view to securing a young and rich bridegroom. Instead, she only gained an early death.

A young, physically very attractive girl of nineteen years was invited to attend a grand society ball, which invitation she gladly accepted, with the permission of her parents. At once the fashion stores were gone through, which luckily amongst a thousand articles still had one which found the approval of our invited beauty. Now came a visit to a first-class dressmaker with the intention of making the gown not only according to the latest Paris or London fashion, but if possible after the latest fashion of Madrid or New York. In this way she would appear at this glittering ball in an outstanding outfit, thereby arousing the greatest attention and being regarded as of extraordinary appearance

The dressmaker, knowing his client and the dozens of capricious ideas cropping up on such occasions, was in quite a bit of trepidation on account of this order. Therefore, he did his utmost and actually made a masterpiece of a ball gown to the fullest satisfaction of his client; for the gown could be worn without a corset.

However, the many fine elastic bands could compress the body to such an extent that our heroine's waist became thinner than her round neck.

This gown according to the New York fashion was actually the cause of her early and very sudden demise. For, being the beauty queen of the ball, she danced with a young, rich dandy, who suited her fancy, so much so that a large blood vessel in her compressed lungs burst. Owing to the enormous loss of blood, she was dead in a few minutes.

When she broke down on the dance floor and a stream of blood gushed from her rosy mouth - to the horror of all girls and ladies, who were also tightly corseted -her parents, relatives and doctors came running, undressed her, poured icy cold water onto her and gave her medicine, which she, being totally dead, could no longer take.

Everybody wept and lamented loudly. The parents and the attentive dandy of a lover tore their hair in despair. Some cursed such a fate; others again pitied the unfortunate one. Many left the dance hall caring a reminder home, but of course not much better than the sparrows that are scattered by a shot from the roof.

In this case we shall not see much that is of interest in the spirit world. Notwithstanding all this, you shall see how such transitions proceed in the spirit world.

Look, there is our heroine still crouched down on the blood spattered floor, and there at a little distance you see an angel spirit standing with crossed arms. His countenance shows dejection, meaning a kind of sadness, which such a guardian spirit feels in cases of extreme human folly, where he can no longer help the people with his loving care.

What will this mourning angel be doing here? You see, he approaches the girl, who is also in the spirit world recognizable as a corpse. Now he has reached her and says: "O you foolish being! What shall I now awaken in you, since everything is dead within, wherever I turn my eyes? O Lord, look graciously down! Here the strength is not sufficient with which you have endowed me; therefore, do stretch out Your almighty hand and do to this foolish girl according to Your liking!"

Now look, there comes another, fiery-looking angel! Now he is there, and look, his fire seizes the dead girl and consumes her instantly to ashes. (In the natural/material world this cannot be observed, since this act concerns only the soul/body or: psychic body.) Now something in the ashes begins to stir. The angel is praying over these ashes. The last words of his prayer are: "Lord, your will be done!"

Now the second angel leaves the ashes, which are more and more stirred up, but the first angel remains. This stirring is nothing else but a new gathering together of the totally destroyed, scattered and utterly deranged soul specifica and is directly affected through My power. Now we shall see at once what is left over from this girl's soul!

Look, a dark-gray little cloud is rising! The little cloud takes on more and more form. And now look, there we have a form! You can compare it with nothing else on earth. The head looks like that of a bat, the body like that of a giant grasshopper, the hands are like the feet of a goose and the feet like those of a

stork! How do you like this fashion, being the fruit of that worldly one? The fashion is not what is so extraordinary; but it is a different matter that this foolish girl, quasi a suicide, will hardly ever enter the luminous realms of heaven!

It may take hundreds of years till she will attain a human form, and then only in a most painful manner. Afterwards she will be in the spirit-realm, as what the albinos are on earth, namely, she will shun the light. With this one, nothing further can be seen and learnt, so another example next."

A General

(10 April 1847)

Jesus is speaking: "Look, we are at present in a princely, luxurious chamber. Here, everything is full of gold and silver and of the most precious gems and – for the world – of the most precious paintings. The floor of the chamber is laid with the finest rugs and the great plate glass windows are hung with curtains, the cost of which would feed a thousand poor for a whole month. Cupboards, tables, sofas, chairs and a great many more princely furnishings of great value adorn the chamber, which is permeated by all sorts of aromatic scents, and the most renowned physicians are surrounding the bed, richly embossed with gold, in which the worldly prominent patient is waiting in vain for his recovery.

One conference after another is held and the medication is changed hourly. In the adjoining room, two monks are praying continuously, taking turns from Latin books in red and black print, and wherever there is a prayer house or some chapel, a solemn mass is held for the recovery of our great general. But it is all in vain. For neither in the pharmacy, the breviary nor in the missal is there any help, and here it says for once: "Come and let us see of what kind your deeds are!"

Look at the sick man, how courageous he is! But this courage is only a sham, for inwardly our hero could expire for fear and despair, cursing the very painful illness like a hussar who curses his horse, which refuses to obey him. It all fits nicely together. There the monks are praying - of course with a reverence which cannot be rivaled and added to, which is joined to quite a different wish propter "certum quoniam" (because of a certain matter). But it is always strange if the one for whom prayers are outwardly said, curses abominably.

Now his pain increases, becoming almost unbearable, and our patient, inflamed with anger, raises himself up to the astonishment of those surrounding him and shouts full of rage: "O you accursed life! Can you, Creator, if you exist, not take it from me in a more painless manner. On such a miserable life all the devils, if they exist, can defecate and I myself would, if I could! Hah, you silliest beasts of doctors, the whole lot of you are not worth a rap, give me a well-loaded pistol, so that I myself may write a medicine for this dog's and whore's life through the brain, with one report safely freeing the same of any further torment!"

A protomeric approaches the sickbed, trying to feel the pulse and calm down the patient. But the noble patient raises himself up and says: "Just come here, you rascal, you miserable dog of a doctor, so that I can vent my justified anger on you! Go to the devil, you silly rascal! Would you not like to torment me again with Opium? Look how clever these rascals are; as soon as they are at their wits' end, they come with Opium. Then the sick man falls asleep, and they do not have to fear the justified complaints lasting for hours. And they will laugh into

their sleeve and calculate how much each of them will be able to charge according to the third table after my death! Ha ha ha, I certainly see through your plans! So away with you, you evil dogs, or I will rid you with my last strength of this miserable whores' life! Hah, who are the two black rascals I can see in the adjoining room? What are these fellows doing? I almost believe they are praying for my soul! Who has ordered them to do it? Out with them, or I get up and shoot them down like dogs!"

Look, following this explosion on the part of the supreme commander, the monks make off at once. The physicians keep shrugging their shoulders more and more, the patient falls silent and amid the most horrid distortions of the face the death-rattle sets in. However, being unable to observe more in the patient, we proceed at once to the spirit world and shall make our brief observations as to how our hero will enter into the spirit world.

You see, we are already there, and there on the same bed lies the patient in an identically looking room. He is still gasping, as you can easily see, drawing air painfully and biting his tongue in the silent rage of his angry soul.

But there, you see, is already the sole death angel in readiness to liberate the enraged soul of our hero from its excessively proud and arrogant aristocratic flesh. The angel is armed with a flaming sword – as a sign of his great power lent him by Me and as a sign of his courage and his total lack of fear before such great heroes of the earth, as well as before the whole hell.

You see, now the last grain of sand in the urn of time has fallen for this hero, and the angel touches him with his flaming sword and speaks: "Rise, you feeble Soul, and you, proud dust, fall back into the ocean of your bottomless nothingness!"

Look, now the body disappears and the bed and the chamber full of earthly splendor are no longer visible. Instead, as you can easily see, a very dark ashen-gray, decrepit-looking soul rises, standing on loose sand, which threatens to swallow it. It looks around, angry, distraught and shy. However, it sees itself in a different way from how we see it – it sees itself still as a general decorated with all his medals and with a sword.

"Where am I?" the hero now says, "Which devil has taken me here? Nothing, and again nothing. Wherever I turn my eyes, there is nothing. Look down there, also below me there is nothing!

Am I a sleepwalker – or dreaming – or should I actually have died? Oh, this is truly an accursed, silly state! To be sure, I am quite well now and feel no pain, remember every little detail in my life. I was extremely sick. I have scrutinized the silly doctors, have sent the two hypocrites to the devil and have also, of course, owing to the strong, unbearable pain, said some rude things to the Creator; all this I very well remember! I also know that I was very angry and ready to tear everything apart in my rage. But now all this is past. It would be all right, if only I knew where I really am and what has gone on with me?!"

There is a little light around me, but the farther out I direct my gaze, the darker it becomes, and I see nothing, nothing, nothing, and again nothing! This is really accursed! Truly, he who does not go to the devil under these circumstances, win not do so in eternity!

Strange, strange, I keep becoming more wide-awake, more alive, but at the same time it keeps getting emptier around me. I must surely be in a sort of lethargy? However, those who are afflicted with it, are said to hear and see everything happening around them – but I hear and see nothing except myself; so, this can be no lethargy.

It is here neither cold nor warm, nor totally dark, although the light is truly not blinding. What I find incomprehensible is that I am in this solo state very merry and in high spirits, so that I could be a clown; and yet, I have as Figura shows, surely not been more solitary in the womb than here. Truly, if I had here such a little thing, eh, such a thing - well, such a thing – yes, yes, all right – if I had such a harlot with me, I could even forget myself, that I – confound it, the general together with his five dozen ancestors! Truly, I would give anything for the most common harlot!

If only I could find out where I really am? If this state of affairs should last much longer, this condition could become damned boring! Have once heard something of a God, want to earnestly turn to Him. Have earlier behaved somewhat rudely towards Him. But, if He exists, He will not hold it against me. Hallo, my God, my Lord! If you exist, help me out of this queer, unfortunate situation!"

You see, at once an angel comes along and speaks: "Friend, you will remain in this situation until the last drop of your pride has been drained out of you, whereby the last drop of blood will be paid of the blood of many thousands of your brothers shed by you. Throw away all your insignia as a general, and you will find more ground and more light and also company – but beware of your own kind, or you will be lost! Above all, turn to the Lord, and your path will be short and easy. Amen."

You see, at this stage our hero is not prepared to follow this advice. Therefore, the angel leaves him; he will be kept in suspension for several hundred years more.

From this you can draw your conclusions as to his "water", and so nothing further of him."

A Pope

(11 August 1847)

Jesus is speaking: "In this instance we will begin at once with the beyond. We will observe a man, who had been playing a very great role, being finally of the opinion that the world existed only for his sake and that he could do as he liked. For he arrogated the actual stewardship of God, and that more than many another of his like. Notwithstanding all this, he had to "bite the dust", and neither his presumed great power nor the world or the stewardship of God protected him against it.

Look over there, straight towards midnight, a very lean male figure of a very dark color is walking along slowly, looking around searchingly in all directions.

In his company you see a little man, like a pitch-dark monkey, who busies himself around our man and is acting as if he had some very important business

with this man. Let us step closer, so that you may hear the strange monologue of this man, who is oblivious of both his company or us.

We are already close to him. Now listen, he says: "Everything a lie, everything deceit, and the deceived is the most fortunate; but unfortunate the deceiver, if he is knowingly a deceiver! However, if he is unknowingly a deceiver, lying and deceiving without realizing it, he can be congratulated. For in that case one donkey pulls another, and both are contented with the worst fodder. But I, what am I? I was a supreme head; all had to believe and do what I ordered. However, I did what I wanted, for I had the keys to power in my hands, like one who takes it without asking whether he is entitled to take it. I knew everything; I knew that everything is only a lie and deceit, but despite this fact I imposed falsehood and deceit under threat of punishment on everyone refusing to accept them and believing that everything issuing from me, written or not, has to be accepted as the full truth.

On the earth I thought: Physical death is the end of all existence. This was my secret, firm belief, and all the wisdom of the world could not have given me a different one! This alone I held to be the truth, and you see, also this is a falsehood; for I continue to live, although I have died in the body.

Heaven, purgatory and hell I had preached on many thousands of pulpits, issued letters of indulgence and canonized a great many deceased and ordered fasting, prayer, confession and Communion – and now I myself stand here, not knowing what is what! If there were a Judgment, I would be judged already. If there were a heaven, I should have the first right to it, for in the first place I had to become steward of Christ's Church through the will of God. And what I then did as such was certainly also only a supreme will, for according to Scripture no hair of the head will be bent and no sparrow fly from the roof.

Thus, I confessed and attended Communion according to the old rules, although I could easily have exempted myself. For I had the power to abolish confession, including the strict Communion for everyone, for all times, which, however, I could not and would not do for political reasons. Should there be a hell, I would have reason enough to be in it, for in God's eyes every human being is a killer! At least I ought to be in purgatory, for this is said to be everybody's lot for at least three days! But neither the one nor the other is my lot, therefore God, Christ, Mary, heaven, purgatory and hell are nothing but falsehood and deceit! Man lives only from the forces of nature and thinks and feels only according to the concentration of his inherent natural forces, which probably combine there to an eternally indestructible One. Therefore, it will now be my task to investigate these forces more closely and then, owing to my precise acquaintance with them, to find a heaven.

However, I notice a continual certain tugging at my toga pontifical is! What could that be, should there still be an invisible spirit in my vicinity, or is it done by some wind? In earnest, it is queer in this infinite desert, for no matter where one goes, one still remains forever completely alone. One can call, cry, call abuse, scold and curse – or pray to whom one wants, and yet nothing stirs, and one remains all alone as before! It may well be several years since I died on the earth, and this in a very painful, utterly disagreeable manner, and I am just as alone, nothing beneath my feet but whole barren desert! I certainly have room to move,

this again is a truth, but where I am, what shall become of me in the future shall I continue to live forever or still be totally annihilated in the future this is an insolvable riddle.

So, get on with the investigation of the natural forces inherent in me, and through their closer acquaintance it shall soon become evident what shall become of me!"

Have you heard him, how he reasons, he, the steward of God on earth? Oh, he will continue for a long time to reason thus solo, as his invisible companion inspires him. For the lot of such people, who were on earth in the highest positions, is always the same, namely, being alone, inasmuch as they have excessively isolated themselves on earth.

However, this isolation turns out to be a great grace for them; for only in that way is it possible to then turn back onto the right path. But this takes a long time. They have to go through all degrees of night and darkness within, of distress, also of pain, as it is peculiar to hell.

Once such a zealot has absolved this solo journey – perhaps in five hundred to a thousand, also ten thousand years, he comes only then into the company of strict spirits. If he fails to follow them, he is again left alone and to his own devices. But then all the abominable deeds, carried out either under him or under his predecessors, will be brought home to him, at which occasion, however, he will have to taste all the pains, which all the persecuted had to taste under him or his predecessors. If this treatment fails to cure him, he is left as he is; as companions only hunger and thirst are given him, which two stewards with rare exceptions bring almost everyone gradually onto the right road.

Here again you have a picture, from which you may learn more about the beyond – and the "water", which such a leader has to swim through, until he reaches the shore of humility, truth and love. Therefore, nothing more of this man."

A Minister

(12 August 1847)

Jesus is speaking: "Since also the great lords of the world have to die, against which utterly disagreeable peculiarity of their lives they have still not been able to establish an insurance company, having failed to achieve it despite all their politicking and diplomacy, also our minister had to finally make up his mind to exchange the temporal with the eternal.

For such people dying is the most unpleasant event in the world, but it is of little concern to the angel of death. With whomsoever he finds the well-calibrated measure full, him he takes without grace and pardon.

Our minister, a man revered by all the world on account of his worldly intellect, was in his later years thrown onto his sickbed by a catarrhal fever with gout, which tormented him for half a month, and that the more, the more medicines he took in order to remedy this evil. Towards the end he became angry and threatened the physicians with arrest, unless they would or could restore him to health soon.

However, instead of carrying out his threat, he sank on the sixteenth day of his illness into a coma from which he did not awaken in this world, except one

hour shortly before his death. In this hour he made a brief last will as to what should be done with his considerable property, whereby the poor, as usual with such people, were only considered in a beggarly mariner, for what are a few thousand guilders compared to several millions bequeathed?

Thus, also the Church was favored pro forma with a bequest, however, not out of some blind faith – for such a person has seldom any faith or none at all and all he ever does is pure politics – but only, as aforementioned, because policy demands it.

Having made this last will, he sank back on his bed and was dead, without taking confession and Communion, of which act he anyway – as far as he was concerned – did not think much. This meant for him the end forever for this world; and so we will not stay any longer with his corpse, but will at once proceed to the "beyond" to find out how our very proud and aristocratic man behaves there.

You see, we are already there, and our man is standing in his complete official robe before us and four veiled angel spirits, where he only sees the latter. The locality is represented by his very state cabinet, where he had intended to attend to some important business.

Now he sees the four clearly in his secret cabinet and can hardly contain his anger over the extreme audacity of these four "rascals", as he thinks. Jumping up and reaching for the bell he tries to ring it, but the bell gives no sound.

"Treason! High treason!" He shouts as loudly as he can. "How did you I miserable scoundrels manage to enter this cabinet, which is accessible only to me and where the most secret and holy mysteries of the state are worked at and kept? Do you know that such high treason is punishable by death? Which of you has tampered with this bell that now, in this decisive moment, it cannot utter a sound? Confess, you villains, which of you was the ringleader?"

The first angel speaks: "Listen patiently and attentively to what I shall now tell you! I am well acquainted with the wise rule according to which no man on earth, except the king, can enter this cabinet. If you were still on earth, you would not have beheld us in this spot. But you see, you have now died in your physical body and are now in the spirit world, where there is only one Lord, whereas all other spirits are brothers, good and bad ones, depending on how they have acted on the earth, in a good or evil manner. Thus, we have been given the loving right and duty by the Lord to visit everyone offering him our services, provided he is still, like you, accessible to us.

The commission to you through us of the one Lord is therefore, to inform and reveal to you that here in this eternal world all worldly honor and status, including all politics have ceased to exist; and this cabinet, your robe and all your presumed important state documents are only a deception and have sprung from your fantasy, which is still clinging excessively to the world and will disappear as soon as you will follow us. If you follow us, you will have an easy path to the true, eternal realm of life, where there is immeasurable, uncountable bliss; if, however, you refuse to follow us, you will find it extremely difficult to attain to the living Kingdom of God. For you see, with God's permission you were a great man in the world and had great power. However, through this power the lust for power has awakened mightily in you and this has led you into many a thing not grounded in the divine order. Besides, this worldly power, as lust for power, has also robbed

you in many cases of the love for your neighbor and has rendered you totally unsuitable for the Kingdom of God.

But you see, the Lord knows what a heavy burden you had to carry and is feeling great pity for you. So He sent us to you, so that you might be saved and lifted up and not perish under your great worldly burden, which you brought along. Do not think here about a judgment; for in the realm of the freedom of spirit there is no judgment and no judge, except the innate free will of every human being! Do not think of hell either. It is nowhere, except in every person, if that person creates it within himself through his own evil. At the same time, do not think of a heaven as the promised reward for good works. Let the Word of the Lord Jesus be your will, seek Him alone through it! Once you have Him, you have all the heavens and a totally different might out of love than you used to have in the world on account of your worldly cleverness and high position. Now you know everything; do what your free will allows you in the name of the Lord Jesus. Amen."

The minister says: "Truly, your speech is wise and is my token that everything is as you say. It is now also completely clear to me that I have died physically. But I cannot grasp that the certain Jew Jesus should be the sole God and Lord! What then is the "Father" and the "Holy Spirit"? You see, this is not in agreement with the teaching of Jesus, who was the first to teach everywhere a divine trinity! Therefore, forgive me if I cannot follow you as fast as you desire, unless you quickly convince me of it!"

Says the angel: "Brother, this does not happen as fast as you think. First of all, discard your state robe and put on another one of humility and complete self-denial, and you will soon become fully convinced of that which until now appears inconceivable to you."

The minister replies: "Well then, so take me and show me the right way and carefully scrape everything worldly off my soul, and we will see where you stand with your statement."

Now the other three angels step up, divest the man of the state robe, replacing it with ashen-gray, dirty rags. And the second angel now speaks to him: "Now you are dressed in the dress of humility. But this alone is insufficient, for you must be humble in fact. And so, follow us!"

The man follows and look, they arrive at a farm and tell him: "You see, here lives a harsh man who owns great herds of swine. You shall serve him and be contented with anything he will offer you; and if he is harsh and unjust towards you, you shall bear everything with patience and shall only get satisfaction in the Lord's grace and mercy."

"If he strikes you, do not strike back; offer him your back, like a slave, as you have often seen – for the sake of military subordination – a poor soldier lie down against his will on the bench and endure the harsh, often utterly unjust punishment. If you will bear all this with the right patience, a better lot will be your share."

Thereupon says the man: "Many thanks for this guidance! Just give me back my state robe, you imposters, I shall certainly find my own way! Look at the rascals! Out of one like me, who counts at least twenty ancestors, they want to make a swineherd without ado! Oh, if only I were still in the world, I would pay

you for this so that you would remember! These vagabonds even pose as God's messengers! No, just wait, being messengers of God will cost you dearly!"

You see, the angels return his state robe to him and say: "As you like. There is your earthly garment! If you refuse to walk the roads of life, walk your own; our service with you is finished."

You see into what sort of "water" our man is moving; there he will have to swim until he reaches the Father by turning back like the Prodigal Son.

Let everyone beware of the lust for power, for it always has the same consequences. Next time a different example!

Bishop Martin

(13 August 1847)

A bishop, who had always been very conspicuous for his dignity as well as his dogmas, fell ill for the last time.

He, who even still as an assistant priest, had been wonted to paint the joys of heaven in the oddest colors and to describe the delights and bliss in the realm of the angels with great enthusiasm, not forgetting to mention hell and purgatory, did not yet desire, even as an old man of almost eighty, to take possession of his much praised heaven. He would have preferred another thousand years on this earth to a future heaven with all its delights and bliss.

Therefore, our sick bishop did everything in his power to restore his health. He had to be surrounded by the best physicians. Powerful masses had to be celebrated in all the churches of his diocese; all the sheep of his flock were asked to pray for his life. In his sick room an altar had been erected at which mass had to be celebrated three times every morning to help restore his health, whereas, in the afternoon, three of the most pious monks had to keep praying the breviary in front of the consecrated host.

He himself kept uttering: "Oh Lord, have mercy upon me! Holy Mary, beloved mother, help me! Have mercy upon my dignity and grace as prince-bishop for your Son's glory! Oh, do not forsake your most faithful servant, you helper in need, you, sole support of the afflicted!" But all this did not help. Our man fell into a coma from which he did not awaken again in this world.

You know of the "highly important", ceremonial for a deceased bishop, and we need not waste any time with its description. Instead, let us look around in the spirit world to see what our man will be doing there.

Look, here we are – and there our man can be seen still lying on his bed; while the heart is still warm the angel does not sever the soul from the body. This warmth constitutes the nerve spirit, which has to be wholly absorbed by the soul before complete severance can be undertaken.

At last, this man's soul has completely absorbed the nerve spirit and the angel is severing it from his body with the words: "Ephphetha – arise thou soul, but thou dust revert to thy decomposition through the kingdom of vermin and decay. Amen."

Already you see our bishop rising in his full bishop's robes, just as during his lifetime, and he opens his eyes. He looks around in astonishment, not seeing anybody, not even the angel who awakened him. The surroundings are visible

only in a fading light, as of late dusk, and the ground seems to be covered with dry alpine moss.

Our man is not a little astonished at this unusual situation and says to himself: "What is this? Where am I? Am I still alive or have I died? I must have been seriously ill, and it is quite possible that I am already among the deceased! Oh, for God's sake, this must be so! Oh, holy Mary, St. Joseph, St. Ann you, my three most powerful helpers, come and help me into the Kingdom of Heaven!"

He waits for a while, looking around carefully to see from which direction the three will be coming, but they do not come. Recalls once more, this time louder, and waits; but still, nobody approaches.

For the third time he calls, louder still, but again in vain.

Now our man begins to feel very scared. He realizes his desperate situation and says: "Oh, for God's sake, Lord, help me! (This is only his habitual phrase.) What does this mean? I have called three times and no response!"

"Am I damned? How can that be, for I do not see any fire nor any devil?"

"Oh, oh, oh (trembling). It is truly terrible! So alone! Oh God, if one of these devils turned up now while I'm without a consecrated font or crucifix what will I do?"

"And the devil is said to be particularly keen on bishops. Oh, what a desperate situation! I believe the howling and gnashing of teeth is already upon me!"

"I will discard my bishop's robe, so the devil will not recognize me. But maybe that would give him even more power over me! Oh, what a terrible thing death is!"

"If at least I were quite dead, then I would not be afraid, but this being alive after death is so terrible!"

"I wonder what would happen if I walked on? No, no, I'd rather stay here. What consequences a step in the dark might have only God knows. Therefore, I would rather remain here until Doomsday, in the name of God and the Blessed Virgin!"

The further events and the guidance of this in his way quite pious man will be shown in the following.

The above death scene is the opening chapter of the work "Bishop Martin" (English title "Sunsets into Sunrises"), which describes the guidance of a bishop from his transition into the world beyond until his heavenly perfection.

What happened to the bishop after these first experiences made in the world beyond after his death? He began to be more and more bored, a whole eternity seemed to have passed and he was glad when finally, he had company in Peter, who was his spirit guide and whom he mistook for a colleague. Peter instructed Martin, gave him advice in accordance with the Gospel and encouraged him to perform services, each of which was of a nature as to aid Martin in overcoming his former weaknesses carried over from his earthly life. Then the guide left him, so as not to influence Martin when making his decisions.

Gradually, Martin comes to think that he was forsaken by his guide and becomes more and more enraged because of it. Instead of wanting in all humility the "path in the name of the Lord" pointed out to him by the guide, he turns to the "evening" and in the vicinity of the "midnight" region stumbles into an ever-

growing night and darkness. In this soul condition he becomes lost in a marshy region. Finally, in utter despair, he arrives at the shore of a sea, where he can go neither forward nor backward. In this hopeless situation, the Lord Himself in the person of a friendly skipper comes to his aid and lets him enter his rescue boat.

A dialogue ensues which reveals the condition of Martin's inner soul state and, finally, leads him to self-recognition, repentance and to turning back.

In the following an excerpt of the dialogue (Chapters 13-17):

(The Lord as the skipper replies to Martin, who complains bitterly of the injustice of his fate: "It may be disagreeable to be on your own for quite a long period; however, such a prolonged solitude is really most beneficial. It gives one plenty of time to reflect on one's follies, to detect them and rid oneself of them altogether. Therefore, your state of loneliness, though most unpleasant, was actually beneficial for your character. For the Lord of all beings looked after you and showed great patience with you."

"I am quite aware of the fact that in the world you were a Roman bishop and that, although in your heart you did not care about them, you attended to your heathenish, idolatrous duties with pedantic strictness. However, how could this be of any value since, as you know, God looks only at the heart? Besides, you were arrogant and tyrannical, and, notwithstanding your vows of celibacy, you were too fond of the flesh of women. Can you imagine that God would look kindly on acts like those?"

Did you ever say in your heart: "Let the little ones come to me? Oh, no! Only the great personages counted with you! Or did you ever take into your home a destitute child in the Lord's name, and clothed or fed it? How many naked did you clothe? How many hungry did you feed? How many prisoners did you free? ... I did not know of any! However, I do know of thousands whom you imprisoned spiritually; and you often deeply wounded the poor by your curses and damnation. At the same time, you gave dispense upon dispense to the great and rich – for money, of course! And only in exceptional cases was it free of charge – to the very important people, to impress them. Do you seriously believe that God could look with favor upon your acts and that, after your physical death, you would be admitted to heaven right away?"

"I am not telling you all this in order to judge you, but merely to convince you that the Lord did not wrong you, if He apparently withdrew from you here; and that only His mercy saved you from being thrust into hell immediately after your death, much as you deserved it."

Think this over and do not abuse your guide, but realize, in all humility, that you do not deserve the Lord's mercy at all. For, if even the most faithful servants are to consider themselves bad and useless, how much more does this apply to you, who has never done a thing in accordance with God's will!"

(The bishop:) "It is absolutely true, but what could I now do about it? I now feel the deepest contrition about all I did, but it can never be undone, and thus my guilt and sin remain as the seed and root of death. How could I in my sin find mercy with the Lord?"

"I realize that I am ripe for hell, and there is nothing I can do about it, except that, perhaps, the Lord would grant me another life on earth where I could make up for my wrongdoings as much as possible. Or, since I am so terribly afraid of

hell, maybe the Lord could place me as the very least being in some comer for all eternity where, as a farmer, I could make a meager living with my own two hands. I would not expect to attain to any higher degree of beatitude, being aware that I am much too unworthy for even the lowest sphere of heaven."

"This is how I feel about it. In the world it might be rather hopeless, as the general trend is evil all through, making it almost impossible to do good, as you have to baffle against the current like a swimmer."

"Not that I mean He (the Almighty) should consider my guilt less serious, but the fact that the world is what it is and that you cannot help it even if you would like to and, therefore, eventually cease trying, should carry some weight?"

"My dearest rescuer do not be cross with me for what I have said, as this is the way I have seen things until now. Judging from your words, you are full of divine wisdom and will be able to tell me what I should do to at least save myself from hell."

"I assure you that, as demanded by you, I forgive my former guide with all my heart! For I was only annoyed with him because I couldn't understand what he actually planned to do with me. If he came along now, I would, for your sake, embrace him like a son would embrace his long-lost father."

(The Lord as the skipper): "Listen carefully to what I shall tell you!"

"I know very well what the world is like, and if it had not always been like that, the Lord would not have been crucified. Therefore, the Lord's words, as quoted in the Gospel, have once and for all to be applied where the world is concerned, namely:

In these days, that is, the time of this world – the kingdom of heaven needs force; only those who apply force will possess it. However, you my friend, have never applied this moral force where the kingdom of heaven is concerned. Therefore, do not accuse the world too much, for I know that you were at all times more concerned with the world than with the spirit. In this respect, you were one of the chief opponents of enlightenment, an enemy of the Protestants, whom you persecuted for alleged heresy with bitter hatred."

"I do hope you will understand that in this world nothing counts but pure truth combined with eternal love and all your excuses are futile except your Mea quam maxima culpa (my greatest possible guilt). You must admit that God alone knows the world in its minutest detail from eternity. Therefore, it is absurd of you to try and describe the world to the Lord, in defense of your attitude, for His consideration, without realizing that you were one of those mainly responsible for the world's deterioration."

"To what extent you, as a prisoner of the world, deserve consideration, it will be afforded you. What the world owes you before God will be only a minor account. However, your debt will not be so negligible unless you repent and confess that you – who have always been bad – can do absolutely nothing, but the Lord alone can redeem and forgive you."

"You have a great fear of hell because your conscience tells you that this is where you belong, and you think God will throw you into hell like a stone into a chasm. But you do not realize that you fear only your imagined hell, whilst you enjoy being inside the real one."

"Behold, all your thoughts so far represented were more or less hell literally. For wherever there is a spark of egoism, arrogance and blaming of others, there is hell; where carnal desire has not been dispelled voluntarily, there is still hell. As all this is still part of you, you are still very much in hell. Do you see how idle your fear is?"

"The Lord, who has mercy with all beings, wants to save you from this hell and not condemn you deeper into it – as per your Roman maxim. Therefore, don't claim the Lord may say to those who want to go to hell: "If you insist on going to hell, let it be so!" This is a sacrilegious claim!

Though you do not wish to renounce hell, when did you ever hear the Lord condemn you to it?"

"Ponder over these, my words, and change your attitude accordingly, and I will pilot this boat that it will take you away from your hell into the realm of life. So be it!"

(The bishop) "Oh, my dear friend, I must admit to my regret that you are right in every detail, and I do see now that I have no excuse whatsoever and am alone responsible for everything that has happened. But I would like to learn from you where you are taking me and what my lot will be for eternity."

(The skipper) "Ask your heart, your love! What does it say? What does it say? What does it desire? When your love will have given a definite answer to your query, your lot will have been decided within you. *For everyone is judged by his own love or desire."*

(Bishop Martin:) "Oh friend, if I were judged by my love, only God knows where I would get to! For my mind is still like that of a fashion-crazy woman, who has a choice of hundreds of dress materials and is unable to make up her mind which to take. An innermost feeling draws me towards God, my Creator. But then my numerous great sins get in the way and make the realization of this wish seem impossible."

"Then I remember those sheep and lambs of this world (the young women of his first test in the beyond) and that it wouldn't be unpleasant at all to live with such sheep in eternity. But an inner voice warns me that it would never bring me nearer to God, it would rather take me further away. Thus, also this pet idea of mine sinks into this fathomless sea."

"Once more the thought comes to my mind that I could live as a simple farmer in some comer of this eternal spirit world and maybe once be granted the favor of seeing Jesus, even if only for a moment. But then my conscience again reminds me that I am not worthy of such a great honor – and I sink back into my sinful insignificance before Him, the Most Holy!"

"Only one idea seems to me the least difficult to realize, and I must admit it has now turned out to be my pet idea – namely, to stay with you through all eternity, wherever you may go. Although in the world I could not stand those at all who dared face me with the truth, I have come to love you very much, as you have told the truth to my face like a wise but mild judge. To this pet idea of mine I would stick in eternity!"

(The skipper:) "All right, if that is your main love, of which you will still have to convince yourself, this can be realized immediately. We are not far off the shore now and quite near the hut where I live. You are aware of my trade by now – that I

am a pilot in the truest sense of the word. You can take part in my business and in my little plot of land, which we shall work diligently in our free time to provide our livelihood. And if you now look, you will find somebody beside you, who will stick to us faithfully."

For the first time on this voyage, the bishop turns around and immediately recognizes the angel, Peter. He embraces him, asking his forgiveness for insulting him. Peter reciprocates with the same love and praises the choice the bishop's heart has made.

The boat has meanwhile reached the shore, is tied to a post and the three enter the hut.

So far it has been rather dark. Inside the hut, the light seems to increase, and a pleasant dawn gradually banishes the darkness of night. This, of course, takes place only before the eyes of the bishop, as it is always the brightest, everlasting and unchangeable day for the Lord, as well as for the angel Peter.

The reason why it begins to dawn also for the bishop, is that love began to emerge in his heart because, through My mercy, he had, of his own free will, thrown out a lot of worldly filth and was still continuing the process.

(The remainder can be read in the book "Sunsets into Sunrises, Bishop Martin – The Progress of a Soul in the Beyond" through Jakob Lorber.)

The Poor Man

(16 October 1848)

Jesus is speaking: "Here follows another brief scene from the spirit realm, namely, the death or really transition from this earthly probation life to the true eternal spirit-life of a poor laborer, which people are now called "scoundrel", "wretch" and "rabble" by the notable of the world.

Follow Me into a poor little room, which resembles more the lair of a bear than a room suitable for human habitation. Inside, the room is barely two fathoms square. This hole is accessible through a rather dilapidated door, above which an opening two spans long and one span high admits a rather refracted and weak light from the dirty stable wall of a wealthy neighbor, lighting up this hole sufficiently for its seven inhabitants to recognize each other. This model of a living room has neither a heater nor a stove. The latter is represented by a dirty, raw, barely a foot high limestone in a corner. Here the poor inhabitants of this veritable bear pit cook their scanty meal, provided they are fortunate enough to obtain the necessary ingredients by work and begging.

Nota bene: For this marvelous dwelling these poor have to pay a monthly rent to their rich landlord of 1 Fl. 30 Kr., with which they are quite happy. For in this way the landlord does not put them under too much pressure when they cannot pay punctually on the first of the month, but often allows as much as a fortnight. Indeed, the landlord is "so good" as to let them have thirty pounds of moldy rye straw for twenty farthings on account of the illness of their poor seventy-year-old father and even wait also a full ten days for payment! Truly, such a "kind-hearted" and "patient" landlord will surely be able to one day lay claims to My, the Lord's, mercy and patience!

Now look, in the darkest comer of this hole our poor laborer is lying on the "fresh" farthing straw. Some years ago, during a heavy building job he fell off

faulty scaffolding, breaking two ribs and an arm. He was taken to a hospital for the poor, where the doctors tyrannized him for half a year, after which time, poorly healed, he was dismissed as healed and given a certificate.

From then on he was ailing, weak and thus no longer able to do any heavy work. And so he managed with his also ill and weak wife and five children, all girls, the eldest of whom is fourteen years old, by doing all sorts of little jobs in keeping with his strength and at times through some donation his wife or children begged from a rare, more tender heart. Old age, weakness, cold and the poorest fare, as well as a festering wound around the ribs, forced him onto this miserable sickbed where we now see him on our visit.

Emaciated like an Egyptian mummy from the time of the Pharaohs, full of pain, the bones of the hips and the buttocks and the spine protruding at least by an inch and full of sores from the hard bed, added to this the very empty stomach burning with hunger, he speaks in a broken voice to his wife: have you nothing left? No piece of bread? No warm soup? No boiled potatoes? Oh God, Oh God! How awfully hungry I am! I cannot move with all the pain, and then all that hunger! Oh my God, my God! Do deliver me from this torture!"

Says the wife, who also for weakness and hunger is hardly able to stand: "Oh you my poor, dear husband! Already at six o'clock this morning the three eldest children have gone out to beg from good, compassionate people; it is now three in the afternoon, and none of them has come back! I am trembling all over with fear and trepidation that they may have met with misfortune. Oh, Jesus and Mary! Should they have ended up in the water or in the cruel hands of the police? I am shaking all over! In the meantime, may Jesus strengthen you; with God's help I will gather all my strength together and go straight to the police to find out whether they know what became of our poor children!"

Says the ailing man: "Yes, yes, dear mother, go, go – I too am exceedingly worried! But do not stay away too long and bring something to eat, or I die with hunger! Remember, it is already two full days since we have eaten. If only the three poor girls did not collapse with hunger somewhere? Oh my God, my God, all the misery must come over me!"

The wife leaves, and no sooner is she in the lane than she sees a policeman, who has her three children by the scruff of their necks. The mother, seeing this, shrieks with horror and says, lifting her hands above her head: "Just God! Oh Jesus! These are my poor children!"

The children weep and gasp: "Oh mother, mother! This savage man caught us in a lane where we were begging alms for our dangerously ill father. Then he locked us up in a dark room. Having seen us go begging on several other occasions, he brought another still more abominable man, who looked like a gentleman. Although we begged him on our knees, he had us beaten up, so much so that our backsides were bleeding. Then he asked us harshly about our address. When we could hardly tell him for pain, he ordered this savage man, who also beat us up so terribly, to take us home. Oh mother, mother, this hurts terribly!"

The mother, hardly capable of speech, sighs deeply and says to
Me: "Oh Lord, you are most righteous God! Since You live, how can You look on such abomination without punishment? Oh my God, my God, how can You allow such misery to come over us?" Then she sobs bitterly. But the policeman forbids

the mother to argue in the lane thus attracting attention and commands her to retreat at once to her dwelling.

The mother apologizes being a mother for her children and says, sobbing: "Oh Lord, how can I not weep? My seventy-year-old, dangerously ill husband is lying on pure straw, full of hunger; we all have not eaten for two days. This late autumn is wet and already very cold, and we do not have the tiniest bit of wood with which to warm our moist and cold dwelling. I myself am weak and ill. These three girls were our only support, and you have beaten them to cripples! Oh God! How could I look on silently? How could you forbid me to weep? Are you not a human being, a Christian?"

Here the policeman tries to push her back; but from behind a comer a courageous man jumps out and shouts at the policeman: "Stop, friend! This far and no further! Here are 30 fl. for you, poor mother; use them to care for yourself as well as you can. But off with you at once, you heartless tormentor, or I will shoot a few bullets through your tiger's skull!"

The policeman tries to arrest the benefactor because of this threat, but the stranger at once pulls a fully loaded pistol from the breast pocket of his coat and aims it at the myrmidon. The latter now takes the only sensible course, namely, to disappear rather than being shot by this serious looking man.

When the policeman is out of sight, this man continues on his way quite calmly and coolly. The mother and the three children blow him kisses of gratitude. And the mother, supported by her beaten daughters, who have completely forgotten their pain on account of their benefactor, at once hurries to the nearest inn, where she buys bread, some wine and meat. The waiter has misgivings on receiving from this poor rabble a 10 fl. banknote for change. But he thinks to himself: money is money, whether stolen or honestly acquired, and he changes the banknote for the woman and gives her what she desires.

Hurrying home with it, she finds the poor man crying from pain and hunger. The mother at once gives him some bread and wine, and the eldest daughter runs at once to the nearest shopkeeper to buy for a few pennies worth of firewood, lighter and half a pound of candles.

On her return home she finds to her horror two policemen outside the door of the poor man. They have rushed back to get hold of the charitable man. Failing this, the poor woman might be able to inform them as to the person and the whereabouts of this man. Should the woman not be prepared to speak up, she was to be arrested.

With this laudable intention, ordered by the police authority, they enter the dark room with the poor girl. At once demanding a light, they threaten the woman to give them every possible information on that man, or else she would have to accompany them to the police station. Hearing this the poor woman collapses with fear. The eldest daughter, also trembling with fear, makes light as demanded. The two myrmidons, seeing the poor man on the floor, almost naked, scantily covered in rags, shudder at first, then, tailing courage, they question the half-dead woman about the person and whereabouts of the man in question. The woman trembles all over and is unable to speak. The two policemen, believing the woman pretends, pull her roughly from the floor, trying to take her away. The sick man and the five children beg for grace and mercy, but the two go about their pleasant duty silently.

However, at the very same moment when the two myrmidons have pulled the woman as far as the threshold, our man arrives with three sturdy assistants. First freeing the woman, who is half dead with fear from the hands of the two myrmidons, they beat them up so that they can barely walk. Then threatening them and their office, they say: "In the name of God! If you miserable beasts dare once again to enter this sacred place where God's angels' dwell, you have to expect the most horrible revenge from us! We are not men and beings of this world, but we are guardian spirits of these angels, who are here going through the probation of their flesh!"

Thereupon the four helpers disappear. And the two myrmidons, sobered down, take off not to return.

Now the woman rallies and, thanking Me for this deliverance, sees to it that the man, who is sinking fast, gets a warm soup. Soon the soup is ready and is given to the old man amid a thousand blessings, and he eats it with great appetite, thanking Me and his loved ones.

Somewhat strengthened by this, he says to his wife and children: "You, my dear wife and you, my beloved children, have suffered much on my behalf. But you have also visibly convinced yourselves that the hand of the Lord did baffle for you and drove away your enemies like evil spirits. So, from now on trust in the Lord; He will then be nearest to you whenever your need will be greatest! Forgive all those who were harsh towards us and particularly towards you. They are mechanical tools of a blind, tyrannical police system and act without investigating and knowing what they are doing. Let the Lord alone be their judge!

Bear your cross with patience and never seek the happiness of this world; for the fortunate children of this world are not God's children. What is great in this world, is an abomination before God! Fear nothing as much as worldly success, for it is the greatest misfortune for the spirit.

You see, what would, or could, it has benefited me to be one of the richest people on earth? Now, at the end of my earthly career, I would see nothing but eternal death before me. But how different it now looks with me. Death has lost its terror; for me there is no longer any death! I am already redeemed of all my earthly sufferings, and the glorious portal to the kingdom of God is wide open before me!

You see, my body, this worn-out saddle of the soul for the carrying of the divine cross, is lying cold and dead on the hard bed of straw. But I, soul and spirit, who inhabited this now dead body for seventy years, am now free, live an eternal life and have neither seen nor felt physical death. For in a wonderful moment of which I was hardly conscious I was freed of my heavy burden. Feel the body and convince
yourselves that it is already quite dead." (The wife and children feel the body and find it cold and rigid and dead.) "And you see, I am still alive and speaking to you with more perfection than ever!

The reason for this is that I have always believed in Jesus. Who was crucified, and have always acted according to His commandments as far as this was possible. As He taught in the temple, namely, that those who accept His word and live accordingly, will not see and taste death, has now been fully and eternally

verified as eternal truth, for I have cast off the body without having felt how and when.

I left you no fortune, my great earthly poverty is your heritage! But be glad of it; if the blind rich of the earth knew what a wealth earthly poverty means for the spirit, they would flee their moneybags like the plague! But in their great blindness they consider that as gain, which brings them eternal death. Thus, we let them walk the road of perdition. If you want to be as happy at the end of your earthly journey as I am now, flee the worldly happiness and do not ever look for it.

Believe me, who am now talking with you from the beyond: the greater someone's cross and the heavier to carry, the easier and quicker the transition from this world of matter to that of the spirit. For all who follow Christ must walk the road of the flesh. Everything must be crucified in Christ and die in Him, or it cannot attain to any awakening and resurrection in eternity!

Through poverty, want and other tribulations of life the flesh is crucified and killed already in Christ. Therefore, everyone who lives as we have lived, and you are still living, will be awakened when the rich actually die at the end of their earthly happiness and will already harvest the full resurrection to eternal life on his deathbed! For the poor man who is surrendered to the Lord's will dies many deaths and when his goal is reached, he has conquered all death and can no longer die, but can only be resurrected in Christ. However, it is quite different with that person who has always only lived for his desires. Such a person dies at the goal of his flesh truly and completely and it is sometimes even impossible in the beyond to awaken him.

All this keep in your hearts and be full of cheer, although the world despises you and calls you names and persecutes you with all sorts of armor of their evil, hard hearts. For the Lord watches the evil one at all times and knows her plans! I tell you: when you will be resurrected, she will perish. Therefore, seek above all the Kingdom of God ad its righteousness, and everything else will be added unto you."

So do not ever envy the rich of this world, but rather feel sorry for them, for they are all exceedingly poor in spirit. All the more be happy for those who, like you, are living with every kind of cross and tribulation. For they die daily in Christ, in the end no longer to die, but to be resurrected to eternal life in Christ.

Let these my last words in this world be your great wealth, left by me; you will not have to pay taxes on this heritage! But take my body out of the room soon, for it is completely dead. On no account shall you have any ceremonies, for all ceremonies of this kind are an abomination before God. Thus, you must not pay for a mass, for the Lord God loathes a paid prayer. However, let all that you do be a living praise to the Lord, who wanted to show me such a great grace. To Him alone all our honor, all praise and all our love forever. Amen."

With these words he becomes silent for this world, being already dead physically.

At once he sees three very friendly men in white pleated garments, who greet him very kindly and shake his hand as now their brother in eternity. Gladly and blissfully and forgetting all his earthly sufferings he offers them his hands still in a sitting position above his earthly body, and says: "Oh you dear, still totally unknown friends of the Lord Jesus Christ, who you surely are! For seven full

decades, which I lived on the harsh earth, I have, in an earthly sense, seen few good days, but all the more sorrowful ones, and the last were surely the worst. For in those, my poor sinful body was literally drenched with pain and great distress. But let everything be a sacrifice to the Lord and all praise and all my love be to Him alone forever! For although I have truly suffered much, I have never lacked in occasional consolations, which have strengthened me in my heart and taught me to overlook all the physically horrible pains and wounds in the name of the Lord. And now I have overcome everything with the great grace, help and mercy of God, the Lord Jesus Christ, and am awaiting with the patience which so often mitigated all my suffering on earth, what the Lord's most holy will is to ordain for me. To Him alone be all my love, all my praise and adoration – His alone holy will be done!"

Speaks one of the three men in white: "Dear friend, what would you do if the Lord, for the sake of His great holiness and your sins – and this according to your creed – sent you into purgatory, there to suffer exceedingly great pain? Could you also then under the greatest pain in the fire glorify and praise the Lord? And could you still love Him?"

Says the poor one: "Oh you dear friend! The Lord's endless holiness surely requires the greatest purity of that soul meant to be worthy of beholding Him. But His equally great wisdom and goodness knows also how much pain a poor soul can bear, and will not expect too much of it! However, should His justice demand this from me on account of His endless holiness, let also His holy will be done! For I see also therein His great love, which only decrees such a purification of the soul so that the soul might become worthy of beholding God.

I say, the Lord is at all times the purest love, thus endlessly good, and everything He does is good. So only His most holy will be done! For if I were to entreat Him for consideration and mercy, it surely would never be as good for me as what the Lord in His great wisdom and love decrees and determines for me. Therefore, I say once and for all in eternity: Praise be to the Lord Jesus Christ, Who as the sole Lord and God rules and governs with the Father and the Holy Spirit from eternity to eternity! His most holy name be praised, and his alone holy will be done!"

Speaks the one in white: "You have spoken quite right and true. But remember that you died without confession and communion. Could it not easily happen that, standing before Christ's tribunal, you would be found with a mortal sin and in the state of disgrace, according to the doctrine of your church – had to descend to hell forever? How would you then glorify and praise the Lord?"

Says the poor man: "Friends, whatever I could do, I have certainly done. It is not my fault that I could not confess in the end. And three weeks ago, I have confessed anyway, and the father confessor assured me that I was not in need of confession for a long time. Oh friends, if I should still be afflicted with some mortal sin unknown to me, pray that the Lord may be gracious and merciful towards me, a poor sinner! For it would surely be the most horrible thing to go to hell after an earthly life of suffering! Oh Lord, your will be surely done, but do still be gracious and merciful towards my sinful soul!"

Says the man in white again: "Yes, dear friend, with our intercession, in case you had committed a mortal sin, it may still not be possible. For you know

that according to your church's doctrine God can have no mercy after death on account of His most perfect, severe and unchangeable justice. Moreover, you have in the world never liked the intercession of the saints, have thought little of the host and in the end as it were nothing at all, thereby acting in a passive way against your church as a heretic and became in its eyes a great sinner. Although we now prayed to God for you, do you think that our intercession would be of avail? Why did you not honor the litanies of the church and its requiems – according to your own last confession – when you informed your dependents that paid prayers are an abomination before God and that they should not pay a mass for you: Since that is how matters stand with you, how can we intercede for you with God? What do you think about it? Will, or can, this be of benefit to you before God?"

Speaks the poor one, full of spirit and self-control: "Friends, whosoever you may be, I do not care; you are no more than God's created beings, and that – eternal thanks and love to the Lord God! – I am too and believe I can speak with you as freely as you are speaking with me.

To be sure, I was very poor and miserable in the world; however, I could read, also write and was fairly good in arithmetic. I spent most Sundays and holidays with the careful reading and contemplation of Holy Scripture. The more I progressed, the clearer it became to me that the Roman-Catholic Church does and decrees the exact opposite of that which Christ and the apostles taught and did according to the four Gospels and the letters of the apostles. In a letter of the apostle Paul, I even found the thunderous phrase: "But if anyone, if we ourselves or an angel from heaven, should preach a gospel at variance with the gospel we preached to you, he shall be held outcast."

This sentence went like a thousand flashes of lightning through my whole soul, and I thought and asked myself: "According to these words by the apostle, how about the doctrine of Rome, which not only fails to teach the Word of God, even forbidding all lay people to read it, but teaching quite different things resembling the darkest paganism? Whom shall I now believe?"

An inner voice spoke to me quite clearly: "Do believe in the Word of God!" And I did as the inner voice had spoken.

From day to day, it became clearer to me that I was right. For I grasped it in my heart and was in spirit and in truth convinced of all I faithfully believed and did, namely, that the teaching of Christ is the pure and alone true Word of God, in which alone all salvation and eternal life can be sought and found.

God is unchangeable. As He was, He will remain the one endless, most perfect eternal Spirit of purest love. How could He have founded the Church in Rome, which preaches nothing but hatred and persecution, perdition, death and hell? "No, forever no!" a voice said in me, "whosoever judges and condemns his brothers, is himself judged and condemned! Also, you, judge and condemn no one in your heart, and you will not be judged!" This is how I heard it, and I acted accordingly. Of course, I saw more and more clearly how Rome's priesthood treated the Lord in spirit a thousand times worse than those who once actually crucified Him physically. However, I never judged them, but spoke at all times in my heart:

"Lord, forgive them, for they are all stone-blind and know not what they are doing!"

I saw and comprehended the Lord's endless love more and more. Thus, my love for Him grew mightily in me, so much so that all my earthly sufferings could not diminish it in the least, but only increase it more and more! And so, I tell you quite freely and bluntly: Christ is my love and my life – even in hell, if I should be condemned to it by you; even hell will not deprive me of Him!

I well know that I am a most unworthy sinner before God, not worthy to raise my eyes to where He, the Most Holy, dwells! But do tell me, where in the vast infinity of God is there an angel or a human being, who could say like the Lord: "Which of you can accuse Me of a sin. Truly it is more blissful for me to say: "Lord, I am the most unworthy one" than: "I am most worthy of Your grace!" I and surely you can only say, even if we had done everything, he commanded us to do: "Lord, we all have been Your most useless servants and have not deserved You in the least. O Lord, O Father! Therefore, for the sake of Your sole endless goodness onwards us unworthy ones, have grave and mercy on us!"

This is the only right we have to say and to ask; anything beyond it is, in my opinion, a mortal sin, temporally and eternally! I hope you will now comprehend why I had such little regard for the litany and the paid prayers. But I have always stood for a true intercession in the truth and love of the heart of one brother for another and this is why I asked you for it. However, you can do what you like. But in everything the Lord's most holy will be done forever!"

Says the one in white again, in his heart delighted about this new glorious brother: "Dear brother, we see your true earnestness, courage and zeal for the Lord, which is truly like a rock. But ask your heart, if you would also dare to speak like this before the Lord?"

Says the poor one. "Only my immense love for Him could loosen my tongue, but it could never deprive me of my courage. And it truly does not take much courage to confess before God Himself that one considers oneself as a truly useless servant, who is thus dependent on His grace and mercy. Oh, I have never feared Christ in the actual sense, for I loved Him too much to fear Him. Now tell me whether I shall remain here for long or not. I should like to know for certain where I shall have to go!"

Says the man in white: "Just a little more patience, for we have to wait for someone on your behalf. As soon as he arrives bringing you the Lord's sentence, you will at once be dismissed and will go as told by the will of God. You see, he is already approaching from the direction of the morning; soon he will be here. Have you no fear of him, who is coming in the name of the Lord?"

Says the poor one: "Oh no! Since I love the Lord above all, how should I fear the one He sends to me?"

Speaks the man in white: "You know, dear brother, that even the most righteous one sins seven times a day without knowing that he is sinning? Now, if you count all days beginning with the years when you became responsible and you multiply them by seven, a considerable number of mortal sins would result, particularly if – according to Ignatius of Loyola – four little one's amount to a big one! And if the messenger arrived with such an account, would you still be without fear of the Lord's messenger?"

Speaks the poor one: “No, and I repeat, not at all! I must openly confess to you, my dear friends, that I should be downright happy to be considered a really great sinner! For sin does not elevate, but humbles me, and this is right and proper. On earth, I have often felt that, when always for a very short time I was not conscious of any sin, particularly after confession. In such a state I used to be quite proud of my presumed pure moral integrity and when I happened to meet such a rascal of a man said secretly to myself: “Thank goodness that I am not like this fellow, who disregards
God and every human right!”

When soon after I myself fell again into some sin, I thought in all the contrition of my heart, when seeing another sinner: “Look, this one, whom you consider a bad fellow, is perhaps by far purer before God than you. Therefore, You, O God, be gracious and merciful towards me, a poor sinner! For now, I am not even feeling worthy of raising my eyes to your heavens! And this, friends, was surely a better way of thinking and more worthy of a habitual sinner than thinking and saying to myself: “Lord, I am pure, having observed all the laws from childhood on, and so I am now fully expecting the promised reward from You!”

However, I know, friends, that I am a sinful man before God. Therefore, I am only humble and hope for nothing on account of some merit, but everything only of His grace and mercy.

I truly fail to see what sort of merit created beings could have before the almighty God, Who alone can do all things and has never needed our help. Did they perchance help the Lord God to create heaven and earth, or effect salvation? Or did somebody benefit God, the alone Holy One, by more or less observing the laws, given by the Lord for his own benefit? I hold God to be also without us as perfect a God as He is now, since we are only destined to absorb His endless grace, mercy, and love and not, as it were, to render Him other totally unnecessary services.

You see, this is how I have always been thinking and shall forever be thinking, provided I shall be blessed with an eternal existence! Therefore, I see no reason why I should now fear the Lord’s messenger, having no reason to fear the Lord Himself. Surely, I also fear the Lord, but not like a criminal, rather like a lover, who considers himself far too sinful and unworthy to love the Lord with his impure heart and all his vital strength. What do you, dear friends, now think; am I right or not?”

Says the one in white: “We see now quite clearly that you will never allow us to convert you. And so, we do not cause you any further trouble and leave everything to the one now coming. Look, he is already here!”

At once the messenger steps up to the poor man in the friendliest manner, holds out his hand kindly and speaks: “Dear brother, rise above your mortal remains and be resurrected to eternal life in your God and Lord, whom you have always loved from your heart in Jesus Christ!”

The poor man now instantly rises in complete freedom and filled with great strength and forcefulness, speaks to the messenger, who looks simple and unpretentious: “Exalted envoy of the Almighty great God! When you held out your hand, an indescribable feeling of bliss went through my whole being. I take this as the surest proof that you are truly a messenger sent to me, a poor sinner, by the

Most High. Since you are this not only because of these three brothers, who tried to instill a great fear of you in me, but truly in accordance with my present infallible feeling, do tell me graciously what I have to expect of the strictest tribunal of God? I have no merits and will not ever have any. However, since I feel that I am a gross and great sinner before God, do tell me whether I may hope for grace and mercy?"

Speaks the messenger: "Dear brother, how can you ask such a question? Your heart is full of love for the Lord – this is already the Lord Jesus, who alone is God from eternity to eternity, in you! How should he, who has Jesus in his heart, ask whether he can hope for grace and mercy from Him? I tell you: you are already blissful and will not ever see anything of a judgment in you! Come now with me before your God, before your most loving Father, there to receive what has been prepared so amply for those who like you, love Him in all truth above all."

Speaks the poor one: "Oh exalted messenger of God! Forgive me, but I cannot follow you there! For I am forever unworthy of such grace. Instead, do take me to a quiet little spot inhabited by meritless, most inferior blissful beings of my kind, hoping to catch sight of the Lord Jesus once every hundred years from afar, and I shall be as blissful as the purest and most perfect angels! Besides, I could not bear it if the Lord Jesus came too close, for my immensely great and mighty love for Him would tear me apart, if I came to Him! So do to me that for which I asked you in the most justified contrition of my heart."

Says the messenger: My dearest brother, this cannot be, you see, the Lord wills it thus! If I can bear the Lord's closest proximity, you will too. So just come along and do not feel shy in the least! I tell you, we two are sure to get along before the Lord!"

Says the poor one: "Well yes, in God's name, if you really mean it, I will dare it! But tell me, why are these three brothers in white staring at us, as it were, moved and enchanted to the core? Do they see the Lord somewhere already?"

Speaks the messenger: "That may well be they are secretly overjoyed at you, as at every one who arrives here like you, with such love. Look there towards morning, where a low mountain rises, illumined by the most glorious dawn, over there winds our path, which we shall have covered easily and soon. From that summit yonder you will at once behold the new holy Jerusalem, the eternal city of God, where you will be dwelling forever!"

Says the poor one: "Oh brother, how glorious, how pure-divinely this glorious morning-light is shining, what glorious cloud formation! And only the most magnificent meadows and little trees! Oh, you are incomprehensibly beautiful celestial world! What are all the glories of the earth compared to? But I see also vast crowds which move towards us and hear heavenly beautiful hymns! Oh, what harmony! who could fathom its boundlessly harmonious sound? How mightily those moving towards us glitter. How shall I look amongst them in this garb, which looks very earthly still?

O God, O God! I can hardly bear it any longer! You see, they are already quite close, and now, now – what is that? They are failing on their knees and faces before us and seem to be full of contrition? Is maybe the Lord Himself approaching this crowd from some other direction? Oh, do tell me what this may mean!"

Speaks the messenger: "It may be something like that. We shall see at once what it is. Just a little more patience; with a few paces we have reached the top and will see what goes on there."

Says the poor one: "Oh you my most exalted friend, I am beginning to have the queerest sensations! Just imagine how one of our kind may be and fare – seeing for the first time the Lord of heaven and earth, the Lord over all life and death! Oh friend, I am trembling with fear and longing and in joyously fearful expectation of the things to come. Truly, a few more steps and the summit is reached! Oh, oh, what shall I be seeing?

Oh friend, do you not fear God, if you occasionally meet Him on similar occasions? Has it become such a habit with you that you do not care much about it? And yet I can see with these crowds, as with the three brothers following us, they are no less moved than I. Only you are quite indifferent and carry an expression as if everything going on here were quite irrelevant. Oh, do tell me how this has to be understood? Shall I act like you, which would be quite impossible to me?"

Says the messenger: "My dearest brother, you will soon understand why I have no fear of God, and why I do not act like our three companions, nor like you or like these crowds. It is certainly better if you behave like I do; and you will soon convince yourself that your fear is an idle one. For I tell you, the Lord does not demand all that. However, if the children thus show their earnest love and humility, they do not exactly make a mistake.

But I know that earlier you were quite fearless towards the three who greeted you, and I liked it very much – although they tried everything to instill some fear in you. How is it that you are now so fearful?"

Says the poor one: "Well, then I had no idea of such endless majesty of God and His holy heavens, but now I have before my eyes what earlier I hardly dared to think. But also, there it is quite different. What must God look like, that these show so much respect, surely for excessive holy respect before God, the Infinite One, before God the Almighty! Will my still dull and blind eyes be able to see God's countenance?"

Says the messenger: "Well, well, dearest brother, everything will turn out all right. Since you have not turned blind until now, it will be all right. Be quite calm, we are already on the summit, and there, as it were on the horizon, above which you see that sun of God, whose light illumines all the heavens and the hearts of all human beings and angels, you already see the holy city of God, in which you will be dwelling forever with Me. Let us hurry up, and we shall soon be there?"

The poor man now makes astonished eyes and is almost beside himself with amazement. Only he cannot see any reason why the crowds rise in such contrition, now following together with the three and singing continuously the most glorious Psalms in the honor of God in the most harmonious manner.

When he has mutely and blissfully regarded this incomparable celestial region for a while he asks again, saying: "Oh, dearest friend and brother! Do tell me, where do those following us see the Lord God, for they are singing exactly as if He were in their midst. Looking right and left and forward and backward, I can still see nothing which would remind me of God. Are my eyes still too dull or too

unworthy of seeing the most holy countenance of God? The latter will probably be the case forever? To be candid, I actually prefer it, for I feel, and God will know and see it best, that I could not bear His most holy countenance. Oh, I am already exceedingly happy to see all the Celestial now together with you, and that God sees me. Of course, you know, I should like to see Him just once, Him, whom I love so mightily, but mainly, to be truthful, in the person of the Lord Jesus Christ.

Oh, if I could but once see the dear, the beloved, the most beloved Lord Jesus, I should be the most blissful and happiest man of all the heavens!"

Says the messenger: "I tell you, set your mind at rest, and you will soon convince yourself that you will see Jesus sooner than you think. Yes, I tell you, you actually see Him already, only you fail to recognize Him! Therefore, set your mind at rest!"

The poor man looks again in all directions to catch a glimpse of Jesus, but he still sees no one whom he could take for Jesus. Turning again to the messenger, he says: "It is truly strange! You said you see Him already, only I failed to recognize Him. I have certainly keenly scrutinized all those following us, but He cannot be among them, for they are all full of contrition and moved by profound reverence, and all glorify and praise in unison Jesus, the Lord of eternity. The three men in white are doing the same, and so it is in my opinion hardly likely that the Lord Jesus Jehovah should be visibly among them. And yet you said that I saw Him! Oh, I beg you, do tell me: how and where exactly do I see Him?"

Speaks the messenger: "Look at the city of God, in the vicinity of which we already are, there everything will become clear to you. We are already approaching the outer walls and shall thus soon be in the holy city proper, and only there will your eyes be fully opened to you – in a similar manner as with the two disciples walking towards Emmaus. So set your mind at rest, for this is how everything must be and happen, so that nobody may suffer damage in his salvation, life and freedom. By the way, how do you like this city which we are just entering?"

Speaks the poor one: "Oh, friend, from where should I take the words to describe the endless splendor and majesty of this city! What countless number of the most immense and magnificent palaces, and all seem to be fully inhabited! Oh God, this splendor, this magnificence. Oh, this boundless majesty! The beauty is indescribable; no human mind can grasp and comprehend this! But, since we are in the city, I ask: Where is Emmaus now, and where the Lord Jesus, still hiding before my eyes?"

Speaks the messenger: "See the great house here before which we are standing, from the shining windows and outer galleries of which innumerable brothers and sisters are greeting us, this is the true eternal Emmaus! There you will from now on be dwelling forever! And since we are standing before Emmaus, which you see quite well, do turn to Me and look at Me, and you will recognize Him, for Whom you carry such a great longing and love in your heart!"

The poor man now looks sharply at the messenger, who am I Myself, and instantly recognizes Me in the messenger. And he falls at once on his knees and speaks: "Oh, You my Lord and my God! So, You Yourself were the messenger?

Oh, You most endless Eternal Love! How, how, how – could You abase Yourself, so much so as to grant such grace to me, the poorest sinner?"

After these words he falls silent in the most blissful ecstasy and is thus being conducted into the mansion of My House.

You can easily imagine the further blissful state of this man, as well as his eternal calling to love activity. Let us therefore conclude this scene. Amen"

Reunion in the Great Beyond

(31 May 1852)

Jesus is speaking: "Many people, who otherwise have their head and heart in the right place, are, if they are somewhat weak in faith, bothered by the fateful question as to whether there is another life after this short earthly one, what sort of life and whether man will recognize himself as that which he was here? Furthermore, whether he will be left with earthly consciousness and the full remembrance of all his earthly conditions or whether his awareness as well as his remembrance are not rather like that in a dream, where the dreaming person recognizes himself as exactly the same as he was when living his conscious earthly life, clearly aware of his own subjectivity, only under completely new conditions; where all aspects of his objective earthly life, apart from a few impression which are deeply imprinted onto his consciousness – like the nearest relatives and often-seen, vividly discussed and loved localities, and even those almost always under other conditions and in other forms – lose almost all existence. And is there in the vast beyond among such spiritual conditions of life, which resemble a prophetic dream, a reunion among friends, who recognize each other?

And I, the Lord, say and reply to this comprehensive question: Yes, in such and such a way! Depending on whether man has lived through his earthly probation life more or less perfectly in accordance with My order, revealed to all mankind.

Whosoever has already here attained to the true and full rebirth of his spirit, which everyone can easily achieve, lives as one fully reborn in such a way that the spirit world with all its conditions and also in its effect exerted on the material world is fully visible, like the material world. The shedding of his physical body, which is anyway incapable of a living awareness and memory, cannot possibly effect any change in his thinking, volition, memory and in his living subjective and objective awareness.

Since life and all its mutual effects have already here passed into the spirit, which is forever always in the highest and purest self-awareness and forever superior to all matter, which only manifests as a thought or an idea fixed for a certain time, I say: It should be quite obvious to anyone capable of clear thinking – particularly since he has access to a thousand proofs from the life of the somnambulists and of many seers and prophets – that the pure spiritual life in the beyond must be a much clearer life in full awareness of itself and of all subjective and objective events, conditions and arrangements of life, in keeping with the superiority of spirit over all matter - which, as shown, is nothing but a fixed expression of its thoughts and ideas – and stands forever as itself light, life, energy and fullest awareness.

However, since not only one, but all human beings living according to My order pass into the same most perfect life, the question about the ultimate reunion

is idle, for, since people have already in this imperfect life as pupa the capability of mutual recognition and natural reunion, which they cannot possibly deny or doubt, they will all the more possess this capability in the most perfect, pure-spiritual life, where their whole nature is the imperishable expression and the basic principle of all life and of all its conditions and events! To be sure, in this world the soul recognizes through the body by way of its spirit the familiar and related people, can befriend others and form intimate bonds and is thus able to recognize them at any time as to form and character. If the soul and the spirit can do this through the thousand prison walls of the as such dead body, how much more will it be able to achieve this in its completely unfettered condition, as has only too often been observed with many somnambulists, who often with firmly closed eyes quickly and precisely recognized not only those surrounding them to the core, but also the people in distant lands about whom they were asked questions, and whom they quickly and reliably recognized! And yet the soul of an ever so advanced somnambulist is by far not in the free state of that of a still more imperfect soul after the shedding of its body!

It is due to their evil volition that unperfected souls after their liberation from the body only too soon become more and more dark. Of course, such souls no longer see anything of the world, which is quite essential, for in a seeing condition they could inflict considerable damage on the world, and particularly on those whom they consider their enemies. Such souls and respective spirits then see only what develops from their fantasy, like a lowest dream world. In such a fantasy world such souls often remain for hundreds of years, oblivious of the continually arriving souls, although they were their relatives who recognize them at once. They see only their long-lasting fantasy world and are therefore only accessible for instruction to angels by way of correspondences, which the angels are capable of introducing into the fantasy world of such blind souls.

If they accept instruction and thereby a betterment of their volition, their fantasy world disappears gradually, and they come more and more to the true light and are then able to see everything around them, as well as their relatives and friends. They soon recognize them as such and are very happy to be with them.

If there is no betterment, they remain in their continually worsening dream world for an immensely long time. There is then no question of a happy reunion and recognition. Just as a physical human being in a very realistic dream is unable to remember his life in every detail, seeing only that which his imagination leads him to believe is true, just as little, and even less so, a dark soul in the beyond can remember or recognize anything within the sphere of its dream. For then it is never in an active, but always only in a passive state, from which it can extricate itself spontaneously only after an almost endless time, speaking in earthly terms.

Unless a person is here at least by half reborn, he reaches in the beyond more or less the above-mentioned state, about which he can do nothing by himself, just like an embryo in the womb, whose movements depend on the necessary external condition of the mother. However, it is still a totally different matter with such souls, and unlike the condition of an embryo in the womb. Plainly speaking, it consists in that the embryo in the womb, as a nascent creature, is throughout passive, whereas the dark soul is quite active spontaneously and at the

same time suffering, unable to become inactive because it refuses to do so thereby trying to spare itself suffering.

How is that? If a human being in this world has done very little or often nothing towards the reviving and development of that which is hidden in the heart of the soul; if it employs all its faculties for the external intellect, using it to acquire all sorts of worldly treasures and thereby offering the best luxuries and tastiest morsels and the most pleasurable sensations. When such a soul arrives in the beyond, its divine light chamber is tightly closed and inaccessible. But when the person dies the light of reason, which is really only a combination of the earthly material photographs, which are visible to the soul in the many millions of facets of the brain tablets and from which the soul always, in the way of the silly astrologers, makes its calculations and in its superstition feels coerced to act accordingly, stays in the world, like the picture gallery of an art lover. As a consequence, such a soul must arrive as totally dark in the spirit world, only with the awareness or the manifestation of life and only remembering its earthly conditions and circumstances inasmuch as they are recorded in the brain chambers of the soul (which correspond to the physical brain) in corresponding types, which the sensitive soul feels and becomes aware of, although it cannot clearly see them owing to its own darkness.

It is easy to understand and feel that such a condition only too soon becomes unbearable for a soul conditioned to all the pleasurable sensations of life. Soon such a soul is assailed by great fear and anxiety and, finally, by a great anger and rage, whereby a kind of glow develops in it.

For, wherever one sees a great activity in the material world, which is under judgment – such as the heavy gale, a strong ocean surf, a strong friction between two objects of a similar and dissimilar kind, a mighty pressure exerted by two hard objects on each other and so forth, he will, particularly at night, observe also the development of a fire or light, or at least of a glow. This is denoted by the scientists with the general, but not always appropriate, term electricity. It is actually and in full truth nothing, but an incitement of the nature spirits more or less firmly imprisoned in all matter. These can be all the more easily incited, the harder their imprisonment. If they are imprisoned less severely, as for instance in the air, in the water, in clay and in other liquid and soft bodies, it requires a relatively more vigorous movement, so that the nature spirits, which cannot dodge it so quickly, can be incited and through their fast movement within their light and very transparent envelopment become visible as a light or a glow.

Any keen observer can easily deduce and recognize from a thousand manifestations in nature that the incitement of the nature spirits consists in vibration. Whenever some human being or an animal is very upset in his nature, a trembling is noticeable in him which stems only from the incitement of the nature spirits imprisoned in the flesh and blood. A chord on a musical instrument vibrates when it is moved or struck because the spirits imprisoned in the matter of the chord are incited by the blow. The flame of every light is nothing but an act of liberation of the nature spirits imprisoned in matter and consists in increasingly more visible vibration, brought about by the activity of the nature spirits liberating themselves. There are thousands and thousands of manifestations where the same process can be observed.

It has been said that the soul by losing its worldly light and all pleasures stemming from it passes first into a great fear and anxiety and, finally, into a great anger and rage, whereby a kind of glow is engendered in it. This glow develops in the nature of the soul in the same manner as in the world of nature.

The first incitement of the innumerable spiritual soul specifics present in every soul is fear. As all specifics pass into an ever-increasing vibration, the space allotted to them in their form soon becomes inadequate. Since the outer form within which all the innumerable specifics are united to one life soon becomes too tight, for it cannot and must not be so readily enlarged, the natural consequence is an ever-increasing pressure in all directions, engendering in the concrete or rather individual life a feeling of fear.

If the urging and pushing increases and lasts for some time, a spiritual fermentation called anger develops. As already in nature the result of an increasing fermentation is a full inflammation, the end result of the great fermentation of the soul specifics is a full inflammation, and this is called rage. Such rage is then the cause of the glow which, if it increases, finally turns into a full conflagration, which as the worst manifestation of life is called rage and is actually called, and is, hell.

Now if a departed soul thus begins to glow, it begins to dimly recognize the spiritual stigmata (imprints) present in its brain and soon realizes that there is much evil and little that is good in its nature. In this dusk it often confuses the gnat with an elephant and conversely the elephant with a gnat. Such contemplations then give rise to all sorts of airy and transparent, one might say formless, forms, like the castles in the air of a young man in love in the world, which with a vivid imagination not seldom suddenly materialize, only to again disappear into nothing with the next excitement.

Since the soul is unable in this way to achieve anything of a lasting reality, being more incited and angered by the momentary fleeting pictures, which are more caricatures than well-ordered pictures, so that even its innermost begins to be affected, this inner nature develops an activity which is, however, of quite a different nature.

Through this activity (of its primordial spirit out of God) the erratic activity of the soul is calmed down, so that in the end the soul enters as it were into a sleep state, thus reposing, and in this repose, more united with its primordial spirit out of Me, it enters into a dreamlike state where it remains, feeling quite comfortable in it, a condition which the ancient soul-and-life philosophers used to call the soul sleep. The primordial spirit, which is now active contrary to the soul's desires, then creates more and more of such pictures, which on the one hand always contain what the selfish tyrannical and pleasure-seeking soul enjoys. But as soon as it tries to avidly grasp it in its dream, which it takes for reality of course, it either dissolves or flees. On the other hand, the soul is also given what is good for it, and if it seizes it and uses it for its true best, it lasts, and thus out of the dream a firm and permanent world (for the soul) begins to develop.

The more the soul grasps what it is offered by its primordial spirit, the more it unites with the same and thus passes suddenly into its primordial spirit and together with the same merges with the primordial light and all truth out of it. And it soon fully recognizes itself and all its acquaintances and relatives and is then

usually turned by them to Me personally, where then according to the degree of the perfection and unification with its spirit it is given more and more light and wisdom and the full capability to see into the natural worlds and be active beneficially. It requires no further proof that, in this case, a general reunion is quite a natural consequence of its spiritual perfection.

But what happens later to those souls, whose selfish, pleasure-seeking mind cannot be rid of the illusory pictures and manifestations of their dream life in the beyond by the good apparitions? I ask, what happens to such a soul, who flies more and more into a rage, because it cannot reach and hold on to the objects conjured up? Is there in this case also a reunion? No, say I, there is no reunion!

Such a soul's own spirit will then become its most implacable judge. In the end it allows the soul to reach the pretended things and objects and find its own evil pleasure in them, but such pleasure always results in the greater and most burning pain to the soul and again turns it for a long time quite dark.

The spirit then allows a thus darkened soul, who is in the greatest rage which glows through it, giving it an evil light by which to become aware of its own kind, really to meet such souls.

This results at once in unions and banding together of those who talk about their anger to each other. In their dream life, which such souls mistake for reality, they fortify themselves against the enemies, with whom they have been confronted against their will and, glowing with revenge, they vow to kill themselves rather than putting up with the slightest divine order.

In such a fortification, the material for which they take from their imagination – provided they are capable of any imagination in their glowing rage – they often remain for a very long time, thereby becoming again only angrier and more raging, break through their own fortification and begin to search for the enemy in hordes, because none of them tried to penetrate their fortification so that they might quench their revenge on him. But their search is in vain. They only come upon other hordes looking for the enemy and, ganging up with them soon, they go with all haste to look for the enemy without, of course, finding him.

Once there are several thousand such miserable souls together which are seen in the spirit world by the pure spirits similarly to the glow in the air caused by the conflagration of some house burning on the earth – they choose as their leader the one who gives most, considering him to be the most courageous and wisest.

He then leads them over a terrain which usually corresponds to the imagination of such souls – either in the form of a dark sandy grassland or an immense plain where nothing is seen but dry moss. After wandering for a long time on such a terrain, suffering great hunger and thirst, they usually find nothing but another similar horde under a leader glowing with rage. And it then happens that in their great thirst for revenge, they either attack, mutilate or tear each other to pieces, or they unite under two leaders. This leads at once to friction, since each of the two leaders wants to be the first, resulting after a short while in a war between the two hordes.

When in such wars, such most unhappy souls have torn one another almost into small pieces – of course only in their imagination – they again, as it were, calm down; and their spirit shows them, as in a clear dream, the futility of their foolish, blind endeavor and points out to them the better road, namely a change of heart.

Occasionally, some follow this direction and convert. But in most cases, they rave even more and fall back into their spiritless pure soul condition, which is then by far worse than the former. And such conditions are then already hell, from which it is difficult to escape. Whosoever does not take the narrow path through his own heart will not ever succeed and may remain for trillions of earth years in such a hell.

Thus, it has been shown how the life of the soul in the beyond develops in two main directions diametrically opposed to each other: either upward or downward. All this is not meant to comprise all the manifestations in the spirit world, but, as mentioned, only the two general main trends, thus the crassest for and against.

Hallway between these two main conditions there are still an immense number of manifestations, which do not have to be discussed here, since they have been sufficiently demonstrated in the works "The Spiritual Sun", "Earth and Moon" and in "Scenes of the Spirit World", as well as scattered among other writings and revelations about nature. However, all the manifestations described there have as their basis the main rule shown here, and the main roads either upward or down are as such the same.

The actual true reunion occurs only in the divine realm that is in heaven, which fills the space of the whole of infinity and is thus omnipresent, but which can be reached by every human being only through his heart.

However, since there are many people in the world, who are so materially inclined as to know nothing at all of the spiritual arrangement of things, and who are here reading of "nature spirits" without understanding anything about them, a brief supplementary explanation is given as follows.

The entire material as well as the purely spiritual creation is nothing, but an idea fixated by the Almighty will of the Deity and, coming from the heart or the life of the Deity Itself and - because out of God – in actual fact spiritual. Now, if the entire so-called material creation were no longer fixated, which would be easily possible to God, it would again take root spiritually in the heart of God, as a great idea only visible to the Deity, and the independence of countless beings would come to an end!

But God wants forever His great thoughts and ideas to be realized in the freest independence everlastingly. And this is why God has taken this alone effective way, thereby ensuring the immutable fixation of all the divine thoughts and ideas.

The countless thoughts and ideas must be rendered successively freer and freer as it were in the minutest spiritual particles, at the same time being attracted and fixated for a long time by some principal idea of God, floating as a visible world globe in the endless space of thoughts and ideas. The homogeneous particles then unite more and more and pass into an ever greater being up to man.

Such particles more and more released from the total principal idea (the world globe), as well as the not yet released particles, which are still fixated in the principal idea, up to man are called "nature spirits". These freer nature spirits – or natural forces as the worldly scientists call them – are present in an actively independent form either in the air, in the water or in the more pliable soil. There they coax the still firmly imprisoned spirits into freedom, uniting with them.

Clothing themselves with the more unfree spirits, they create all sorts of life forms; at first plants, from these animalcules and animals of a larger and largest kind. This continues up to man, where they, as soul and also, according to the more unfree, still coarse part, as his body, sufficiently mature for a fully free independence, are then seized by God's primordial Being itself and are literally – initially still as from without – educated and trained for the subsequent pure-spiritual, everlasting condition.

Those who submit to such an education and voluntarily accept the order in which alone their forever independent, freest life is possible, achieve the great reunion with Him, from Whom they have gone forth. They will realize how and from where and through Whose might and wisdom and immutable determination they have passed from actual non-existence to the fullest, freest and independent existence and cognition.

At the same time, being of one and the same nature as their first Cause, they will spontaneously, out of their now inherent wisdom, which is equal to the divine wisdom, effect new creations and thus, fully within My order, be the creators of their own heavens, whereby they will achieve the actual reunion with all their thoughts and ideas.

All this will then be a great, everlasting, actual reunion in the endless fullness of all that a divine spirit contains in its eternal abundance. And only this is then the perfect, great reunion!

I reckon, whosoever has eyes to see and ears to hear, will derive indescribably much from it to his own eternal advantage for the full recognition of the spiritual life.

But he who will only read it out of a kind of curiosity, applying the file of his worldly intellect to it, will fare as it can be read in this description. For My mercy can and must never reach beyond the boundaries of My immutable order shown from its foundation. And this order as such is already My eternal mercy.

Whosoever transgresses the boundaries of this order will only have himself to blame for an extremely long, distressful condition in the beyond. For everyone must do his part, if he wants to be what he is meant to be. Whosoever does not want to go to this trouble, must remain in the eternally necessary judgment until such time when he will begin to change himself, and this will be a hard battle for the soul!

Therefore, let every one of you beware of (selfish striving for) worldly possessions, wealth, splendor and status, but be with all his might charitable towards his poorer brothers and sisters, and his battle with the darkness will be an easy one. Amen.

This, the Lord of all life is telling you. Amen. Amen. Amen.

Note: The Lord has mentioned in many of these teachings that man, in most cases, will be addressed by three angles that will invite him to follow them or to go their own way. The decision is yours, if you choose to follow them, where are they going to take you? Let's find out:

Chapter 6: Entering the Kingdom of Light

The Soul's Entry into the Kingdom of Light, In My Father's House are Many Mansions, "Eye Has Not Seen," Spiritual Creations – Beatitude, Land of Peace, Other worlds, Diversity of Stars, Stars – dwelling place for Souls, Activity in the Beyond, Separate Worlds, Androgynous Beings – beyond Examples of Life on Other Worlds, Redeeming Work in the Beyond, Test the Spirits, Mental Influence by Beings of Light, Reunion in the Beyond, Eternal Punishment and Eternal Death – do they exist. . . and much more

The Soul's Entry into the Kingdom of Light

BD No. 8400 of 02/02/1963 taken from book 88

Jesus is speaking: 'Every spiritual request shall be granted to you. I have given you this promise because My love will fulfill everything that will benefit your soul. And thus, you can also rest assured that you will enter the kingdom of light and bliss after your physical death if you have lived your life on earth in accordance with My will, if you have demonstrated your love for Me through your activity of unselfish neighborly love, and if you have lived your life on earth with Me by having allowed Me to be your constant companion.

'He that believeth in Me hath everlasting life.' And anyone who lives a life of love also believes in Me with a true, living faith, and he will therefore be granted a blissful life in the spiritual kingdom. And realization will indeed come to him in a flash, he will move within true thinking and his happiness is such that the soul with its light, by which it is permeated, will also be able to delight the souls which still linger in darkness and long for light, by making others happy it will find its own happiness, and so it has to have a bright light shining within itself first.

You humans cannot possibly imagine this beatitude nor the nature of the activity, but you may well believe that these souls will no longer desire to return to earth, especially since they know that no human being will remain on earth and every soul will soon meet its loved ones again. Therefore, they should not grieve either but only ever strive to achieve a high degree of love which will facilitate their spiritual vision, because this degree is necessary for souls to meet again immediately after their passing away from this world, otherwise the souls will first have to strive for and attain this degree in the beyond.

Yet the fact that people will meet again one day is absolute truth, and it will be an exceptionally joyful moment when the union takes place in the spiritual kingdom. You humans, who are affected by harsh strokes of fate, should always bear in mind that whatever happens to you in earthly life is only founded on My love and wisdom. Stay mindful of the fact that I don't want to cause you suffering but greater beatitudes, which you often gain through suffering. And you should not doubt it but humbly accept everything and, truly, the blessing will not fail to materialize itself. And if, one day, you look back on your earthly existence, you will be filled by profound gratitude and love for Me, whom you recognize as your Father, Who only has His children's fate at heart, which will await them in the kingdom of the beyond.

Be aware of the fact that you won't stay much longer on this earth, and that you therefore will have to accept a greater amount of suffering in order to reach the goal of voluntarily uniting yourselves with Me. And every prayer you send to Me will come from the bottom of your heart and therefore will also be answered by Me. You will often send your thoughts into the kingdom, which is your true home, and will also be allowed to receive currents of light and strength from this

realm, you will keep in constant contact with those who merely went ahead of you and who, if you possess a high degree of maturity and light, will support you to also achieve your goal while you are still on earth. For a soul which is already permitted to spread light will also be able to transmit the light to you humans, and that means that you will then live within utter truth, for where light exists no error will be able to sustain itself because it will be recognized as such, and the path of anyone living in truth must lead to the goal without fail.

And believe that I know every thought in your heart, and thus I also know what you still need and take care that it will be imparted to you. And even if I occasionally use painful means they will nevertheless liberate the souls from their physical constraints and they will merely exchange earthly life with a far more beautiful life in the spiritual kingdom, where they will be of loving service to Me and therefore also enjoy beatitudes which earthly life cannot offer. For they have entered the eternal truth from whence they once originated."

In My Father's House are many Mansions

BD No. 5449 of 07/26/1952 taken from book 60

Jesus is speaking: "In My Father's house are many mansions. Can you understand the meaning of My Words? That I promise you a dwelling in My Father's house but at the same time want you to know that a suitable abode is prepared to accommodate every one of My living creations, that I want to tell you, that what you have not yet achieved on earth you can still strive to achieve in My kingdom, because I have countless possibilities to improve your development in the spiritual kingdom. I have not just the earth at My disposal, but all My creations are places to attain full maturity for the still imperfect soul until it has finally developed to the point that, in heavenly bliss, it will be able to take possession of the most magnificent spiritual creations, for wherever it stays is in 'My Father's house', in the sphere of My infinite love, and it will always stay where the Father has prepared a dwelling place which corresponds to its degree of love and its ability to reign and work in the realm to which it was assigned by Me.

In My Father's house are many mansions. No being is homeless, the eternal home accepts all souls, yet this home has many different aspects, it can exhibit the most magnificent flower gardens and wonderful palaces, but it can also include infinitely vast barren regions which take ages to wander through, yet even in these barren regions paths branch off which lead to areas full of flowers, and it just depends on whether the ramblers pay attention to these paths, whether they attentively try to find a way out from this barren region and also take this way out. Everyone will be accepted in My eternal home, and everyone has the right to take ownership of a dwelling. But what it consists of is entirely subject to their will.

And therefore, I say: In My Father's house are many mansions. For every human being, every being, prepares its own place of abode depending on the degree of its perfection. Yet no matter how poor his dwelling is, through his will and his work it can really quickly be transformed, and the most delightful homesteads can arise if only the soul has the desire for it and diligently strives for fulfillment. In that case it will be supported by countless helpers who will create and work with the soul, and it can become a paradise-like dwelling place where previously was a barren and bleak region. One day every soul will return to its true

home, but as long as it is still imperfect it will feel homeless, although it will have already entered the kingdom from whence it once had come. However, I have many schoolhouses, and higher development will advance for sure, even if it often requires a long time. One day the lost son will return home and reside in the mansion he once owned, he will stay in the Father's house where all children are gathered around the Father, he will be lovingly received by the Eternal Love, Which will give him a seat next to Himself.

Yet infinite times will still pass by until all My children have found home again, until they can take up residence in My house; infinite times will still pass by, yet I will not abandon any one of My children. The Father's love attracts them, and not one of My children will be able to resist this love forever."

'Eye Has Not Seen'

BD No. **2415** of 07/19/1942 taken from book 32

Jesus is speaking: "Eye has not seen, nor ear heard, nor have entered into the heart of man the things which God has prepared for those who love Him. God has withheld the knowledge of this from people, He merely expects their faith in the glories of the beyond, in fact it cannot be shown to them as long as they live on earth, because what God has in store for His children is nothing of an earthly nature, it cannot be perceived with earthly eyes and felt with earthly senses. Nevertheless, His Word is truth, and thus the soul can expect an exceedingly happy state in which it can see and experience the most wonderful things. Nothing on earth exists which could be used as a comparison and even roughly correspond to the truth. It is a state of blissful happiness; it is a continuous view in the spiritual world whose inconceivable diversity reveals itself to the spiritual eye. All spiritual beings are united with each other in utter harmony and equilibrium; there is constant activity of love, a coming together and complementing of each other, a continuous service to God and reception of spiritual strength, a continuous giving of happiness and increase of strength of love. It is an indescribable bliss, merely one look at this glory would prompt humanity to live a completely different way of life, yet this would not be judged in the same way as a right way of life before God without knowing the reward. The human being shall be good of his own innermost accord if he wants to partake in these joys in the beyond. Nevertheless, God made this promise to people, and as soon as a human being accepts it as truth, as soon as he believes, the knowledge about this blissful state in the beyond will no longer be a danger to him, for then he will be so united with God that he will strive to be good of his own accord and will not feel obliged to live a good way of life because of promises. For God has prepared these glories for those who love Him; Love for God is the condition, but this must be born in the innermost heart and only the degree of love will be judged, not a deed which is accomplished for the sake of reward. But where love is present, the reward is not thought of. Where love is present, there must also be happiness and bliss, for God Himself is love, and God's presence is the most wonderful and happiest state for the soul, love is the fulfillment; God's love is the epitome of heavenly beatitude."

Spiritual Creations – Beatitude - 'Eye hath not seen'

BD No. 3670 of 01/28/1946 taken from book 46

Jesus is speaking: "Everything that is visible to you testifies of My might and strength and love. Yet My strength of love also produced invisible creations which will delight you in the spiritual kingdom, but only when you have achieved the degree of maturity which allows for spiritual vision. Then you will indeed marvel at My love's works of wonder, they will enchant your eye, nevertheless they will also be comprehensible to you, for then you will recognize Me Myself as strength and love, then you will already be so pervaded by it that you will be able to understand that it is the primary cause of every creation, and then you will forever glorify the One Who employs His will for constant works of love.

The spiritual creations are inconceivable to people on earth, they are the epitome of proportion, perfection, beauty and versatility, they are exceptionally magnificent formations, and their ever-changing appearance makes them increasingly more wonderful to behold and they will never tire or oversaturated the onlooker's eye but forever cause immense happiness and gratitude towards Me, the Creator of heaven and earth. Indeed, earthly creations occasionally also appear lovely to a person and let his heartbeat faster in the realization that he is facing the eternal Creator, Who is almighty and full of love. However, the most beautiful creations on earth are but a pale reflection of the spiritual creations which are incomparable, since it is not possible for My love be so evidently visible on earth because people have not yet changed themselves into love.

But I can bestow the abundance of My love to souls which have become love, My creative love can reveal itself to them and I can show them and bestow on them what I have promised 'Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God hath prepared for them that love Him.' And the more profoundly a being is able to love the more glorious will the creations become. Profound love gives them an insight into My reign and activity in the spiritual kingdom, they are no longer opposite Me as imperfect beings, but have become what I Am Myself, love, they are full of might and strength themselves, and in highest perfection are able to create and shape in harmony with My will through My strength.

No comparison can be given to people on earth about their activity in the spiritual kingdom since it is subject to completely different laws and spiritual activity has nothing in common with physical activity, with work on earth. Yet it is a blissful activity, an activity which signifies supreme happiness for the being which has become love, which can think, feel and want, which is able to see and hear, which feels like an individual being and yet is extremely happy in unity with other beings because it thereby increases its strength and love and intensifies its ability to be active. The inhabitants of the spiritual world exist in a state of utterly blissful harmony, a state which is constantly aspired to as soon as the soul has attained realization on earth or in the spiritual kingdom.

I would like to place all beings into this state because I love them and would like them to behold the glories of My kingdom. For the activity of My love constantly applies to My living creations' happiness, My love is infinite and wants to give and delight, and thus I want to make My living creations worthy of being allowed to stay in spiritual creations; yet they themselves have to want it, they

must shape themselves into love of their own free will so that they can be made indescribably happy in the spiritual kingdom for all eternity."

Land of Peace – Gabriel

BD 0204 27.11.1937

God the Father is speaking: "We want to fulfill your prayers and instruct you in the teachings of Jesus Christ. Accept everything you are given in your heart and live accordingly. You will greatly benefit if you ceaselessly work to record it. The time of receiving this grace won't be long, and in order to be able to work for our Lord and Savior, you must have attained a high degree of faith and knowledge. It depends solely on you as to whether this short time will be used well. Therefore, do not let any opportunity pass you by unused. The spiritual beings will always choose the form of their manner of speaking such that you will soon recognize who is imparting His teachings to you. However, today you receive a proclamation which is intended to explain much and shall introduce you to an area which is still unfamiliar to you. So listen:

Many souls of the deceased, straight after their death enter a specifically designated land where no worry and trouble exist. An angel named Gabriel presides over this land, and he provides a peaceful and quiet existence for everyone. That is where many a tired soul gets to know silent solitude in contemplative reflection for the first time and, in a manner of speaking, is compensated for its laboriously spent days on earth until, after having rested, it considers its purpose in the eternal kingdom. The glimmer of the sunrise sends a gentle light across the entire valley, the eye constantly revels in the strands of outstanding beauty, no shadow clouds this vision and no discord disturbs the passive observer in the midst of this splendor, only singing and ringing surrounds him. And this rest strengthens the soul until it awakens from its reverie and feels the urge to become lovingly active. Anyone having reached a degree on earth which enables him to enter this valley of peace, will be lovingly approached by the Lord and chosen for a wonderful task in the beyond. Oh, if only you all followed your hearts recognize the task you are meant to fulfill on earth in order to enter this valley, just a glance into this land would let you endure anything on earth. So pay heed: Every loyal follower of the Savior who gives His heart to Him is promised life by the Lord, yet what does life mean if you may not enjoy it in His presence? However, this land is merely a sample of the life close to the Savior; it is merely a transition from the bleak existence on earth to the illuminated realms of beatitude. Words cannot describe the magnificence emanating from the Savior's presence, and in order to be able to endure this brilliance the soul needs a period of transition amid indescribably beautiful pastures, which a human heart cannot imagine. My dear child, we would gladly let you have an insight into this land, but the Lord does not deem the time to be right for you as yet, therefore, with diligence and faithfulness and love for the Savior you should devote yourself ever more to spiritual matters, so that we may instruct you ever more comprehensively in order to ease your path on earth and to keep your eyes looking heavenwards. You are being granted an immeasurable grace through these proclamations. Accept each one with devotion and remain grateful to the heavenly Father now and forever. Amen."

Other Worlds

Ref: MVN 1943:261

Jesus is speaking: "I would be a very small and limited God the Creator if I had created only the Earth as an inhabited world! With a beat of my will, I have brought forth worlds upon worlds from nothing and cast them as luminous fine dust into the immensity of the firmament.

The Earth, about which you are so proud and fierce, is nothing but one of the bits of fine dust rotating in unboundedness, and not the biggest one. It is certainly the most corrupt one, though. Lives upon lives are teeming in the millions of worlds which are the joy of your gaze on peaceful nights, and the perfection of God will appear to you when, with the intellectual sign of your spirits rejoined to God, you are able to see the wonders of those worlds."

Diversity of Stars

BD No. 8838 of 08/08/1964 taken from book 93

Jesus is speaking: "You are requesting clarification about the creations in the universe, and I want to provide it for you as far as you are able to understand it. The creations are partly of a spiritual and partly of a material kind, but these cannot be regarded as earthly material, for My creative will is incredibly versatile and you should never assume that other stars have the same composition as earth. However, you have to consider that it is not just earth, which is sheltering solidified spiritual substances, but that the innumerable stars visible to your eyes were called into being by Me to help the ascent of all human souls which have not yet reached the degree of maturity needed in order to continue their development in the creations of the beyond.

The whole of creation is My emanated strength, and the earth is the most miserable creation because it consists of coarse matter. Thus, anyone covering the process through its creations would be able to completely spiritualize what as 'soul' gives life to the human being. Yet the attained degrees of maturity in which the soul departs from earth after the death of its body are very different. And thus, it will be received by other creations which, as far as it is concerned, certainly also exist in the 'beyond' but which by no means can be called purely spiritual creations, since their substances are likewise solidified spiritual essence, strength, which once emerged from Me as a being and failed to become active in accordance with My will. However, this matter is far lighter and more compliant, so that the souls staying there are impelled into eager activity and mutual helpfulness, thus they continue to progress ever more. Thus, it can be said that this matter is easily dissolvable and yet it also shelters spiritual substance which had once become unfaithful to Me but which does not suffer to the extent as is the case on earth, which gladly is of service in facilitating the souls' further development, which (this matter) therefore will disintegrate again as soon as it has fulfilled its task.

The creations on these stars are inhabited by beings, which can also be called human beings, who likewise have the task of supporting these souls' further development, consequently material creations have to exist as well, yet they should not be imagined such like those on earth. The beings (souls) are now in a world which offers them incredible things and yet it is a tangible world, because everything is permeated by My spiritual strength and it will remain a tangible world until the complete spiritualization of all beings has taken place, which then will no longer require a material world.

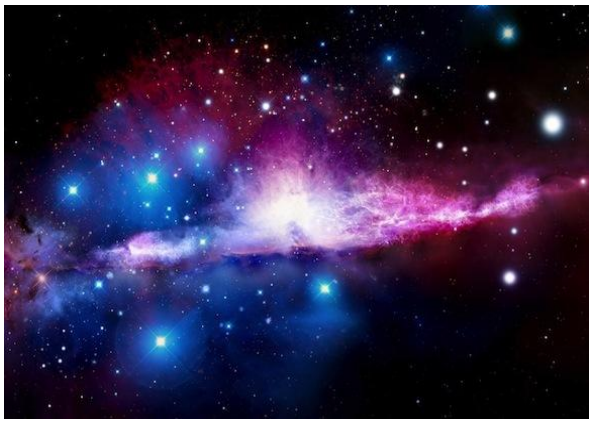
But since this shall continue for an eternity and the stars in the firmament are thus visible to you humans, you are instructed to the effect that all these worlds are My will which has taken on shape, that I have emanated strength which more or less was deeply fallen spiritual essence, that this strength manifested itself, thus it is and remains visible for the respective inhabitants of these stars, who merely possess different degrees of realization and are thus also able to admit inhabitants from earth in order to help them further their development. Then you humans will exist 'beyond' earth and yet in My kingdom and depending on your maturity you will change your abode in order to enter ever more spiritualized creations.

Yet whatever your eyes behold as heavenly bodies in the firmament are creations which were brought into being by My will; and these creations are the original spirits which had once deserted Me, they were given a task by Me that they now fulfill, hence they more or less acknowledge Me again, consequently, they didn't descend quite so low but nevertheless require material creations in order to fulfill their task therein. Yet it cannot be said that it is earthly matter, since this spiritual essence had fallen into the deepest abyss which the human being on earth has to overcome over an infinitely long period of time, rather, those material creations were given to people for their happiness and to delight in them. For a visible star must also exhibit visible creations which should illustrate to the already more mature spirits their Creator's magnitude and power and also offer the spiritual substances still in need of maturing the opportunity to be of service. This problem is not easy to explain to you because you only understand what exists on your earth, and even here your knowledge is limited, but how other stars have an effect on your thoughts will remain hidden to you as long as you are incapable of seeing spiritually. Then, however, this realm will be open to you and you won't be able to stop marveling at the creations on the individual stars. Yet all My works have their reason and demonstrate My love and wisdom and might.

And whatever seems inexplicable to you will become known to you the more your soul's maturity advances, then there will be no more questions which could not be answered for you. And this wealth of knowledge will make you very happy, even if it is at the moment still concealed from you.”

Stars - dwelling place for Souls

BD No. 0258 of 01/14/1938 taken from book 5/6



God the Father is speaking: "Behold, today we proclaim to you in the Saviors' name that which will introduce you to infinity. There are times when you are drawn to observe the splendors of the stars; do you ever consider the glories that might hide behind them? And no matter how many million stars you see in the firmament, it is nevertheless only a part of infinity, it is merely a fraction of Creation and does not even begin to give you an idea as to how many more of such stars in the universe are still invisible to you. This myriad of celestial bodies is only governed by one Spirit, one Light, and one Deity. Over thousands of years, it has been the Creators will to offer completely free beings the opportunity for advancement on these stars, and to gradually prepare them for the state in eternity where they shall be illuminated by an abundance of light which far exceeds all the light of the stars in the universe. Yet even the abundance of light on each of these stars differs in intensity, the sizes of the suns, which give light and warmth to these stars, are, in turn, so different that no-one on earth would be able to imagine them, because these areas are inaccessible to human research and would only lead to wrong conclusions. Nevertheless, everything in space is so well arranged that from eternity to eternity nothing of this wise order of worlds can be revoked, that no star would ever be able to leave its designated orbit and take a different path. And thus listen: The Lord created space for the perfection of all His beings and for the duration of the earthly course of life, for instance, the human being has a number of years at his disposal during which he can attain a degree of perfection which will place him into bright surroundings. The soul shall continue to develop to ever higher realms and be offered ever more opportunity. And the purpose of every star is to offer the countless beings a space that suits their spiritual state where the spiritual beings' activity shall be continued. It is incredibly difficult to explain this to a person, for he can only grasp this with his human intellect and is incapable of imagining the multitude of stars which are subject to God's will and which time and again offer countless beings the opportunity to mature fully again."

Activity in the Beyond - Effect on the Uninformed

BD No. 0239 of 12/27/1937 taken from book 5/6

God the Father is speaking: "Everyone will receive what he requires. Believe me, my child; it is entirely up to you. If you spend your days with trust in God you will, time and again, have the opportunity to find the Savior and all admonitions and instructions offered to you will always encourage you to refine your spirit and soul. Don't give in to any negative notions, always fight against them and try to treat everyone with kindness, then you will find it increasingly

easier to master such days, which can easily set you back. Every step of the way needs to be overcome. No-one will ever reach the goal without effort and only constant battle leads to victory. You will find it far more satisfying when you have succeeded and, full of love and devotion, turn to the Savior again. The more sincerely you pray to Him, the stronger the Lord's strength and help will be. Never lose confidence and fight against spiritual lethargy.

Dear child, once again we want to inform you about the activity in the beyond: In the world over there, which is still closed to you, many souls are lingering in a state which they find difficult to separate from. This is always the case when they have neither realized on earth nor in their present state that they are able to change this state for themselves. As long as this awareness has not yet arisen in them, they helplessly and idly wander through the universe, with constant longing for the Earth and the environment they had left behind, and it often takes a long time until they finally realize that they can and must make an effort.

And once again we want to point out to you that these earthbound beings are often near you. Until they have grasped the meaning and value of your spiritual work, they must observe much, and you are constantly surrounded by such straying souls. This alone should be an incentive for you not to slacken, and your work of improving yourself is also watched by them and does not remain without an impression. Once they have grasped the richly blessed effect of the connection from the beyond to earth, the strong urge to take part in this will also awaken in them, to help wherever possible, and they will longingly turn towards every ray of light in the hope of reaching a brighter environment which is permeated by light. This will always be easier for those who had not entirely opposed spiritual thoughts; however, how many regarded everything of a spiritual nature as strange on earth, how many constantly opposed these issues in a negative way? It will often take a long time in the beyond before they gain realization and we are very pleased if such souls follow your activity as well, albeit for the time being they do not avail themselves of any practical application. Behold, my child, you must therefore faithfully persevere for love of the Savior Who takes loving care of every being, of every spiritually dark and straying soul. A single human being with good will and love for the Savior can bring infinitely many blessings to such beings, he gains much grace for himself, he can help people on earth, and he shows countless poor souls the right path. They did not succeed in the valley of earth, but every soul is so grateful now for the help they receive from the valley of earth because their struggle in the beyond is so much harder than on earth."

Separate Worlds - Various Heavenly Bodies

BD No. 6977 of 11/27/1957 taken from book 74

God the Father is speaking: "Countless heavenly bodies circle in the universe, that you people are not able to see, that all have emerged from God's strength of love, that's to say they were once-radiated divine strength of love in their substance, but originally it had another destination. For this radiated strength of love were beings, who should be active by the will of God, but which have not fulfilled their original destination and used their own force in a will opposed to

God. So these beings miseducated themselves to creatures in a completely adverse type to God, and they couldn't stay in their deformity, because it contradicted the divine order. Therefore, God reorganized these creatures, He dissolved them into countless tiny sparks of force, and from that He let arise new creatures of various kinds. That, what once was created as self-conscious beings, were now initially rigid structures, which God gave many different forms and the most various purpose determination. He brought (gathered) Himself so to speak once emanated strength from Him in specially created forms for that. He created countless worlds by virtue of His will, which are basically all the same: transformed spiritual beings, but which should get back their original form, but therefore first must serve each other in God's will. Insofar all these worlds are connected with each other, that they have the same creative spirit as the Father, that they all are created by the same power and also, they all have as a last aim the association with this creative spirit again. One will rein all these worlds, and one strength preserves them. But nevertheless, the different worlds are separated from each other, and none of the worlds comes into close contact with one another, because the basic substances of each single world are collected in accordance with it, and these basic substances have come more or less insubordinate to God and therefore they also need the most various individual creations, to organize themselves again and enter into the original state. Therefore, each heavenly body is a work of creation for itself. All stars are different from each other in basic substance, creation and destination because the will to create of the eternal creative spirit is unlimited, because even His love and His wisdom is limitless. And His last aim is, to get back all once radiated strength from Him as accomplished children, who can create and act with Him in the same will for their pleasure and their salvation. The earth is such a work of creation, that God let arise for the purpose, that miseducated beings can turn again to their original being through their own will after endless long time. But only the earth offers the possibility, to achieve the highest perfection, while the other worlds partly contain already highly developed beings, partly are teaching institutions for such self-aware beings, who did not reach the aim in life on earth, but still need and also can be able to get to a certain level of maturity, once being able to fulfill its original purpose. However, for the achievement of the highest aim only the earth is the responsible work of creation, but therefore a passage on this earth is also far more difficult than going through other worlds. But in the end all creations in the universe serve only one purpose for the return of the spiritual, which once had fallen away from God. And therefore, each creation will also remain strictly separated from the others, because the self-aware spiritual has to cover its course of development in complete freedom of will in each world, but immediately this freedom of will would be at risk, if compelling evidence would arise by compounds of self-aware beings for the salvation plan of God and the free striving for perfection would be prevented from itself thereby. Although spiritual connections exist and can be initiated, but these do not exert any compulsory faith on the self-aware beings of this earth, they can be believed and not believed, and they only will exert a beneficent influence, if a certain state of maturity of those beings has already reached, if people on earth have already recognized their purpose of existence and want to achieve their last aim. Then they are already near completion, and

they do not need evidence, they believe also without such and strive for their reunification with God in free will."

Androgynous Beings - Beyond

BD No. 6821 of 05/02/1957 taken from book 73

Jesus is speaking: "I will give you what you need for the maturing of your souls. And in the last days I will also give people the kind of knowledge which, although it is not absolutely essential, should also reveal My love and wisdom to you, which will explain much that is incomprehensible to you and could cause you to doubt Me. I Am revealing to you My detailed plan of Salvation because the end is approaching, and unbelieving humanity should still receive a slight opening which lets the light shine through if people do not refuse to accept this knowledge. I Am lifting a veil which was still enshrouding people, I Am revealing secrets to make it easier for people to believe in Me. And therefore, I Am also always willing to answer questions which are put to Me either openly or in thought on earth or in the spiritual kingdom. For I want to give light to everyone who wants to escape the darkness.

Consequently, I have also occasionally given explanations which the human being on earth does not yet need but which will become self-evident to him in the spiritual kingdom if he has prepared himself for the spiritual kingdom. Then he will receive the understanding in a flash as soon as he desires it. One of these questions concerns the 'gender' of the beings which I created, which already has been the cause of much deception, but which is of little relevance to people during their earthly life.

There is no being that does not incorporate both principles of gender within itself. They are merely distributed differently in each being, so that one is governed by the male and the other by the female aspect. But perfection requires the complete balance of both principles; neither shall be more or less. Only then will the state of perfection have been achieved, hence a perfect being can either be called androgynous (having the physical characteristics of both sexes) or male and female in one. The male principle must have aligned itself completely to the female and vice versa, only then will the being correspond to My nature, it will have become My image. This alignment will either already be achieved on earth, or it will take place in the spiritual kingdom, where the being will be constantly subjected to tests in which the male and female principles have to prove themselves in turn. Hence it is entirely irrelevant whether the being is embodied on earth as a man or a woman, because the alignment with the opposite principle must irrevocably take place. However, this is not meant in an earthly-perceptible way in as much as the man or woman should acquire the characteristic features of the other, but the alignment is an entirely spiritual matter, it is a person's integration with divine law, which therefore also requires different degrees of willpower, and this can be easier for one and more difficult for another person.

And therefore, it follows that there is indeed a division of the sexes on earth but in the spiritual kingdom the being's own earthly shape will merely surround it as an aura, thereby also identifying the individual. Consequently, one can speak about a closer relationship of spiritual beings who, having the same degree of maturity, feel attracted to each other. But one cannot speak of a union between

different sexes, since every individual will be a perfectly androgynous being. However, where the alignment of the different principles has not yet taken place the characteristic features of the different sexual beings will also be more apparent, which is particularly noticeable in the spheres where the separation from the earthly-physical world is not entirely complete.

But such sexual differences do not exist in higher spheres and therefore it is wrong to speak of relationships which resemble those between a man and a woman on earth, because the blissful unity of two beings is based on spiritual similarity, on the same degree of maturity and complete spiritual agreement. This will always be more prevalent amongst beings who have aligned both principles within themselves and whose bliss is therefore beyond imagination when they associate with similar beings to create and work together.

But the being's earthly progress is neither an advantage nor disadvantage irrespective of whether the human being is a man or a woman. Resistance to Me can be equally strong and surrender to Me can be carried out by both. The separation of the male and female principle is merely to make every being's acceptance of divine order easier, thus accepting the characteristics of perfection increasingly more. My wisdom is certainly able to make this assessment and therefore I gave every being the outward appearance which offers the guarantee of achieving its best possible alignment. But the beings' happiness in the spiritual kingdom is beyond measure when both principles within themselves have become orderly, and therefore they are also able to put themselves in the position of every yet unsaved being and support it in its fight against itself and its anti-divine characteristics, which first have to be put right.

And then again, the happiness in the kingdom of the beyond, although it cannot be compared, will match the happiness on earth which unites two people with heartfelt love when compatible beings find each other, whose deepest love for each other will give them the kind of happiness which is known by you humans as a marriage made in heaven. However, worldly standards or worldly concepts can no longer be applied in the kingdom of the blissful spirits, where the greatest happiness is triggered by deeply felt love for Me, which will always be reciprocated by Me again."

Examples of Life on other Worlds

A Visit to a Star

Ref: "The Universe" by Jakob Lorber

"Excerpt from the Great Gospel of John 02:136, 07 on. **The angel [Rafael**:] Do you see yonder bright star towards the East? Behold, if a paved road led there from here, then verily, the Earth does not have the number of grains of sand for the number of years a bird would need to reach it, let alone a man running. Yet for me it is possible to get there in a moment! You shall not notice my absence, yet I shall nevertheless be there and back - Do you believe me?"

Says Jarah: "Why should I not believe you such? But there can of course be no talk of my being convinced, because I would not want to make a journey with you there like to the seabed!"

Says the angel: "But why not? Are not all things possible to God? If it pleases the Lord, it doesn't matter to me! That no harm shall come to you I vouch for, together with all the countless angels you see shining brilliantly on all sides!"

Says Jarah to Me: "Lord, is this indeed possible?"

Say I: "In this angel's arms indeed! You can if you want to hand yourself over to him, and in a few moments, you shall be back here with Me, well-preserved; but fetch yourself a souvenir from there as well!"

With these words Jarah assigns herself to the angel, saying: "Behold, I have the courage; carry me there if you can!"

Thereupon the angel picked Jarah off the ground, and pressing her fervently to his bosom, disappeared. In ten seconds, he was back here with Jarah, who had a stone in her apron which shone as brightly as the morning star in its most brilliant light.

On recovering somewhat from her amazement, Jarah asked Me: "Oh, Lord, are all these countless stars what yonder star is which I have now actually beheld with my physical eyes, or the eyes of my feelings? For that certainly is a vast world! This world compared to that one now seems like a snail-shell compared to this mountain! Also, humans, completely perfect humans, living in unspeakably huge yet marvelously constructed temples there are also in yonder outsize and grand world, but these people are so colossal that they would exceed this mountain at least threefold if standing at the sea below. Thus, everything in yonder world is thousand times a thousand bigger than here.

We stood upon an exceedingly high mountain and beheld a never-ending area in all directions. This was crisscrossed in all directions by the most marvelous streams, whose waves played in continuously changing, freshest colors of the rainbow; the ground was built up with the most magnificent gardens and temples. The next moment we found ourselves with the temples below, seeing the huge people and their much bigger dwelling-temples. These people are good to look at from a distance, but at close range they resemble moving mountains! I would have had to put a very high ladder up against the small toe of such a person there to climb it!

In short, I could be telling you all my life about what I saw there in just a few moments, but this would mean blubbering the time away which You, o Lord have allocated for something better! Only this I want to find out from You, whether these countless stars also are worlds like the one I saw!"

Say I: "Yes, My child, and much bigger and glorious ones! But tell Me, are you now firmly convinced that you were upon yonder star with body and soul, in these few moments!"

Says Jarah: "Lord, my love and my life, we flew there in four short stages; right up to the fourth stage the star had the appearance of stars, but with the fourth stage it became as big as our sun by day. From there it took only the shortest moment before we were in yonder magnificent world. From the mountain-peak where we found ourselves first, I loosened a little stone from the ground as suggested by the angel - it is this shining lump - and took it as evidence that I really was there. More I cannot tell You about my actually being there."

Saturn

BD No. 1008 of 07/16/1939 taken from book 19

God the Father is speaking: "Worldly scholars will struggle in vain to obtain a clear picture of the inner structure of extraterrestrial works of Creation. It is not enough to establish the numerical size ratio of other planets in comparison to Earth, nor is the intention of establishing the sun's influence on these planets and the measurement of luminosity sufficient. Rather, the research of these planets requires people with enormous knowledge, and such knowledge can only be acquired by spiritual means. No connection exists between Earth and other planets, and no such connection will ever be established even if eternities pass by. On the other hand, however, spiritually, no limitations exist which separate one planet from another. The vast space between two planets does not prevent spiritual beings from communicating with each other and exchanging information about the world they inhabit and its structure. Providing a clear picture of the most related planet to Earth, Saturn is the task of one of the elevated spiritual beings inhabiting it by giving you humans on Earth a description which offers an undeniable explanation to a person desiring such information. As yet no mortal has succeeded in establishing the dimensions of this planet, for it is not possible to calculate its size because people possess no criterion for the circumference of Saturn. It goes beyond all earthly estimates and is almost an infinite concept for you humans. The basic material of this planet is not the same as that of Earth either; it consists of transparent, brightly sparkling metal with an inconceivable luminosity. The state of all beings within the vicinity of this radiant matter is in harmony with this brilliant light. They are exceedingly sensitive to all spiritual currents and are relatively far advanced spiritual beings which, however, did not reach their state of light through conscious striving but are highly educated through God's will. The task of these beings includes taking care of the spirits on earth. Like on earth, they also live a similar physical life, except that the size ratio of the external shells they occupy is humanly incomprehensible, but accordingly their spiritual power is indescribably effective. Nevertheless, the beings also have to fulfill a function and this is in harmony with their respective embodiment, for these beings also exist in various external shapes on the planet's surface, but their ability to change far surpasses that on earth, insofar as that they are not animating some external shape as imperfect spiritual beings, but that they can, as it were, change their shell at any time so as to be able to accomplish their set task better and easier in a different shell. Consequently, Saturn shelters living beings, nevertheless they possess a certain degree of maturity, or they would not be suitable for this planet since the abundance of light presupposes a specific receptivity to light. These beings are difficult to describe to people on earth because certain laws need to be taken into account which are unknown to people on earth. It would indeed be possible to portray them to you, albeit only in a metaphorical way which illustrates the beings' activity. And this activity is, in a way, just as necessary for people on earth, for the beings have the task of constantly animating the entire flora,

nevertheless, the correlation of this cannot be fully understood by you as yet. Amongst each other, the beings lead a similar life as on earth, in total harmony and spiritual unity, so their dwellings are accordingly, and magnificent creations of their own intelligence shaped the surface of the planet into an exceedingly charming abode. Creation consists of countless stars and yet each one differs from the other both in its surface arrangement as well as in the living conditions of its inhabiting beings. In the same way their basic materials are always of a different kind too, yet all these creations are governed and directed by one Deity according to His will. And thus, God provides countless opportunities for a being so that it can receive and likewise distribute bliss for eternity through lively activity in accordance with its perfection."

The Saturnian human beings.

Ref: Saturn by Jakob Lorber:104-108

Saturnian, their origin, population density and housing conditions

God the Father is speaking: "Much has already been said about the humans on Saturn. Regardless of that, much more remains to be said about the masters of this celestial body, in order for you to learn in what kind of order this planet exists and whose Spirit's child it is.

Since a good order is at all times and everywhere the basis of all wisdom, we shall therefore observe here a human being in a good order first of all, in his externally shaped being and then his spiritual existence and everything that enters into the region of the spiritual, such as his country's constitution, his trade and his divine service. Now we shall begin with the physical shape of the Saturnian human being.

Was there only one human couple on Saturn, or were there at the same time at various places several human couples created? All human beings that now live on Saturn originate from one human couple; this applies to all planets just as it applies to earth. The history of the Saturnites is more than one million earth years older than the history of human beings on earth.

A Saturnite throughout his entire life has rarely more than four descendants with his wife; it should be understandable when I say that this planet, in proportion to earth, is by many times less populated than earth. On the large continental countries, of which several are larger in area than Asia, Africa and Europe, human

beings very seldom live in a neighborly way next to each other. This situation that exists in your villages on earth belongs to one of the greatest rarities on Saturn.

If a human being from earth were somehow able to travel to one of these continents, the dwellings of the people on Saturn are so far apart that it would take him at least ten to twelve days to travel from one to another. In the mountains these distances from one dwelling to another or from one neighbor to another are the rule rather than the exception, whereas in the lower-lying regions, which are next to the lakes and rivers, the dwellings of the Saturnites are closer together.

Wherever you find such an abode, there are not only a few human beings, but an entire family which usually numbers anywhere from 1,000 to 5,000 people.

How large are their dwellings that they can accommodate so many people? It should be mentioned that the Saturnites prefer to have plenty of space. As far as their accommodation is concerned, this was mentioned right at the beginning with the description of the sun tree (gliuba). It was also mentioned that this tree is their house, one which they prefer to all others. Therefore, I do not have to describe the peculiar shape of this tree again, other than to remind you that it is an extraordinary tree with many trunks, and that on its wide branches, which almost always run in a horizontal manner, the people build their dwellings.

Such a tree is as significant on Saturn as an important city on earth. The patriarch of such a large family assigns the individual branches and side trunks to the individual family and it then becomes their own property, just like a house in your cities. The difference here, however, is that the people who live in this tree city are all blood relatives, while in your cities anyone who has the financial means can purchase a house right next to you.

You might ask yourself: How can these people sleep on these branches? If they turn around during their sleep, will they not fall out of the trees? The possibility of this happening would be much greater if you were simply to turn around in your bed. Because these horizontal outward-bound branches are so thick and wide that on a single branch there is enough room for every house in your capital city, 1(This capital city is Graz in Austria with a population of over 200,000.) and there would still be enough room to drive and ride around.

Besides that, there are a large number of smaller branches growing in a horizontal parallel direction from the wide edges of each of these large branches; they are the actual carriers of the fruit of this tree. Closer to the trunk these smaller branches are of significant strength; they are so strong that if a human being would walk, stand or lie beyond the edge of the branch he would not fall off the tree. Let us assume that despite these smaller branches it happens that someone walks carelessly beyond them and falls to the ground, or from a higher branch to a lower branch; this person would not sustain any injury from such a fall. The reason for this is already known to you and has been mentioned in a previous chapter: On Saturn, through the existing attraction between the actual planet and the ring, the specific weight of any given body, including the body of a human being, is significantly reduced. Therefore, nobody on Saturn will be able to fall with the same severity as someone on earth.

The above explanation is the reason for this occurrence and should completely satisfy the inquisitive mind in this respect. As long as this planet has been populated by human beings, no one has ever broken a leg or an arm during

his lifetime, and nobody has injured his head or sustained a hole in his head through a fall, which of course happens quite often on earth.

The question now arises: Is this tree the only dwelling the Saturnites call home? The answer is no. Besides these main tree dwellings, they have various other dwellings, which are occupied during the cool shadow time.

These houses are built in various ways. Some are built from the strong branches of the pyramid tree, while others are grown from the species of the more slender trees. The houses that are grown, or living house, are superior to those which are built. However, they always build houses between those which are grown, because they serve as storage for their food.

They also only make a fire in those houses which they build, where they cook, boil and roast their various food, though not in the same clever and artificial manner as you do on earth, but more as you would bake an apple or cook pears, vegetables, and some of your good-tasting beets and roots. This is what the entire art of cooking consists of on Saturn. In these houses they also store their milk products as well as their precious berry juice containers.

Nobody eats or sleeps in the houses that are built; that is always done in the houses that are grown, because it is unbearable for the Saturnites to remain for a longer period in the vicinity of a dead thing. That applies to a house which is built from trees that have been cut down as well as to dead human beings or animals. That is why houses built by the Saturnites are used exclusively as workshops and storage rooms.

You would probably like to know how large such a manmade house is and also what it looks like. I can grant this wish. These houses are built in the form of a wreath, similar to the houses in the Austrian countryside, except they do not have any roofs; they are completely open towards the sky. For the Saturnites, the greatest atrocity is a house separated from heaven by a roof They say that everything that comes from above unto the ground is a blessing from heaven, and therefore a blessing for the soil. And since they also live on the soil, why should they separate themselves and hide from the blessings of heaven? They are of the opinion that it is also a much greater benefit to them, since they are alive and therefore in much greater need of heaven's blessing than the soil of their earth, which they believe to be dead.

Now we know how their houses are built. Now all we need to know is their form and size. Usually, these houses are built in the shape of a star, like a compass dial; however, these houses have sometimes 8, 16 or even 32 pointed tips, each of which 184 forms a kind of separate section for food and drink. In the center of this round wide room is a round hearth where food is cooked. It is understood that the hearth is in proportion to the size of the Saturnites.

In such a star-house the distance from one tip to the opposite tip, in accordance with your earthly measurements, would take one hour if you walked it in good stride. As far as the height of this house is concerned, every person on Saturn that is as tall as a man can easily look over the walls of this house.

Are these houses decorated in any way? No, other than that the people adorn them with the foliage of the trees they cut down to build them with. That is everything in regard to these houses.

Since we have learned that the houses, they build are the actual farm, kitchen and storage buildings of the people on Saturn, we shall now take a closer look at their living domiciles.

What is the form of these live domiciles? Their external form is completely round, with one entrance from the morning (east). Only two different kinds of species of trees are used to build or, rather, grow these houses. The more beautiful and more magnificent houses are grown with the well-known mirror trees (ubra) planted closely together; the houses that are less beautiful and less magnificent are grown with the wall tree (brak), not the common kind but the cultivated wall tree.

The inside floor of these houses is made completely level. Grass seeds are sown on this floor, from which a very short but extremely thick grass grows, like a thick carpet. This grass has the appearance of velvet and is so resilient that, when someone walks on it, it immediately springs back to its original state.

In the center of the house is a large, round and proportionately high hearth, which is covered on all sides with the same grass. So that you have an idea of the size, circumference and height of this hearth, I can tell you that it has a diameter of roughly 540 feet and a height that reaches above the knees, even halfway up to the thighs of a Saturnian man. However, when its height is compared to the height of a woman, the hearth is about half her size. 1(A woman is 80 to 90 feet tall and a man 95 to 135 feet.)

What purpose does this hearth serve? It serves the Saturnites in the same manner as do tables on earth, namely for food and drink.

Not far from this hearth-table, at a distance of approximately 200 feet, there is a completely round pyramid, obtuse at the top, which at its base has approximately three times the diameter of the hearth. The space at the top of the pyramid is only large enough for a man to stand on conveniently. This pyramid has the height of a man and is covered with the same grass as the floor and hearth, and it serves as the family pulpit for the patriarch. Every day before sunset the eldest member of the family stands on this platform, whereupon the whole family gathers around in order to hear from him the will of the Great Spirit pertaining to the night and the entire following day.

What other kinds of furnishings or facilities does such a house contain? Completely in the background, the entrance directly opposite the sunrise, there is another circular wall covered with the same grass. But it is not as high by far as the center pulpit; instead, it is considerably larger in circumference and with many moderate curvatures. What is the purpose of this third circular wall? This is the common bed or place of rest for our tall Saturnian humans.

Before they go to sleep, they place soft pillows into the curvature close to the periphery of this circular wall and lean against one of these curvatures, each person having one such curvature. The men take their position, which faces the rising sun, and the women face the setting sun. All are resting with their bodies in a position that is 30° in earth measurements in relationship to the floor. That is how they fall asleep; they remain in this position until shortly before sunrise. In spite of the ring shadow, they notice the sunrise, because the ring never covets the sun so completely that nothing can be seen of the sun. And should it happen at times that the ring is wider that it covers the sun completely, the duration of such

cover never lasts longer than half a day; after that a small edge of the sun becomes visible again.

These are all the furnishings which such a house contains which is occupied by the Saturnites during the time of the shadow. What is the size of such a house in regard to its circumference? The diameter is longer than the well-known star-like storage houses by more than half.

Does the entire population of the large dwelling tree live in such a house? No, only one family, that is one father and one mother with their children and children's children, just as they live together on one branch of a tree during the light-time. There are as many man-made dwellings as there are branches on which the Saturnites live.

In such common family dwellings, the area around such a tree covers mostly more square miles than Styria (632,586 square miles). These dwellings are, as you know, at such a distance from each other that it would take many days' travel to reach another one. Around these dwellings are the grounds and grazing lands of the domesticated animals which you already know. These animals must have enough ground so that enough can be harvested for the maintenance of the life of the people on Saturn as well as the preservation of the animals. In addition to this, there are, at border regions of the common family properties, the large, far-expanding forests of the funnel trees, and on the large plains, especially on the northern side of large lakes, there are forests of pyramid trees covering areas of 2,000 to 3,000 square geographic miles, and there are also other large forests of shrubs. When you take all this into consideration as well, you will not be surprised that the distance between two common family dwellings is so far.

Now we know how the people on Saturn dwell, especially those in the mountain regions. For now, I say Amen!" . . .

What is the Sun? – A Planet in a Perfected State

Ref: The Fly" by Jakob Lorber: 18,19

God the Father is speaking: "First of all, you must be aware of the sun's enormous size. A sun is often one, yes, even several million times the size of one of its planets.

What then, is the sun itself?

The sun, as an entity, is **a planet in a perfected state**, and all planets are 'satellites' of this large and perfected planet.

But what is the source of such an extraordinary light surrounding such a perfected planet?

The light comes from the spiritual love-joy of the spirits surrounding this perfected planet.

Are these spirits already totally perfected?

This question must be again divided into seven different points which will, nevertheless, not be too difficult to thoroughly comprehend, since they are found together in the most beautiful order.

These seven points are seven different kinds of spirits found in the sun, which jointly determine the great light of the sun.

If you want to learn the inner nature of these spirits better, look to the seven commandments of neighborly love and the three commandments serving

as the foundation of these seven, through which man should recognize his relationship to God, his Father and Creator. Then you have the completed cycle of the spirit formation on a sun. Also, the colors of the rainbow let one recognize this order.

But now, what follows these recollections?

Nothing else follows but that the sun, in its inner sphere, is a gathering place for the seven kinds of spirits. Among them are those first sent to the planets as a trial, and also those who have returned perfected. The first, still to be perfected class, form the sun's inner contents, as the second, already perfected types, form the sun's shining envelopment.

See, if you were a little more sharp-sighted, the stumbling block would have already been removed; but, since you suffer from weak eyes and are also somewhat hard of hearing, I have to add that these spirits are the ones who, through their vibrations of love and joy, cause the actual illumination of the sun.

Concerning the propagation of this light, I will draw your attention to those still-to-be-perfected spirits, which must remove themselves from the sun. Now you have the explanation of the light propagation down to a "T", which has been discussed in connection with the formation of planet nodules, and herewith you also have the nature of the often-mentioned little atomic animals leaving the sun, through which the vibrations of the already perfected spirits are given, as a strengthening gift, to the imperfect spirits who are leaving the sun on the journey to their perfection.

Here you will ask and say, "It is all well and fine, but what drives the first kind of spirits, which are still not complete, out of the sun into the wide, endless spaces?"

And I give you this as an answer: Nothing else but My eternal order, in which these wandering spirits from the sun have a positive polarity saturation, but basically they are only negative!

But what happens if two like poles come near each other? They repel each other until the positively nourished but, within itself, still negative pole, has given up all the positive!

Now, understand - our well-known little atomic animals are basically negative anxieties, and can only remain in the sun as long as they retain a negative polarity. If they too greedily take on a light saturation from the positive polarity sphere of the sun spirits, so that, according to the nature of light, there remains very little difference between them and the truly positive polarity spirits, which are already complete, they, the little atomic animals, will be quickly driven out from the positive polarities, and that with a truly spiritual speed.

These expelled spirits are the actual shining light of the sun which, when it falls on a planet, imparts the positive part to it, which is the accompanying light, or rather, the continued love-joy vibration of the completed spirits.

But in the negative portion, these atomic beings soon free themselves of their positive part, especially when they get close to a planet, and then, as anti-polar beings, return to the sun. Since these beings always move in a straight line because of their great speed, it is understandable why objects illuminated by the sun are seen so clearly, especially when there are no disturbances in the air.

But how such an illuminated form can be seen in all its parts is due to the fact that all matter, out of which a form is made, is likewise – as you already know – nothing else but "a conflict of spiritual potencies.

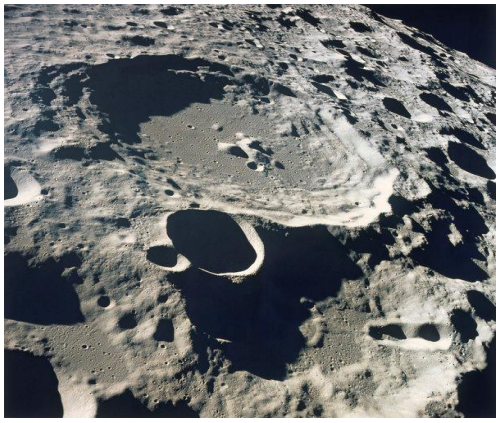
Therefore, when these fast light bearers from the sun encounter a form, the form then takes on, according to its composition, the parts corresponding to itself and lets the unusable parts go in all directions and at the highest rate of speed.

And so, the eye is only an organ for the reception of the manifold difference of the main – or the returned light, and these manifold differences are also the sculptors of all the different things in the eye, based on these light differentiations.

So now that you know this and, in the natural sense, comprehend it as much as possible, it must finally be clear to you that everything which represents anything material, is basically not material but purely spiritual, except you cannot behold what is spirit because you are not yet in the spiritual polarity. But once you find yourself in spiritual polarity, then the opposite will occur, where you will see only what is spirit, but all material you will have to think of as now you think of the spiritual. Therefore, you should not wonder so much if, in the course of this communication, you come upon points, here and there, that cannot be made all so clear to you, for if all these relationships should now be made accessible to you, you would have to step out of the material completely and into the purely spiritual, and it is not yet time for that."

The Nature and Purpose of the Moon

Ref: "The Earth and Moon" by Jakob Lober:121,122



God the Father is speaking: "The moon is a celestial body more solid than your Earth. As a child of the Earth, she was formed of the components of the Earth. The reason the moon has been assigned to the Earth is to collect the magnetic power that the Earth radiates, and to reflect that power back to the Earth in accordance with the Earth's needs. That is why the orbit of the moon around the Earth is so eccentric, because the orbit of the moon is dependent upon the greater or lesser quantity of magnetism that is present on Earth. On the other hand, the orbit of the moon, as the collector of this substance, is determined in accordance with the requirements of the Earth for this natural life substance. Such is the moon's main task.

Planets smaller than the Earth do not require a moon; instead, there are very high mountains, as for instance those on Venus, Mercury, Mars, and many other smaller planets. The larger planets must, however, be provided with one or even several moons, so that these moons may carry out the services mentioned. As on Earth, there are also human beings on the moon, and there are also many other creatures. There is, however, not one moon that, on the side facing its planet, is provided with air, water, or fire, or any of the other necessities required for organic life.

The moon is actually a "moon" only on the side facing the Earth; on the opposite side, however, it is not a "moon," but a completely firm continent. That is why the part which is "moon" is not solid, but very loose, almost like the foam of the ocean that has firmed up a little, and whose firmer parts project like hills, whilst the softer parts have caved in and appear niche-shaped and crater-shaped towards the center of the celestial body. In some of these niches and craters, atmospheric air is trapped, unable to escape, and may easily be taken for water when viewed through a powerful telescope. None of the heights or the shallow craters contain any atmospheric air, but only **ether**, the same as that which is found in free space between the sun and the planets.

That is why this side of the moon is not inhabited by any organic being; *rather, her inhabitants here are of a spiritual kind*. *These spiritual inhabitants were very obsessed with worldly things during their physical life on Earth and were banished to the moon for their betterment.* When, after a long time, these inhabitants realize that an obsession with worldly matters does not bear fruit, and when they listen to the teachers who are sent to them, then those who are willing will be guided to a state of higher freedom. Those who are less obedient will incarnate on the opposite side of the moon, and there be obliged to eke out a meager and pitiful living. There they must struggle not only with severe cold and darkness, but also with unbearable heat, because the duration of one moon night is equivalent to fourteen full Earth days, and the moon day is just as long. At the end of each moon night, it becomes as cold as it does at the North Pole on Earth. And from midday towards the end of the moon day, it is so hot that no living being can remain on the surface of the moon.

The human inhabitants on the opposite side of the moon, as well as the other living creatures, live below the surface. They have to remain in their subterranean dwellings for half the day as well as half the night. There are no houses or cities, their dwellings being located individually in the depths of the moon's soil, and also in caves and mountain crevices.

Moreover, there are no trees that bear fruit, but only root plants, such as potatoes, beets, carrots, and so on as on Earth. These plants are planted at the beginning of the day and ripen by its end. At the onset of dusk, the people come out of their caverns, harvest the crop, and carry it into their subterranean dwellings, and they nourish themselves with this crop throughout the night and also through the following full day.

There is only one kind of domesticated animal, a type of sheep, which is to these people what the reindeer is to the northern inhabitants on Earth.

In rivers as well as in lakes, which are plentiful on the moon, live a multitude of water animals. There are also several small kinds of birds, similar to your sparrows, and also a host of insects and animals that live on the soil.

Beware that in the future you do not become an inhabitant of this wretched celestial body, because this yellow-gleaming schoolhouse of life is a stern prison. It would be considerably easier to die fourteen times in one day on Earth than to live for one day on the moon, for the inhabitants are considerably worse off than those who are buried in the cemeteries on Earth, because they do not know they are buried. The inhabitants of the moon must live with full consciousness in their

graves, and frequently they are buried in their subterranean dwellings by cave-ins or sudden flooding."

The Human Beings on the Moon

Ref: Earth and Moon by Jacob Lorber 125

God the Father is speaking: "The human beings on the moon are, as on Earth, of both sexes. They were, however, created a thousand years later by an authorized angel. They have a height of a little more than roughly twenty-four inches (60 centimeters) and have a great resemblance to the **Nordic dwarves**. They have big bellies, the inner organization of which serves two purposes; one is the digestion of nourishment through a conventional stomach, and the other the collection of a kind of light gas in a second stomach, which affords them a threefold advantage.

First, this gas makes the inhabitants of the moon so light that they can jump over any river effortlessly. Wherever there are rivers or inland seas of large breadth, they can easily swim over the surface.

The second advantage is that, on expelling this air, they can produce popping sounds, whereby they can make their presence known to one another in their subterranean dwellings. They also employ this air for their lung-speech, which is, of course, very weak and low-pitched. Initially, moon dwellers detest this kind of speech, and it is only made use of by the spirit which is placed in the moon dweller for his betterment. *When this spirit of an earthly person finally becomes completely one with the soul of a moon person, this union leads mostly to the painless casting aside of the body of the moon person.*

A third advantage of this stomach air is that the inhabitants can heat their subterranean caverns during the cold nights by frequently discharging such air. Their cavern dwellings are hollowed out from the inside in such a **way that they almost resemble an obtuse bell,** whereto the entrance may be reached from the ground by some kind of stairs. This expelled light air gathers under this **air-tight residential bell**, making it tolerably warm; it also prevents the free ingress of the exceedingly cold atmospheric air. The atmospheric air is taken in by the light gas only in such quantity as is absolutely necessary to sustain physical life. The stomach air serves the same purpose during the unbearably hot periods of the day, when the moon dwellers have to stay below in the ground; but with the difference that the gas will now, by the influence of the stomach for nourishment, change into a cooling oxygen gas. This protects the bell dwelling from the intrusion of hot air.

Another peculiarity of these human beings is that their eyes fulfill a double function. The first is just like that of people on Earth, namely, sight. The second function is that their eyes serve as a light in the dark dwellings. This attribute may also be found on Earth with certain animals. Another peculiarity of the moon people is their extremely acute sense of hearing; they can easily hear the faintest noise from a considerable distance. That is why their auricles are extremely large and firm.

The male is considerably stronger than the female. When the strength of the male is compared to that of a female, it is like a fully grown man on Earth compared to a ten-year-old child. That is why moon men display the greatest tenderness towards their weak wives; they carry them mostly on their shoulders in such a manner that the legs of the female hang down over the chest of the male on both sides of the neck. This is the reason why, on the moon, you will always see two human beings, one sitting atop the other.

The woman has almost no work to do. She is fed by the man, even to the point that the man first chews the food thoroughly and then places it into the woman's mouth. Outside of the dwelling, the woman leaves the man's shoulders only when it is absolutely necessary, and in the last days of pregnancy, when she is close to delivery. During her whole life on the moon, a woman bears children only twice, once during the day and once during the night. She always bears four living children, four boys during the day, and four girls during the night. The children can walk immediately; the boys soon become accustomed to carrying the girls. And children die on the moon as they do on Earth. When they are a hundred or more moon days old, they are "possessed" by alien spirits.

All moon people have second sight and are taught about the recognition of God in their innermost by the angel-spirits that enter them. This instruction serves the inherent spirit of the Earth human being at the same time. Harm that a human being on Earth inflicted on his soul, on account of his obsession for earthly things, will thereby be removed through the soul of a human being on the moon. A human being that has been reformed under such circumstances has, therefore, only a patched soul, and this will always be distinguishable from entirely pure spirits. He will never be able to enter into their free society but will always have to conduct himself as the moon does towards the Earth. The moon always accompanies the Earth, but it may not approach the Earth as friend to friend.

Only those spirits which did not need to be placed into moon people, but who, as moon spirits, already had a genuine disgust for the Earth will be guided from the moon to higher regions and may be taken into the spiritual children's kingdom which, for them, is the highest attainable level of bliss. It is impossible for them to attain greater heights. Because of their limited attributes, they do not have the ability to endure a higher state, just as human beings on Earth would not be able to survive in the finest ether while alive in the physical body.

Behold, such is the fate of worldly-minded human beings. He who does not voluntarily renounce the world out of love for Me, and from whom worldly obsessions must be driven out by means of coercion as a result of My mercy, has not acted voluntarily and will therefore remain a slave. But who would deem the coerced deeds of a slave his own earnings? If, however, a slave fulfills all his tasks,

he is worth his bread as nourishment, so that he may live, because he willingly worked, even if by compulsion."

Redeeming work in the Beyond

BD No. 6662 of 10/05/1956 taken from book 71

Jesus is speaking: "And you will be able to participate in the work of salvation, for this will be your activity in the kingdom of the beyond when you are sufficiently mature enough to be assigned an activity. You will bring light into the darkness because you have experienced yourselves how agonizing it is to live in darkness and how much happiness the light has given you. No redeemed soul will be inactive, and therefore every soul will be integrated into the host of those who carry out redemption work. For they all are motivated by their love to help those who are wretched in returning to God, for Whom they are now tirelessly active and work because they share His will and are full of love for Him. And thus, the deliverance of all souls is guaranteed, even if infinitely long times will still pass by until all spirits have found their way back to God, from Whom they once separated of their own free will. But this free decision will also determine how long the salvation process will take for each individual soul. The soul is also able to offer resistance and delay its return to God for an endless time, but already redeemed souls will always take care of them, therefore no human being on earth and no soul in the kingdom of the beyond will be completely without help, which also explains the fact that time and again they will be offered the opportunity to enter the path of return to God, because it will be shown to them.

If, however, a human being adamantly rejects every incentive to enter the spiritual path during his earthly life, then small openings of light will repeatedly be provided to the souls in the beyond which will make the path visible to them, because the soul of light takes pity on the souls which wander around in profound darkness. And thus begins the redeemed beings' activity of helping these poor souls achieve salvation too. Hence no soul is without a sphere of activity, just as no dark soul is without guidance, only the free will of the latter determines the success. But once the work of redemption has been successfully achieved on just one soul, then another redeeming power will have been gained again to help the dark world, which in turn can and will accomplish inconceivable work, since it is now full of love and due to its gratitude, willing to render the greatest possible help. And every soul has its adherents with whom it will work particularly diligently, even if it will meet with resistance for a long time. But its love will not diminish, and love will always liberate, because no being will be able to resist love forever.

Indeed, it would be possible for complete salvation to take place on earth already, because Jesus Christ has suffered and died on the cross so that people are able to receive strength that they are able to partake in the graces of the act of Salvation if they want to. But Jesus Christ has not compelled people's will either, and it is up to the will to either make use of the act of Salvation or to ignore it. But whatever was neglected on earth can be continued in the beyond, because redemption work is carried out there as well, and even then, an appeal for His grace and mercy can still be sent to Jesus Christ. *And every soul having found Him itself, having been redeemed by Him from sin and death, will also draw attention*

to Him, it will inform every unredeemed soul of His love, it will direct their thoughts to the great act of compassion by the human being Jesus and thus try to lead every as yet unredeemed soul to the divine Redeemer Jesus Christ. And its steadily growing love will also be successful, for love will achieve everything, and love can't help but participate in the act of Salvation, which began with Jesus' crucifixion and will not end until all still unredeemed souls are delivered from every constraint and thus have also attained life and beatitude, until the complete return to God has been accomplished, until all spirits that have emerged from God have returned home into their Father's house."

Contact with the Spiritual Kingdom

BD No. 6682 of 11/01/1956 taken from book 72

Jesus is speaking: "All requirements have to be in place if you want to enter into a blessed contact with the spiritual realm, if you want to achieve spiritual benefits and in accordance with My will work in cooperation with the beings of light in the spiritual kingdom, which concerns the redemption of still immature souls. Any contact that you establish with the beyond without these conditions is dangerous for you as well as the still immature souls. As long as a person is earthly minded, he will have little desire to make spiritual contact. But if he goes ahead anyway, he will only be motivated by earthly questions in the hope of receiving an answer. The will to enter into contact with the kingdom of the beyond also allows the beings of the beyond to access him, for he opens himself, irrespective of whether he does so mentally or by using earthly help through attending spiritualistic meetings or accepting advice from mediums. But he will not gain any benefit at all from such contact; it is, in fact, a great danger to him which he cannot be warned of often enough. For the evil spirits now pushing close to him would terrify you if you could see it with your own eyes. And these demons take hold of the human being, they answer his questions, yet only in relation to their state of darkness, and they aim to tie him ever more to matter, to which they are still just as stuck as they were on earth. Beware of such contacts. For they will pull you down even if you thereby attain the belief in the soul's continuation of life after death, because these spirits will not encourage you to work at improving your soul, and in view of the fact that they frequently contradict themselves you can also easily recognize that you are dealing with evil spirits. The first requirement for a beneficial communication with the spiritual world is a strong desire for truth, the inner urge to accept the truth from knowledgeable beings, but only knowledge of a spiritual content. *Thus, the beings responding to their call should not be asked any earthly questions whatsoever.*

This kind of communication with the spiritual world can result in many blessings, which I commend to all of you, because then you will have entered the protected path of being constantly led and educated by Me through My spirit, for every being of light teaching you on My behalf will also inform you of how you will be able to attain perfection. Your will, your state of maturity, your degree of love is always decisive as soon as you establish a connection with the spiritual world, for accordingly the same beings will approach you. And since you humans are still afflicted by weaknesses you will also have to fear the appearance of such beings and therefore commend yourselves to Me and appeal for My protection

from them in advance. And this appeal will always be the best protection, for anyone who establishes this connection with Me can always be assured that it will never be detrimental to him. However, the questions which motivate people to seek contact with the spiritual world are rarely of a spiritual nature. The curiosity to explore what happens in this kingdom, personal relationships with the deceased and desired advice are far more often the cause, and although they will not experience any direct damage to their souls yet neither will they derive any benefit, for the results satisfy the senses more than the soul.

The spiritual world is constantly in contact with the earth and its inhabitants, and it will do its utmost to uphold or expand every sincere contact. And for that reason I will bless everyone who starts such a sincere bond which makes it possible to influence people and many souls in the beyond in the most positive sense. But I will also admonish people to exercise greatest caution if they just want to gain an insight into regions which are still closed to them. For they can easily become controlled by forces from which they will only be able to detach themselves with great difficulty, whereas truth-desiring and sincerely striving people may enter this bridge without qualms, for they will be met by true messengers which will offer them protection and a light that is beneficial for them."

Thoughts from the Spiritual Kingdom

BD No. 3628 of 12/16/1945 taken from book 46

Jesus is speaking: "Thoughts flow to you from the spiritual kingdom, if you are spiritually minded and therefore also look for contact with the enlightened beings of the spiritual kingdom. Consequently, every thought can be a blessing for you provided you sincerely want to become enlightened, thus to know the truth. Yet in order to be taken care of by helpful spiritual beings it is also always necessary for you to conduct your life in accordance with God's will, since you are also surrounded by forces of darkness which seek to lead your thoughts astray. And you yourselves reject or allow their access to you, depending on your conduct in life, on your will and your attitude towards God and towards good.

And therefore, you have to seriously scrutinize yourselves whether you strive to live in keeping with God's will, whether you want the truth. You must know that thoughts are the activity of spiritual beings in the beyond which they try to convey to you, and that you allow yourselves to be influenced by forces which you draw to yourselves by your way of life and your will. For this reason, you have to observe your thoughts whether they lead towards God or divert you from believing in God. Every good thought teaching love and referring to God is the activity of good spiritual forces, and you should take it up and let yourselves be affected by it, for as soon as you pay attention to it, it will also shape your way of life and be beneficial for your soul.

But as soon as you pray to God for correct thinking, good spiritual beings will always be your teachers and guides, they will influence your thoughts and also try to transmit spiritual concepts which will heighten your maturity of soul; they will provide you with power of perception which will enable you to render the activity of evil forces ineffective by instantly recognizing it as error and rejecting it. If you unite yourselves with God, if you live intending to please Him, then you will

not have to fear evil spiritual forces which deceive your thoughts, for you give yourselves into the hands of good spiritual beings which will take loving care of you and direct your thoughts such that they will correspond to the truth and promote your spiritual development, because you strive for it yourselves."

Test the Spirits

BD No. 8228 of 07/30/1962 taken from book 87

God the Father is speaking: "You humans should believe that I will keep sending you the truthful information about Jesus Christ and His act of Salvation, for you have to recognize and acknowledge Him, the divine Redeemer, as Son of God and Redeemer of the world Who had sheltered Me within Himself. But the mission He had to fulfill on earth cannot be proven to you, yet I Myself will convey the correct information of Him to you through My spirit, and this in itself will be proof to you. For what historically cannot be demonstrated to you, shall be taught to you by My spirit. And thus, you also know that it is I Myself Who reveals this to you, that you can 'test the spirits' by all means, for as soon as you are given information about Jesus Christ and His act of Salvation you will know that it is the spirit of God, which can only impart the pure truth. You are entitled to scrutinize the origin of all spiritual knowledge, and I Myself have shown you the criterion, for no opposing spirit will ever proclaim that 'Jesus Christ has come in the flesh.' And once you have got the proof that it is the activity of 'God's spirit' then you can also accept everything proclaimed by this spirit as truth.

My working within the human being, which expresses itself so distinctly as the transmission of My Word, cannot be interpreted or explained as personal intellectual thought, but it can be even less described as My adversary's activity, for then people only demonstrate that they themselves do not recognize the Father's voice, that they do not belong to My Own who completely hand themselves over to Me, but that they are intellectually still too active themselves or they would feel that they are addressed by Me, their Father of eternity. For My transmission of the Word into a human heart, be it directly or through My messengers, will not fail to have the desired effect. It touches the heart as soon as it opens itself and is willing to be addressed by Me; and that necessitates that the person listens to Me impartially and thus is also willing to let himself be permeated by My spirit, by My light of love.

However, if a person undertakes a purely intellectual examination of the spiritual knowledge, he has received from Me, then he will hardly be able to recognize His Father's voice, for it will not touch his heart, and only this is capable of taking the test. You shall not blindly believe what you inwardly reject. Yet when My revelations are conveyed to you then you will never have a feeling of resistance, providing you desire to be addressed by Me Myself, rather, My Words will so touch you that you would not want to miss them anymore, and you will also be fully convinced of the truth, because you are now able to feel Me Myself. The content of divine revelations will always consist of God's human manifestation in Jesus and the act of Salvation, and this shall always be the clearest evidence of the truth, for My adversary would never inform you of the fact that Jesus Christ sacrificed Himself on the cross on your behalf, in Whom I Myself accomplished the act of Salvation. My adversary will never try to encourage you

humans to believe in Jesus, he will never preach love to you, which likewise is the substance of My revelations, for only love unites you with Me and he will prevent everything that could establish this unification.

You have to know about his nature, which is pure hatred and wants to corrupt you. And you will be able to recognize his activity by the fact that he will do everything to demean My divine revelations and to darken your spirit so as to prevent you from recognizing Me. However, you need only appeal to Me for illumination of your spirit, and truly, I will help you and change every ambiguity into brightest realization, if only you seriously desire it. My adversary only ever seeks to cause confusion, but he will only be successful where the desire for the pure truth is not yet prevalent; but where it exists, he has lost all power, for I Myself radiate the light which agreeably touches everyone who wants to be enlightened."

God's Adversary in Disguise as an Angel of Light

BD No. 8788 of 03/23/1964 taken from book 92

God the Father is speaking: "So often the adversary will still get in your way when you want to reach Me, and he will try to divert you from the right path by using all means to achieve this end. But believe that I will not leave anyone who keeps his eyes firmly focused on Me without the strength to resist. Yet he will spread much error and will not slowdown in undermining the pure truth either. And he will always try to express himself in the same way as My messengers are active on earth. He will shroud himself in the garment of an angel of light to divert people from the right track for, although he seemingly speaks on My behalf, he does not voice My Word but influences the people following him to preach their own thoughts as My Word which he, however, has twisted in order to confuse people and make it unsuitable for scrutiny.

You don't know his cunning and trickery; you don't know how he proceeds just to lead people astray. And yet he has many followers, because people want to experience the unusual and are therefore not receptive for the simple and plain Word that originates from Me. And an element of selfish love is also still too strong amongst those who want to serve Me, and this selfish love allows My adversary to interfere, he presents himself as Lord and therefore will be acknowledged by them, because selfish love signifies darkness of spirit, so that they will never be able to differentiate between truth and error. And he often succeeds in grooming an enslaved living creation and indoctrinating it with much error which then will be unhesitatingly accepted as truth.

And yet you humans don't have to fall prey to him if you have a strong desire for truth, if you examine everything with the sincere wish that I shall illuminate your spirit enabling you to separate lies from truth and learn to distinguish between them. Then realization will suddenly hit you and you will reject everything that is wrong without hesitation. You will recognize the adversary and take refuge with Me to give you strength and help you to resist. You just have to very sincerely want to live in the only truth, and truly, My adversary will no longer be able to deceive you. You will see through him and also recognize his instruments, regardless of how well they disguise themselves by wanting to appear as messengers of light. True light only shines forth from Me and those who

desire the true light, the pure truth. However, a false prophet will always walk close to a true prophet, error will always go side by side with the truth, and the darkness will try to obscure or extinguish the light, and thereby you will also recognize the source of what you are given by a 'prophet.' When I convey My Word to earth everyone receiving it will avail himself of it and recognize it as the Father's voice because his spirit is awakened. Anyone recognizing it as My Word will not accompany it with something inferior. And if he does, he demonstrates that he does not recognize My Word that he is unable to recognize the Father's voice and this also demonstrates his state of spirit. Can there be anything more delectable than the fact that I speak to you humans Myself, and if you feel that you are addressed by the Father, then you will not want to miss these very Words of His anymore, but then you will also be able to differentiate when apparently the same is offered to you. You will miss the strength that flows from My Word, because I want to give you humans much needed strength.

And therefore, I will provide you with the right nourishment for your soul, I will administer the right medicine it needs to recover, and everyone will avail himself of it who has the grace to receive My directly spoken Word through messengers. But he will be enlightened and detect every wrong current affecting him, because it comes forth from the adversary who is no longer his master if I Am already able to give the bread from heaven, the water of life, to a person.

Yet My adversary, too, will not exclude you either and not let up in fighting for those he fears to lose, he will move heaven and earth to disguise himself as an angel of light in order to draw people back into his domain who had already pulled away from him. Therefore, beware and always appeal to Me to give you the strength to release yourselves from the one who is and will remain My adversary and your enemy."

Mental Influence by Beings of Light

BD No. 3354 of 12/03/1944 taken from book 43

Jesus is speaking: "As soon as a bearer of light in the beyond, an enlightened being, has managed to be heard by a person it will always stay close to him in order to influence his every thought, thus in order to instruct him constantly. Yet the human being's will is always decisive as to whether the light being's endeavors are successful. For although the being is powerful and would be able to take complete possession of the person's thoughts his freedom of will is not restricted, hence the information is never conveyed to him against his will. Consequently, the light beings' teaching activity requires extreme patience. Time and time again they have to direct a person's thoughts to a specific subject which they are ready to explain, and they may not become impatient when these thoughts digress. Their love for people has to be considerable in order to repeatedly muster understanding for their failings and not stop trying to arouse people's interest in spiritual knowledge. For this reason, a person in intimate contact with the beings of light will also have a different mentality; despite the fact that he is not yet being instructed in an obvious manner he will spend much thought on spiritual subjects, and this contemplation will satisfy him since it will result in an agreeable answer. And then the beings of light will be able to move into action, they are always able to enter a person's train of thoughts, they are able

to transfer their thoughts to people. Yet it depends on the individual's receptiveness as to whether their effort and patience are successful, for the more willing he is the more attentively he listens within, that is, he takes notice of his thoughts, he will not discard them instantly but think them through, and only then can they become effective, thus move him into action, to do what he was mentally advised to do.

If the human being has paid attention to these transmissions, then the desire will also arise in him to tell his fellow human beings what he has heard, what he has spiritually received, for whatever moves him will also urge him to pass it on. And this in turn prepares his fellow human beings for the light beings' work on them, for as soon as another person listens to what he is told he also starts to think about it, and the being of light will again be able to intervene and provide food for thought in the form of mental questions and explanations.

All people are entrusted to such beings of light, all people are surrounded by them, and they pay attention to every thought. And as soon as the thoughts turn to spiritual matters, hence to things which are unrelated to earthly life, which do not concern the body but the human soul, the beings of light try to direct the thoughts onto the right track, by mentally whispering the correct information, the answer to questions raised, so that they, having arisen in themselves, will be considered and, with good will, also be assessed; for the thought only becomes valuable when it is put into practice, when the mental advice is implemented accordingly. Yet the light beings' efforts are often in vain with many people because they only aspire to purely earthly things and have no interest in spiritual work or spiritual knowledge. In that case the beings of light are grateful for every support by way of a human mouth. For the beings of light can neither visibly appear nor introduce people to the right knowledge against their will, but it is always the person's own will which allows or rejects the light beings' work on him. And the beings of light are subject to laws, because the human being's free will has to remain unaffected as not to make it impossible for the person to attain perfection.

For this reason, the right knowledge can only be made accessible to people once they employ their own will, by willingly accepting the influence of the being which, as a representative of light, makes the knowledge available to them. Only then will the light beings surrounding a person be able to do their work, they will be able to instruct him mentally and provide him with information about every question that moves him. Then he will always be spiritually guided and looked after, and his thoughts will be led onto the right path, for the beings of light have much strength and authority at their disposal providing the human being's will does not resist their influence."

Calling upon Beings of Light after Prayer to God

BD No. 7655 of 07/25/1960 taken from book 80

God the Father is speaking: "In your contact with the spiritual world only your attitude towards Me determines whether your soul will derive benefit from it. For good and evil forces fight for your will wanting to exercise their influence over you, and you alone decide which forces will be allowed to approach you. The crucial factor is your direction of will, which always has to aim towards Me, if the beings of light working on My behalf are to be permitted to protect and instruct you.

Your constant bond with Me assures you their protection and care, and their influence on your souls will always be favorable and promote your souls development. For even these beings, which are full of love, are not permitted to influence you against your will although evil forces are also unable to do so, this is why you are always protected from their activity when you closely unite with Me, when you appeal to Me for protection and help. Then I will be able to instruct My beings of light to watch over you, and then you will truly be safe. For the love of these beings is immense and they will do everything for you as soon as they see that your will applies to Me.

Hence you can always consider yourselves carried by their love as long as you uphold your bond with Me, which thus allows their unrestricted activity. And you can mentally connect with them as well; you can present your problems to them and request their protection, which they will very gladly grant to you. You should entrust yourselves to all good spiritual beings and keep all wicked spirits at bay. For that reason, you may also ask the good forces for protection against evil forces, and they will form a barrier around you and deny entry to the latter. But you are surrounded by spiritual forces at all times, by those which mean well and those who try to harm you, and also by spiritual beings which anticipate your help, which are weak and uninformed and feel attracted by your proximity, because they see your light and strive towards it, since they lack light themselves.

And in that case you should also ask the good forces for their support to teach and guide them, and to protect them from the advances of evil forces which try to influences these beings too. You should only ever want to act virtuously and righteously and request help to do so, be it in earthly or spiritual difficulties, for beings of light are always ready to help those on My behalf who want to be My Own and make intimate contact with Me in prayer. Hence you can constantly send your thoughts into the spiritual kingdom, and you will always receive a reply from there, which you mentally accept and are thus also able to speak of a 'life in and with God.'

Just don't exclude Me from your thoughts. For I want to be your beginning and your end, you shall begin and end your daily activities with Me, and then all angels will truly look after you, they will support you with advice and practical help, for they love Me and are also full of love for you, and therefore they will only ever accomplish My will. However, you can make this very will of Mine inclined towards you at any time, and you will then lead a blissful life on earth, for then you will be living under My constant protection, since you will be safeguarded by all My angels on your path of life and they will protect you from all forces intending to cause you harm."

The Light Beings' Methods of Rescue

BD No. 6737 of 01/15/1957 taken from book 72

Jesus is speaking: "People's activity on earth is visible in the spiritual world, and it increases the light beings' eagerness to help because they, too, know of the approaching end and the fate of those who will fail. Merciful love constantly impels them to help but people will frequently resist them, and they are not allowed to act in opposition to people's will. But since they recognize people's spiritual state, they also know effective remedies, and in complete compliance with God's will use these methods in order to influence earthly events.

Hence joyful as well as unfortunate events can be due to these light beings' influence who want to save or lead their protégés to God. For God Himself has joined them to people as spiritual guides, and therefore the well-being of their protégés' souls is particularly dear to their heart. They, too, know the blessings of suffering for all people and thus suffering is often unavoidable, even though the beings of light are full of love for people.

But to have saved a soul is gladdening for every being of light; after all, they know the infinitely long-lasting state of torment the spirit will have to endure if it returns to the abyss. Compared to this state of torment even the worst suffering on earth can be called trivial, and therefore it is used by the helpers such that they will destroy earthly happiness and thereby so painfully intervene in a person's life that a loving motive is barely recognizable, nevertheless, it is only due to love and concern for the human being's soul which is in utmost danger. For as long as it still lives on earth it will not be abandoned by its spiritual friends and guides. And since you humans have increasingly less time until the end these painful interventions will also become ever more frequent, for they act on God's instruction, they are merely His co-workers who act in accordance with His will.

People collect ever more earthly possessions, they pay consistently more homage to the world and its pleasures, and thus their earthly happiness often has to be destroyed, they have to experience the destruction of earthly goods and learn to recognize the staleness of worldly joys. And all this is only possible if they don't get their own way, if misfortunes prevent their unbridled enjoyment of whatever they are striving for. Then it will be possible to turn their thoughts in a different direction, and in that case the earthly loss would be a huge spiritual gain. Then the beings of light will have been victorious and helped the souls to gain life, for which the souls will be eternally grateful to them.

The darkness in which people live on earth is obvious to all beings of light, and they also know that the world is to blame. Hence, they only ever endeavor to turn people's thoughts away from the world and try to achieve this by using apparently harsh and heartless methods which, however, are always based on love, because they are as one with God and therefore also full of love for all wretched beings on earth.

There is only little time left until the end, but this time will indeed be very difficult, because all souls which do not voluntarily renounce the world and turn to God will have to be affected. And thus, every difficult experience, every harsh stroke of fate should be considered methods of rescue, which with divine approval still have to be used on people who are at risk of descending into the abyss. For every soul has its helper and guardian in the beyond, nevertheless, they always

have to respect its will or no human being would in fact go astray but instead find his way back to God before the end."

Guardian Spirit - Spiritual Guides

BD No. 6636 of 09/05/1956 taken from book 71

Jesus is speaking: "A loyal spiritual guide accompanies you throughout your earthly life wherever you might go. You are never without spiritual protection, and if this guide, as well as the beings of light surrounding you, were permitted to work unrestrictedly, your full maturing on this earth would be guaranteed, since their love for you leads them to do whatever will help you to ascend. But they are not allowed to affect you unreservedly because your will itself is imposing restrictions on them. They, too, are only able to influence you according to this will, and you humans often prevent the activity of the beings which guide you due to your opposing will. Nevertheless, your guides will not abandon you and will keep trying to exert their influence until you die. Hence you are constantly surrounded by guardian spirits, and you can always turn to them for help, yet they are only permitted to help if you have established the bond with Me first, for it is the law that the beings of light only ever implement My will, that they only ever act in accordance with My will.

Thus, a God-loving-person can live a truly carefree earthly life, because he will always be granted much loving support if he, after heartfelt prayer to Me, hands himself over to My helpers and also asks for their protection and support. These guardian spirits and guides are permeated by light and strength; consequently, it is easily possible for them to shape your earthly existence such that it will be bearable for you. They are able to resolve adversities which confront you on an earthly level or which arise through the influence of evil forces.

These spiritual guardians are instructed by Me to take care of you as soon as you have established your bond with Me through your will, through your attitude, through labors of love and through prayer. Thus, a person devoted to Me can always rest assured that he is protected by Me directly, and My heavenly servants merely implement My will. And My will always has your well-being at heart, since you have already given yourselves to Me and desire My protection.

And thus, you know that you are never alone, regardless of how lonely or abandoned by the world you believe yourselves to be. You are surrounded by a host of helpful spiritual beings which, instructed by your spiritual guardian, take care of you and protect you from physical and spiritual harm.

But it would be wrong if you only made contact with these beings due to a certain sense of superstition, if you saw in them anything else but My servants who are only allowed to help you once you have established the connection with Me. For as soon as you call upon spiritual beings for help without faith in Me and without love for Me you will call upon adverse forces and place yourselves under their control. For these adverse forces, too, are in your vicinity and only waiting for the opportunity to take possession of you, and this opportunity always presents itself when I Am excluded from your thoughts, when you live and act without Me on this earth. In that case even your spiritual guide will be unable to take precedence, since your will does not allow for it.

And then the adverse forces will be especially busy, which you are just as able to feel around you as the good beings which work on My behalf. But you will invariably fall prey to these evil forces since they are very powerful, and they will use this power because your will is giving them the right to do so. However, you need never fear these evil forces if your will only ever applies to Me and you commend yourselves to My protection. In that case I have numerous helpers at My side wanting to be of service to you. And then the path of your earthly life will always be under the protection of your spiritual guide, whom I placed by your side Myself from the time of your birth until your death."

Reunion in the Beyond in the Kingdom of Light

BD No. 5365 of 04/15/1952 taken from book 59

Jesus is speaking: "It is an incomparably happy moment when the soul passes away from earth and enters the kingdom of light, the spheres where impurity no longer exists, where the soul is embraced by a flow of joy-inducing light, where it is approached by exceedingly beautiful beings who show the soul an extent of love which almost overwhelms it. The emanations of light correspond to the soul's state of maturity, thus always to a degree that they will indeed cause inconceivable bliss but not consume the soul, which could indeed be caused by an excess of light if a soul is not yet receptive to it.... In infinite expanse it sees the most marvelous creations, for now its spiritual eye is able to behold spiritual creations which no longer consist of matter and yet arise just as real and are by no means self-deception.

And amid the beauty it sees it will find its loved ones who had passed over before in the degree of maturity suitable to the kingdom of light. People cannot imagine the bliss of such reunion, yet in the spiritual kingdom the soul is able to take in profound impressions without fading away and can consciously experience the bliss it receives from God. In its heart it will sing His praises and give thanks, just as it will, if the kingdom of light has become its home, always come aglow with love for the Father, Who has prepared all these blessings for the soul.

Its co-operation with souls who have the same degree of maturity increases its strength and willingness to be active, and it applies this to far less mature souls to help them attain the same bliss. In merciful love it takes care of those it knew well on earth, who still dwell in lower spheres, who neglected their spiritual development on earth due to their unbelief and unkindness, and who are therefore

still wretched in darkness or twilight. It certainly can identify these souls and also approach them and offer its help, yet it will not be recognized in turn, and thus its help is frequently rejected.

Yet a light-soul's love and patience will constantly approach these souls and sooner or later gain influence. The bliss it receives through God's perpetual emission of love, the incomparable creations of the kingdom of light and its co-operation with beings to whom it is attached with joyful love provide it with the constant desire for redeeming activity. It finds its own happiness in giving what it receives itself; its longing for God finds constant fulfillment and it cannot but want to make others equally happy.

It is impossible to describe the splendors of the kingdom of light to people on earth, because only a fully matured soul can endure the abundance of light and therefore also understand the beatitude, which the as yet imperfect person does not appreciate. However, he can and should believe that there will be a reunion in the kingdom of the beyond, that death is not the end of the soul's actual life, and that these souls will recognize each other when they have attained a certain degree of maturity which, however, many souls still do not possess. And therefore, it can take a long time for many a soul until it will experience the happiness of a reunion with its loved ones, yet the desire for this is frequently the reason to strive for ascent. The souls' strength of love is constantly at work to release the souls from the abyss and to help them achieve beatitude, to help them enter the kingdom where they are surrounded by radiating light, where they can behold God and every hardship has come to an end."

''Eternal punishment'' and ''Eternal damnation'' Do they exist?

Ref: "Secrets of Life" Jakob Lorber

Jesus is speaking: "In the work on the beyond "From Hell to Heaven" (Guidance in the beyond of Robert Blum), Vol.2, Chap. 226/227, an advanced spirit asks the Lord to reveal to him the true meaning of the concepts of "eternal punishment" and "eternal damnation", which crop up in all Christian churches and communities. He himself considers an eternal punishment logical, provided there is an eternal reward as well.

The Lord replies: "With all I have created, I could not possibly have more than one purpose in mind. Since I Myself am Eternal Life, I cannot ever have created beings destined for eternal death. Therefore, wherever it may occur, a so-called punishment can only be a means to a fundamental and principal end, not to an as it were diametrically opposed end. Therefore, there can never be mention of an "eternal damnation"!

True, an "eternal death" is mentioned, which is an eternal, firm judgment, and this judgment arises from My eternal, immutable order. It is the so-called "fire of My wrath" or rather the "fire of the zeal of My will", which naturally must remain forever thus immutable, or else everything created would suddenly be annihilated.

Whosoever lets himself be carried away by the world and its matter (which must of necessity be and remain under judgment, otherwise it was no "world"), is of course to be considered "lost" and "dead", as long as he refuses to part with the matter under judgment. There must thus be an eternal judgment, and eternal

fire and a so-called eternal death. However, from this it does not follow that an imprisoned spirit under judgment must remain imprisoned for the whole duration of this judgment, just as little as on earth, in a secure prison built by you, the prisoners should be sentenced for the whole duration of the prison.

Are not, visible to everyone, prison and imprisonment two different things? The prison is and remains forever and the fire of My zeal must never go out, but the prisoners remain only in the prison until their conversion and betterment!

By the way, in the whole Scripture there is not one syllable of an eternal repudiation or condemnation of a spirit to be found, but only of an eternal condemnation of the counter-order as compared to My eternal order, which latter is essential because nothing could exist without it. Vice, as dis-order or counter-order, is truly condemned forever, but the one indulging in it only for as long as he is doing so. Thus, there is in truth also an eternal hell, but no spirit who because of his vice would be condemned forever to hell, but only until his betterment!

To be sure, I did say to the Pharisees: "Therefore, you will be condemned all the more! – but never: Therefore, you will be condemned forever!" Do you now understand your so dangerous looking scriptural texts? Or is there still something you fail to understand?"

Says the spirit: "O Lord, I have again understood quite well what you said. But there is a single point in Scriptures which I fail to completely comprehend. It is the "chasm" in the parable of the poor Lazarus and the rich man..."

The Lord: ... "Volenti non fit iniuria; he who wills it thus, suffers no injustice! – As for the chasm, it means again the unbridgeable gulf between My freest order in the heavens and its diametrically opposed counter-order in hell, thus the incompatibility of order and disorder, not a forever locked gate for the one who is in it. Amen."

Concerning a question in the distant future

(12 January 1842)

Jesus is speaking: "What will happen in the future to the "condemned" after the "restitution of all things", no one is allowed to know. An angel does not know it either – not even the highest spirit created for the light. Only the Deity of the Eternal Father in its holiness foresees the fate of all created beings throughout all eternities of eternities and, only in future times, those who will be illumined in this immensely mysterious matter according to the holy will of God."

Warnings from Heaven to Convert Now

Ref: From the Blessed Mother and St Michael the Archangel

Into What an Abyss You Have Fallen

Ref: MMP 351

This was a message given on the 70th anniversary, **May 13, 1987,** of the first apparition at Fatima.

"Today you are calling to mind the seventy years since my first apparition in the poor Cova da Iria in Fatima, where I came from heaven to give you my messages of conversion and of salvation. Since that time, the succession of these years has been a continual confirmation of what I had foretold to you.

The refusal to return to God through conversion has brought all humanity along the arid and cold road of hatred, of violence, of sin and of an ever increasingly widespread impurity. Wars have continually succeeded, one upon another, and despite so many efforts you have not succeeded in building peace. On the contrary, today as never before, the world is being more and more threatened with its very own destruction.

There is an unwillingness to respond to my demand for prayer, which I had made to you then, especially with the frequent recitation of the holy rosary, to obtain the conversion of sinners and the salvation of many souls, exposed to the grave danger of being eternally lost.

Thus, the night of sin has enveloped the world, and evil has spread everywhere like a terrible cancer. There is an unwillingness to recognize sin as an evil; on the contrary it is openly justified and exalted as a good. People no longer go to confession to God. ***They live and die habitually in mortal sin, and every day how many souls go to hell, because there is no one to pray and sacrifice for their salvation.***

My request that Russia be consecrated to me, by the Pope together with all the bishops, has not been accepted, and thus she has spread her errors in every part of the world.

You are living in a humanity which has built a new civilization, atheistic and anti-human. People no longer love one another; they no longer respect the life and the good of their neighbor; the flame of egoism and hatred are extinguishing those seeds of goodness which are still springing up in the hearts of men. The poor are being abandoned; the little ones are being ensnared and nourished with the poisoned food of scandal; the youth are being betrayed and led into precocious experiences of evil; homes are being profaned and destroyed.

How great is your desolation! How dense is the darkness which surrounds you! Into what an abyss you have fallen! Pray, Pray, Pray."

A Call to Convert Now

Ref: MESSAGE OF THE MOST HOLY VIRGIN MARY TO HER BELOVED DAUGHTER LUZ DE MARIA JUNE 6, 2022

Beloved children of My Immaculate Heart:

I BLESS YOU WITH MY LOVE, I BLESS YOU WITH MY FIAT. Children, I call you to **convert**. Some of you are asking yourselves: how do I convert?

You must decide to turn away from sin, from all that corrupts your spiritual and physical senses, your mind, your thoughts and all that hardens your heart.

You must take a firm decision, having a firm intention to make amends for your possible falls as regards detachment from worldliness, from what is sinful and from inappropriate habits. The tyranny of the human self is strong when it has been allowed to take hold of the reins of the cravings of the flesh and the senses.

Convert by turning away from what corrupts you and causes you to be united to what is base and inferior, in which the Devil moves. Sin leads you to deprive yourselves of My Divine Son and this is very serious, for the result is to deprive yourselves of Eternal Salvation if you do not repent.

SIN MEANS ENTERING THE DANGEROUS TERRITORY OF WHAT IS FORBIDDEN AND INAPPROPRIATE, WHERE THE SOUL SUFFERS.

You have free will and I see so many of My children constantly falling into the same sin out of foolishness. They say: "I am free, freedom is mine" and thus they sink into the putrid waters of sin, from which they do not come out due to pride, due to the misuse of free will.

CONVERT!

Reflect on how you are, what you do, how you react, how you are towards your brothers and sisters, how you work and how you behave. (Ps. 50 (51): 4-6). Children, humanity is in danger and without conversion you are easy prey for evil.

GREAT CHANGES ARE COMING!

Modern innovations are coming that destroy the spirituality of My children, causing them to betray My Son. There are so many who feel they are wise but who end up being foolish and falling into vileness.

Humanity must change urgently in order for you not to be deceived. Human beings are in a constant process of conversion with an urgent need to be constantly washed of sin. As I did the first time, I call you to strengthen yourselves as My Son's People with fasting, prayer, the Eucharist – the Word of God, and fraternity.

AS A MOTHER I WOULD LIKE TO SPEAK TO YOU ONLY OF THE GRANDEUR OF HEAVEN, BUT AT THIS MOMENT I MUST SPEAK OF WHAT IS APPROACHING AND CAN CAUSE YOU TO FALL.

You must change now already and be willing to be totally new creatures. Violence is increasing due to human discord, creating chaos in one country and another. This is why I call you to adore My Divine Son, to pray and to be fraternal. You will not succeed in giving what you do not bear within you.

MY CHILDREN, YOU NEED TO LIVE IN ADORATION OF MY SON SO THAT YOU MAY PASS THIS ON TO YOUR BROTHERS AND SISTERS BEFORE IT IS TOO LATE.

Beloved People of My Son, this is the time to raise your hearts up to My Son; separating yourselves from My Son prevents you from discerning.

More diseases are coming which are not the Divine Will but are due to misused science. Pray and use what has been indicated to you.

BE FRATERNAL AND DO NOT PERMIT STRIFE....UNITY IS URGENT: THOSE WHO LIVE IN STRIFE WILL FIND THEMSELVES ALONE FACING THE DANGER OF EVIL.

I bless you with My Love; come to My Womb. I remain with My Son's People. Do not fear I am protecting you.

Mother Mary

The Call of Our King and Lord Jesus Christ:

Ref: MESSAGE OF *ST. MICHAEL THE ARCHANGEL* TO LUZ DE MARIA JUNE 23, 2022

Beloved People of Our King and Lord Jesus Christ:

RECEIVE FROM THE SACRED HEARTS BLESSING AND FORTITUDE FOR THOSE WHO WISH TO ACCEPT THEM.

A great part of humanity remains inert in the light of the Calls of Our King and Lord Jesus Christ. These Calls will regain value in human memory when the events which have been enumerated unfold one after the other in front of humanity.

HUMANITY'S DISOBEDIENCE IS THE WEAPON OF THE DEVIL WITH WHICH HE SUCCEEDS IN MAKING MAN RISE UP AGAINST THE MOST HOLY TRINITY.

In these times, disobedience will be almost total. Man does not wish to be subject to anything and proclaims his free will, leading him to sink into his vanity, pride and liberalism.

I HAVE TO TELL YOU THAT WHOEVER DOES NOT CHANGE THEIR WORKS AND ACTIONS IN THE DIRECTION OF FRATERNITY, WILL FALL PREY TO DARKNESS. Pride, selfishness, arrogance and superiority are small tentacles with which the Devil is causing excessive damage and I, as Prince of the Armies of Heaven, will not allow the People of My King and Lord Jesus Christ to be undermined.

THE HOLY SPIRIT POURS OUT HIS GIFTS AND VIRTUES (I COR 12:11) **ON THE HUMBLE SO THAT THEY WOULD PREACH THE WORD, NOT ON THE PROUD SO THAT THEY WOULD EXALT THEIR FREE WILL.**

People of Our King and Lord Jesus Christ, the day of prayer that I requested of you has reached the Paternal Throne like precious incense. I must share with you that each day of prayer has been completely pleasing to God and has succeeded in attenuating to some extent the great earthquake that humanity is going to suffer.

Without wishing to upset you, I must tell you that the coming events will occur one after another without respite. Earthquakes will be of greater intensity, causing the earth to lose its compact state and high mountains to collapse.

People of Our Lord and King Jesus Christ, the country represented by the bear will react unexpectedly, causing the world to remain anxious, and making some countries react hastily.

When you hear an unknown rumbling, do not leave your homes or places where you are; do not leave until you receive orders to move. If a strong and unknown glow appears, do not look at it; on the contrary, keep your head to the ground and do not look until the glow disappears, and do not move from the place where you are.

Store food inside your homes, without forgetting water, blessed grapes, the sacramentals and what is necessary for the small altar that at a certain moment you were asked to prepare in your homes.

Attention, beloved People of God, attention. Remain attentive to the persistence of evil that wants to make you fall. Do not succumb!

I defend you with My Sword. Do not fear.

St Michael protect us!

Closing Message from God the Father

Do not Forfeit your Eternal Life

BD No. 7096 of 04/18/1958 taken from book 75

God the Father is speaking, I say again: “Do not forfeit your eternal life. Admittedly, one day it will be granted to all of you, but eternities of infinite agony and darkness may still go by when you are in a state of death and entirely without strength and light. And you can prolong this agonizing time indefinitely so that you can indeed speak of 'eternal damnation,’ but which I have not given to you, instead you volitionally cause and continue to cause it yourselves if you fail to use your human existence to achieve eternal life for yourselves.

I will not let you be lost forever, because you are My living creations whom I loved from the start and will never cease to love either, but I cannot give life to you prematurely if you yourselves prefer the state of death, if you are unwilling to accept life from Me. However, you can easily acquire it by merely entrusting yourselves to Me, who is eternal life Himself.

And for this purpose, earthly life is given you, where you are in possession of intellect and free will, where you can accept instructions concerning your task on earth and thus you need only want to emerge from the state of death. And this

time on earth is very short, no great sacrifices are expected of you considering what you shall receive if you use your will correctly. The lifespan of a human being is very brief indeed, but it suffices to let you reach the goal.

Yet your preliminary development took an infinitely long time until you were able to enter the stage of a human being. And it will take an equally infinitely long time until you will receive the grace again to repeat your test of volition. The length of these infinite times is beyond your human comprehension since your thinking is limited in your imperfect state. And just as you do not know of this agony, because retrospection of your preliminary development is taken from you during your earthly life, you do not know of the indescribable bliss either which is integral to the concept of 'eternal life.' You do not know of the splendors awaiting you in My kingdom when you decide to finally return to Me. And neither one nor the other information can be proven to you, since then it would be impossible to make a free decision of will.

But you should believe it even without proof and live your earthly life accordingly, you should not forfeit the bliss of a 'life' in My kingdom, you all should include this possibility in your intellectual consideration even if it seems implausible to you, and you should live such that you need not reproach yourselves when the hour of your departure from this earth has arrived one day. You should also listen to those who talk about such things which are unrelated to the physical world. And you should reflect on it and imagine how you would fare if they were right.

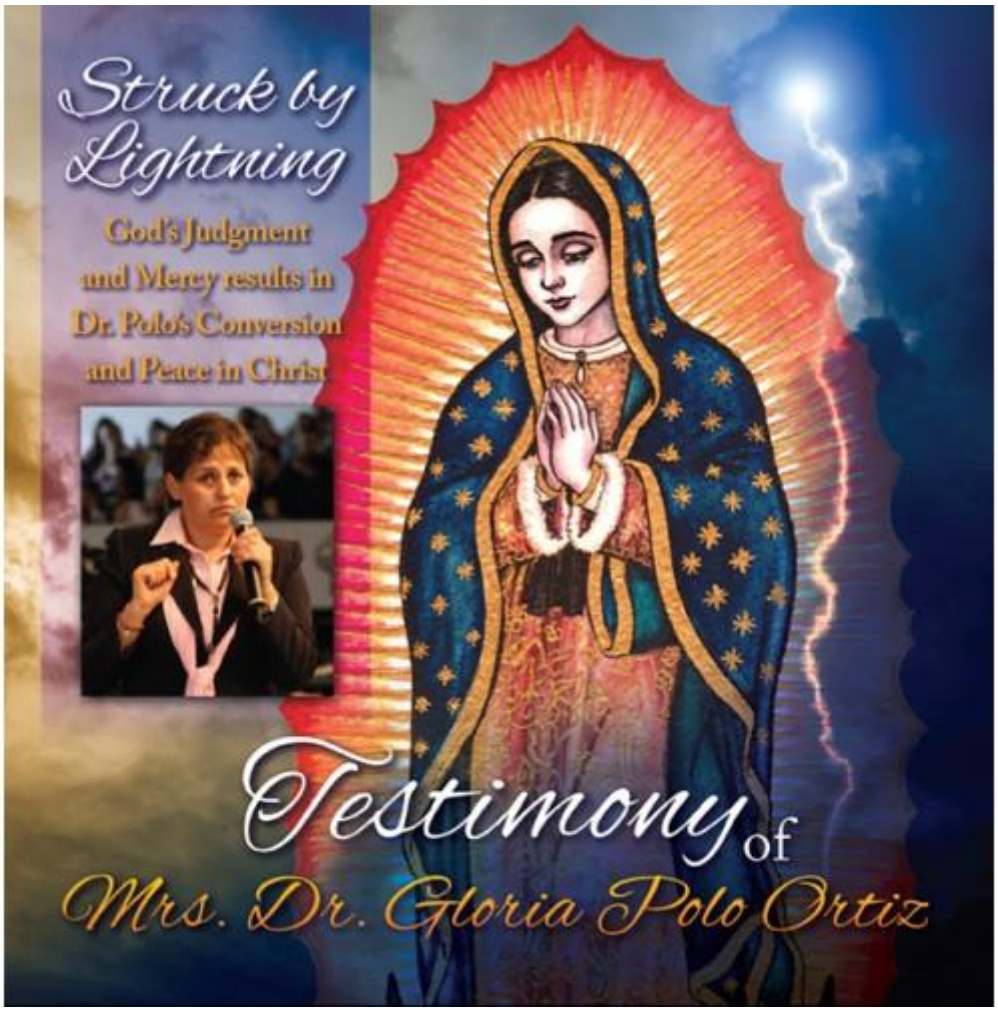
There is too much at stake for you humans, it is not just a question of a few years like your lifetime on earth, it concerns eternal life, it concerns the never-ending state of supreme blissfulness, a state in light and strength that was yours in the beginning. And for this eternity in light and strength you only need to renounce utterly worthless things for a very short time, for a 'moment' of this eternity. But you value these things exceptionally high, and hence will forfeit 'life' and continue to remain in a state of death for an endless time again.

And all I can do to help you attain life is to constantly send My messengers to you humans, who warn and remind you on My behalf, who should inspire you to try to arrive at the truth, who point out to you that I, as the only Truth, enlighten your thoughts, who advise you to establish the connection with Me Myself, so that I can then seize and draw you to Myself. But you have to take the first step, since I will not force you for the sake of your beatitude. But I will support and strengthen even the weakest will which turns to Me. I caused the entire creation to come into being in order to give you life.

I do not want your death, I want you to live and finally escape your state of death, which has already lasted for an infinite time. I want to impart My love on you again and offer you a wonderful fate which will never end again. But I cannot stop you from taking the path into the abyss once more if you volitionally follow My adversary again who once had taken your life and delivered you unto death. I can only ever call to you again ***'Do not forfeit your eternal life.'*** But you have to follow My call voluntarily, *you have to endeavor to achieve life while you live on earth*, and I truly will help you achieve it because I love you."

(Life is in the Holy Eucharist – the Word of God)

SPECIAL TESTIMONY: Gloria Polo Ortiz



Gloria Polo died after being terribly burned by a lightning bolt on May 5, 1995 in Bogotá, Colombia; she was judged, and then came back to life.

This is her testimony. I am publishing this copy of the testimony of Gloria Polo so that it might arrive to as many people as possible.

The title of this booklet is: "From Illusion to the Truth". There are many people, like Gloria Polo, that are under the illusion to be OK according to their own conscience formed by their own personal criteria, or according to the criteria of the world and those around them, or according to the criteria of the devil, BUT NOT ACCORDING TO THE CRITERIA OF GOD, that is, according to THE TRUTH! This is the fundamental deception of Satan from the beginning of humanity and always (Gen 3:4-5)! We human beings are truly adept and ingenious in deceiving ourselves, WILLINGLY, and then forgetting about it so easily!

Popes Pius XII and John Paul II said that the greatest sin is to believe that there is no sin, to have lost the sense of sin! This is the great trap of today for countless souls. Today few people go to Mass every Sunday and among these,

few go to confession regularly. I prefer to know the truth while I am still alive even if the truth is very strong to provoke in me a great uneasiness or to even cause me to enter into crisis (holy!?!?). If God offers me this great gift of the truth while I am alive, even in a brusque way like a shock (a lightning bolt!?!), I am still in time to make a good confession and change my life. After death one cannot change anything for all eternity, just as for the angel's one instant after their creation and eternal decision! I think that this testimony is a gift from God precisely for our times so extraordinary. I believe that this testimony will help many people of good will, who are not afraid to confront themselves with the truth, so as to convert themselves to the Truth and begin to live a new and fulfilling life with Jesus Christ.

For us Catholics it will help us to make a good examination of conscience and then a good sacramental confession. There is already translated into English a short testimony that Gloria Polo gave to Radio Maria in Colombia (www.gloriapolo.net). The following testimony, instead, was given on May 5, 2005 in Caracas, Venezuela. It is much more complete than the one given to Radio Maria in Colombia and so one is able to enter into and to understand better this special experience of Gloria Polo, which I believe is a true gift from God for so many people today who, like Gloria Polo before her unpleasant incident, have fallen into the fundamental trap of Satan to believe they are good and holy, according to their freely embraced illusion and criteria from themselves, the world or Satan, but not according to the truth. Perhaps one could summarize this trap with the words of Pope Benedict XVI: "The tyranny of relativism." If you would like to read "An Open Letter to a Fellow Priest" that I sent to a priest who forbid me to offer to the people, in his parish church (in Italy, 2009), printed copies of the Testimony of Gloria Polo when I substituted for him at a few Sunday Masses, see below, orvisit: http://testimonypolo.blogspot.com/2009/11/open-letter-to-fellow-priest.html).

Father Joseph DwightIf you would like to DOWNLOAD this document, visit: http://www.docstoc.com/docs/17643575/The-Testimony-of-Gloria-PoloFor further clarification, visit the web site on the Internet with the information, in variouslanguages:www.gloriapolo.net (many languages)www.gloriapolo.com (Spanish) If you would like to see a video clip of Gloria Polo with English subtitles, visit: Gloria Polo's testimony 1 (http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=smKKCZLiCi0); Gloria Polo's testimony 2 (http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=MAwgC6ednx0).

From Illusion to the Truth

This is the live testimony of Gloria Polo, medical dentist, in a church in Caracas, Venezuela, May 5, 2005.

"I was at the gates of heaven and of hell" – Declaration After the abrogation of canons 1399 and 2318 of the Canon Law, by Pope Paul VI in AAS 58 (1966), ecclesiastical permission is not required for the publication of revelations, visions, miracles or for the frequenting of non-recognized places of apparitions. Of course these publications must not put in danger Faith or Morals: this is the general rule which every Catholic must follow in all his actions, even journalists, especially journalists.

In compliance with the decree of Pope Urban VIII, we declare that, to the facts narrated and presented, no supernatural value is given officially, until the Ecclesiastical Authorities might express their judgment.

With the publication of this testimony, it is not intended in anyway to anticipate the definitive judgment of the Church, thus all is fully subject to the Church's official decisions.

Furthermore, canon 623 #1 of the current Code remains in force: "The Pastors of the Church have the right to demand that writings to be published by the Christian faithful, which touch upon faith or morals, be submitted to their judgment".

From the preface of the Portuguese edition: This testimony of Gloria Polo fell into my hands by way of a friend, of whom I am a good friend. When I read this story, I felt the obligation to put it in writing: the realities of faith which one finds here recounted, were already part of my knowledge. But I did not want to let fall so much truth, and so I decide to ask the protagonist of the story permission to write this experience.

The booklet that you are about to read does not contain anything more, or nothing less, than that which one finds in Sacred Scriptures: but, given the fact that many do not succeed in seeing the truth of after death, God causes someone to experience and to live this "more", of which the Bible speaks. This someone is Gloria Polo, who returning in this life became like a light of a reality which regards everyone.

I hope that this testimony of Gloria Polo might help you in your search for the Truth.

This booklet wants to simply show you a live reality that you might ignore, even though you might know about it, at least in part, if in some way you might practice the Word of Truth called the BIBLE. (…).Father Macedo, SCJ

Introduction

If someone might doubt or think that God does not exist, that life beyond is something from the films or that with death all ends, do yourself a favor and read this testimony! But read it from the beginning to the end! Surely your opinion, perhaps the most skeptical, will change! We are dealing here with something that really occurred! Gloria Polo is a woman that "died", she passed to the other world and returned precisely to give her testimony to the incredulous. God gives us many proofs, but we always deny His existence.

Gloria Polo actually lives in Colombia; she continues to exercise the same profession that she had before this event. She remained with enormous scars, but she has a normal life; this difference is that now she is a woman with great faith! She travels a lot, in order to give her testimony to thousands of people; fulfilling the mission that God confided to her (she has the authorization from the part of the Church for this).

This is a transcription of one of her testimonies, given in a church in Caracas (Venezuela), May 5, 2005, and it is translated from the Spanish original version. It is authentic! IT IS NOT A FAKE! Padre Leone Orlando

This English version was translated from the Italian translation of Padre Orlando, with the acknowledgement and encouragement of Gloria Polo, by Father Joseph Dwight.

The Testimony of Gloria Polo

Good morning, brothers. It is wonderful for me to be here, to share with you this gift so beautiful that the Lord gave me. That which I am about to recount to you happened May 5, 1995 at the National University of Bogotá, starting from 4:30 pm.

I am a dentist. I and my 23-year-old cousin, who is also a dentist, were studying in order to get the specialization. On that day, which was a Friday, about 4:30 pm, we were walking together with my husband toward the Faculty of Dentistry to find some books that we needed. With my cousin I walked under a small umbrella while my husband wore a rain coat and to shelter himself better he was walking near the wall of the General Library. We two were jumping from one side to the other in order to avoid the puddles while staying close to the trees. When we jumped over a rather large puddle we were hit by a lightning bolt which left us both carbonized.

My cousin died immediately. The lightning bolt entered from behind, burning him inside totally, and came out through his feet, leaving him intact externally. Not withstanding his young age, he was a very religious young man. He had a great devotion for Baby Jesus and he always carried around his neck His image, a quartz medal. The authorities said that it was the quartz that attracted the lightning bolt to my cousin, because it entered into the heart burning everything.

Remaining intact externally, he immediately had a cardiac arrest which did not respond to the attempts of reanimation by the doctors, and he died on the spot.

As for me, the lightning bolt entered from my shoulder, burning terribly the whole body, inside and out; in short my flesh disappeared including my breasts, especially the left one, leaving a hole. It caused the flesh of my abdomen, of my legs, of the ribs to disappear; it carbonized the liver, it gravely burned the kidneys, the lungs, the ovaries, and came out through the right foot.

For my contraceptive, I was using a spiral (an intrauterine devise in the form of a T), and because of the material with which it is made (copper) it is a good conductor of electricity; the lightning bolt carbonized and pulverized also the ovaries which became like two raisins.

I remained in cardiac arrest, just about without life, with the body that was jumping due to the electricity that was still present in that place.

This body that you see here, now, this reconstructed body, is the fruit of the mercy of Our Lord.

The Other World

But this is only the physical part. The good part is that, while my body laid there carbonized, in that same moment I found myself inside a beautiful white tunnel of light, a wonderful light, which made me feel a joy, a peace, and happiness that I do not have words to describe the greatness of that moment. It was a true ecstasy. I looked, and in the end of that tunnel I saw a white light, like a sun, a beautiful light. I say white to tell you a color, but we are talking about colors that cannot be compared to those that exist on the earth. It was a splendid light; I felt from it a source of peace, of love, of light.

When I went up in this tunnel toward the light, I said to myself: "Caramba, I'm dead!"

And so I thought about my children and I sighed: "Woe is me, my God, my little children! What will my children say? This mother so occupied, that she never had time for them." In fact, I left early every morning, and I did not return before eleven at night.

And so I saw the reality of my life, and I felt much sadness. I had left my home determined to conquer the world, but at what price! Putting in the second place my home and my children! In that moment of emptiness due to the absence of my children, without feeling anymore my body, or the dimension of time or of space, I looked, and I saw something very beautiful: I saw all of the people of my life. In one single moment, in the same moment, all the people, those living and those dead, I was able to embrace my great grandparents, grandparents, parents (who were dead), everyone! It was a moment of fullness, wonderful. I understood that I had deceived myself with the story of the reincarnation: they had told me that my grandmother had been reincarnated, but without telling me where. Since the information cost me too much money, I let it go and I did not delve into the research in order to know in whom she might have been reincarnated. You know, I defended the theory of reincarnation. And now, there, I had just embraced my grandmother, my great grandmother.

I embraced her well, as I could do with all the people who I knew, living and dead. And all in one single instant. My daughter, when I embraced her, became frightened: she was 9 years old, and she felt my embrace, because I could also embrace the living (only that, normally, we do not feel this embrace).

I almost did not realize the passage of time during that moment so beautiful. And then, now that I no longer had the body, it was stupendous to see the people in a whole new way. Before, in fact, I only knew how to criticize: if one was fat, skinny, ugly, elegant, not elegant, etc.

When I spoke about others, I had to always criticize something. Now no: now I see people from within, and how beautiful it was. While I embraced them, I saw their thoughts, their sentiments.

So I continued to go forward, full of peace, happy; and the more I went up, the more I felt I was about to see something very beautiful. In fact, toward the bottom, I sighted a beautiful lake. Yes! I see a stupendous lake, trees so beautiful, but so beautiful, wonderful. And very beautiful flowers, in all colors, with an exquisite perfume, so different from our flowers. Everything was so beautiful in that stupendous garden, so wonderful. Words do not exist that can describe it, all was love.

There were two trees, to the side of something that seemed to be an entrance. It is all so different from what we know down here: you cannot find in the world similar colors, up here it is all so beautiful!

It was in that moment that my cousin entered in that wonderful garden. I knew! I felt that I must not; I could not enter there.

The First Return

In that same instant I hear the voice of my husband. He laments and cries with a profound sentiment, and cries: "Gloria!!! Gloria! Please, do not leave me!

Look at your children, your children need you! Gloria, go back! Go back! Do not be a coward, return!"

I heard everything, and I saw him cry with much pain. Alas, in that moment Our Lord granted me to leave. But I did not want to return! That peace, that peace in which I was wrapped, fascinated me! But, slowly, slowly, I began to descend again toward my body, which I found without life. I saw it lifeless on a stretcher of the National Nursing University. I saw the doctors who were giving me electric shocks to my body, to pull me out of cardiac arrest. I and my cousin remained more than two hours laid on the ground, because our bodies were giving off electric discharges, and they could not be touched. Only when the electric charge was completely discharged, they could help us. And then they began the attempts to reanimate me.

I looked, and I rested the feet of my soul (also the soul has a human form), my head made a spark and with violence I entered, because the body seemed to suck me inside. It was an immense pain to enter: there came out sparks from all over and I felt myself jammed into something very small (my body). It was as if my body, with this weight and stature, suddenly entered into a baby's outfit, but of iron. It was a terrible suffering, I felt the intense pain of my burned flesh, the body totally burned caused an indescribable pain; it was blazing terribly and gave off smoke and vapor. I heard the doctors cry out: "She is coming back! She is coming back!"

They were very happy, but my suffering was indescribable! My legs were frightfully black; there was live flesh on the body and on the arms! The problem of the legs was complicated when they considered the possibility of amputating them! But for me there was another terrible pain: the vanity of a worldly women, and enterprising woman, intellectual, the student. Slave to the body, to beauty, to the fashion, I dedicated four hours every day to aerobics; enslaved to having a beautiful body, I underwent massages, diets, injections. Basically everything you can imagine. This was my life, a routine of slavery in order to have a beautiful body.

I always used to say: if I have beautiful breasts, they are to show them; why hide them?

I said the same thing about my legs, because I knew I had spectacular legs, nice abdominal muscles. But in an instant, I saw with horror how my whole life had been only a continual and useless care of the body. Because this was the center of my life: love for my body. And now, I no longer had a body! In the place of the breasts I had startling holes, especially the left one, which was practically gone. The legs were a sight to be seen, like fragments, but without flesh, black as coal. Note: the parts of the body that I took care of and esteemed the most, were the ones that were completely burned and literally without flesh.

At the Hospital They then brought me to the "Social Seguro", where they operated on me immediately, and began to remove all the burned tissue. While they were anaesthetizing me, I again came out of my body, worried about my legs, when all of a sudden, in that same moment, terrible and horrible.

But first I must tell you something, brothers: I was a "dietetic (cafeteria) Catholic", I was for my whole life, because my relationship with God was taken care of in a 25 minute Sunday Mass, and that's all. I went to the Mass where the

priest spoke less, because I got tired! What anguish I felt, with those priests who spoke a lot! This was my relationship with God! For this all the worldly currents drug me along: I lacked the protection of prayer well done with faith, even in the Mass! One day, when I was studying for the specialization, I heard a priest affirm that hell does not exist, and not even the demons! It was precisely what I wanted to hear! I immediately thought to myself: if the demons do not exist, and there is no hell, then we all go to Heaven! And thus, what is there to fear?!

What makes me most sad now, and I confess to you with great shame, is that the only tie that still held me in the Church, was the fear of the devil. When I heard that hell does not exist, I immediately said: very good, if we all go to Heaven, it is not important what we are or what we do!

This determined my total moving away from the Lord. I distanced myself from the Church and I began to speak badly, with cusswords, etc. I no longer had any fear of sin, and I began to ruin my relationship with God. I began to say to everyone that the demons do not exist, that they are the inventions of the priests, that they are the manipulations on the part of the Church, and finally. I arrived to the point of saying to my colleagues at the University that God does not exist, that we were products of evolution, etc. etc., succeeding in influencing many people.

Let us return now to the operating room: when I saw myself in that situation, what terrible fright! I finally saw that the demons existed, and how, and they came to seek precisely me! They came to present to me the bill, one could say, since I had accepted their offers of sin! And these offers are not free! One pays!! My sins had their consequences.

In that moment, then, I began to see come out, of the wall of the operating room, so many persons, apparently common, normal, but with a look full of hate, diabolic, frightening, who made my soul tremble: I immediately perceived that we were dealing with demons. I had in myself a special awareness: I understood in fact that to each one of these I owed something, that sin is not gratuitous, and that the principle lie of the devil is to say that he does not exist: this is his best strategy in order to work as he pleases with us. I realized that yes, he exists, and that he came to surround me, to seek me! Just imagine the fright, the terror!!

My scientific and intellectual mind now did not help me at all. I went around in the room, I was trying to get back into my body, but this flesh of mine did not receive me, and the scare was terrible! I ended up fleeing as fast as I could, I passed through, I do not know how, the wall of the operating room, hoping to be able to hide myself in the aisles of the hospital, but when I passed the wall. Down! I made a jump into emptiness! I headed toward several tunnels which went down toward the bottom. At the beginning there was still a little light, like beehives in which there were so many people: young ones, old ones, men, women, who were crying, and with frightening screams they were grinding their teeth. And I, ever more terrified, continued to descend, seeking to get out of there, while the light was going away diminishing. I carried on roaming in those tunnels in a frightening darkness, until I arrived to an obscurity that cannot be compared to anything else. I can only say that, in comparison, the darkest obscurity on earth is not even comparable to the full sunlight at midday. Down there, that same obscurity generates pain, horror, shame, and stinks terribly. It is a living obscurity, yes, it is alive: there the mind is dead or inert. At the end of my descent, running along all

these tunnels, I arrived to a level place. I was frantic, with a will of iron to get out of there: the same will that I had to ascend in life, but now it did not help me at all, because there I was and there I remained. At a certain point I saw the ground open up, like a great mouth, enormous! It was alive! Alive! I felt my body empty, empty in a startling way, and under me an incredible frightening abyss, horrible; that which chilled me the most was that, from there down; you did not feel even a little Love of God, not even a little drop of hope. That chasm had something that sucked me into it. I cried out like a mad women, terrorized, feeling the horror of not being able to avoid that descent, because I realized that I was irretrievably sliding inside. I knew that, if I might enter, I would not at all have remained there, but I would have continued to descend, without ever being able to come back up. It was this, the spiritual death for my soul.

The spiritual death of the soul: I was irretrievably lost forever. But in this horror so great, precisely while I was about to enter, St. Michael the Archangel seized me by the feet. My body entered in that abyss, but the feet remained held on high. It was a terrible moment and truly painful. When I arrived there, the light that still was left in my spirit annoyed those demons; all the horrifying unclean beings that dwell there, immediately attacked me. Those horrible beings were like larva, like bloodsuckers that were trying to block off the light. Imagine the horror in seeing myself covered by such creatures. I was crying out, I was crying out like a mad women! Those things were burning! Brothers, they are living darkness, it is a hate that burns, which devours us, which makes us naked. There are not words to describe that horror!

The Souls of Purgatory

Note that I was an atheist, but there I began to cry out: "Souls of Purgatory! Please, pull me out of here! I beg you, help me!"

While I was crying out, I began to hear crying thousands and thousands of persons, youth. Yes, above all youth, with so much suffering! I perceived that there, in that horrible place, in that quagmire of hate and of suffering, they were gnashing their teeth, with screams and laments that filled me with compassion and that I will never be able to forget. (Already 10 years have passed, but I still cry and suffer, when I remember the suffering of all those persons). I was saying, I understood that in that place there were those persons who, in one moment of desperation, they committed suicide. Now they are in those torments, with those horrible beings near them, surrounded by demons that torment them. But the cruelest of these torments was the absence of God, because there one does not feel God. I understood that, those who in one moment of desperation took their lives, had to remain there, within those torments, until all the time that they might have spent on the earth had passed: because all those who kill themselves, go out of the Divine Order.

Those poor persons, above all so many youth, many, many. They cry and suffer much. If man might know the suffering that awaits him, never would anyone make the decision to take his life!

Do you know what the greatest torment is, there? It is to see how one's own parents, or relatives, who are alive, are crying and suffering with a tremendous sense of guilt: if I would have punished, or if I would not have punished, if I had

said to him, or if I had not said to him, if I had done this or that. In the end, these regrets so terrible, - a true hell for those who love them and remain in this life - , they are what makes them suffer the most. It is the greatest torment for them, and it is here that the demons rage, showing these scenes:

"Look how your mother cries, look how she suffers, look how your father suffers, look how they are desperate, how they are distressed, how they blame themselves and discuss, accusing each other reciprocally, look at all the suffering that you caused them. Look how they rebel against God. Look at your family, all this because of your fault!"

That which these poor souls need is that those who remain down here might begin a walk of conversion, that they might change their life, that they might do works of charity, that they might visit the sick... And that they might offer Masses in suffrage for the soul of the dead. These souls benefit enormously from all of this. In fact, the souls who find themselves in Purgatory can no longer do anything for themselves. Nothing! But God yes, through the Mass. Also we must help them in this way.

I thus understood that those poor souls could not help me, and in this suffering, in this anguish, I began again to cry out: "But here there is an error! See I am a saint! I never stole! I never killed! I never did anything evil to anyone! On the contrary, before failing in my business, I imported the best products from Switzerland, I extracted and adjusted teeth, and many times I did not require the clients to pay if they were unable. I bought things and I gave them to the poor! What am I doing here?!"

I was vindicating my rights! I, who was so good, who would have to go straight to Heaven, what was I doing here?!

I went every Sunday to Mass, even though I considered myself an atheist and I did not pay attention to what the priest was saying, I never missed Mass. If I missed Mass five times in my whole life, it was a lot! What is it that I was doing there?!

"But what am I doing, here? Pull me out of here! Take me out of here!" I continued shouting terrified, with those horrible beings hanging on to me!

"I am Catholic! I am Catholic, please, get me out of here!"

I Saw My Parents when I shouted out that I was Catholic, I saw a little light: and you see that a small light even very small, in that darkness, is the maximum, it is the greatest gift that one can receive. I saw some steps at the top of this chasm, and I see my father (who died 5 years before) almost at the entrance of the abyss. He had a little bit of light; and four more steps up I saw my mother, with much more light and in a position like this, as in prayer. As soon as I saw them, I experience a joy so great that I began to cry out: "Dad! Mom! What joy! Come and take me! Come and take me out of here! Dad, Mom, please, get me out of here! I beg you, carry me out of here! Carry me away!!"

While all this was happening, my body was in a deep coma: I was incubated, connected to the machines, and agonizing. Air was not entering into my lungs; the kidneys were not working. If I was connected to the machinery, it was only because my sister, who is a doctor, had insisted with her colleagues, invoking the motive that they were not God. In fact, they thought that it was not worthwhile to keep me alive, and they spoke in these terms to my relatives: they said it was

not the case to keep going relentlessly, that it was better to let me die tranquilly, because in any case I found myself in agony. My sister insisted so strongly, that they.

Do you know the incoherence? I defended euthanasia, the right to die in a dignified way!

The doctors did not let anyone enter where I was, except this my sister doctor, who remained continually next to me.

When my soul, which was in the beyond, saw my parents, my sister, who was near my body in coma, she heard me clearly crying out to them, so happy, that they might come to take me.

Perhaps it might have happened to one of you to have heard a person in the state on unconsciousness to cry out, or pronounce some words: this is what happened with me. I almost cause my sister to die of fright! In fact, I began to cry out with joy when I saw them, asking them to come to take me; and so my sister, who heard all of this, shouted: "Now it is that she is dead, my sister! My mother and my father have come to take her! Go away, do not take her! Go away, Mom, please; go away, Dad, please: do not take her! Do you not see that she has small children! Do not take her away! Do not take her away!"

The doctors had to pull her out of there, thinking that my poor sister was delirious, that she might be in a state of shock; which would have been normal, because it was not a small thing that was happening: the death of my cousin, to go to take the corpse to the mortuary, the sister who dies, does not die, but will not live more than 24 hours, according to the opinion of the doctors. It was by now three days that she went forward in this anguish and this without any sleep. Do not be surprised that they believed her to be exhausted and prey to hallucinations.

For my situation, imagine what joy when I see my parents! In that place, in that situation so horrible in which I found myself, I see my parents!

When they looked toward me and they saw me there, you cannot imagine the immense pain that their faces revealed. Since there we perceive and we see the sentiments of the others; I saw the pain that they felt, that suffering of theirs so great. My father began to cry so, so much, and he cried out: "My daughter! Oh, no! My God, my daughter no! My God, my little daughter, no!"

My mother was praying, and when she looked toward me and saw my sorrow in my eyes, but at the same time nothing took away the peace and the sweetness of her face, not even a tear! Instead of crying, she lifted up the eyes, then turned to look toward me. I understood with horror that they could not pull me out of there! This augmented my suffering, seeing them there sharing my pain without being able to do anything for me! I understood also that they were there to give an account to the Lord of the education that they had given to me. They were the tutors, to which was confided the job of looking after the talents that God had given to me. With their life and their testimony, they had to protect me from the attacks of Satan. And they had to nourish the graces that God had put in me by way of Baptism. All parents are the guardians of the talents that God gave to the children.

When I saw their suffering, above all that of my father, I cried out again, desperate: "Take me out of here! Take me out of here! I do not have fault to be here, because I am Catholic! I am Catholic! Pull me out of here!"

My Judgment When I cried out again that I was Catholic, brothers, I heard a Voice, so sweet, but so sweet. So beautiful, that it filled everything with peace and love, and made my soul jump. Those horrible creature that were clinging to me, at hearing it, immediately prostrated themselves in adoration, and asked permission to withdraw themselves, because they could not stand the sweetness of that Voice: then something was opened, like a mouth hanging down, and they fled with fear. Just imagine this! When I see those beings, those horrific demons, there prostrated. At the mere hearing the Voice of the Lord, (notwithstanding the pride of Satan, and thus they hear it as something very unpleasant), they throw themselves on their knees!

Then, I saw the Most Blessed Virgin prostrated, when the priest elevated Our Lord in the Host, during the Mass that was celebrated for the soul of my cousin. The Virgin Mary interceded for me! Prostrated at the feet of Our Lord, she gathered all the prayers that the people of my earth made for me, and she presented them to Him.

You know, at the moment of the elevation, when the priest lifts up the Host, one feels the presence of Jesus, everyone prostates themselves on their knees, even the demons! And I, who went to the Mass without the least of respect, without giving any attention, with gum to chew in my mouth, sometimes dozing off, looking around, lost in a thousand banal thoughts! And then I had the guts to complain, full of pride that God did not listen to me when I asked something from Him!

Believe me; it was staggering to see how, at the passing of Our Lord, all those creatures, all those frightening beings, threw themselves on the ground, in an impressive adoration.

I saw the Virgin Mary, graciously prostrate at the feet of the Lord, praying for me, in adoration before Him. And I, a sinner, with my rubbish, treating Him without any respect, and saying that I was good. Yes, miserably good! Denying and blaspheming the Lord!

Imagine what a sinner I was, when even the demons prostrated themselves on the ground, at the passing of the Lord Jesus Christ!

That Voice, so beautiful, says to me: Very well, if you are Catholic, tell me what the commandments of the Law of God are?"

Think of the fright! That question I just did not expect! I only knew that there were 10! And then, nothing more!

"And now, how do I cope with this?" I was thinking, afflicted. I remembered then that my mother used to say that the first commandment was love, she spoke of it always. Love of God and love of neighbor. In the end, the discourses of my mother were useful for something, I said to myself. So I chose this answer, hoping that it would suffice and that the rest might not be noticed! I was thinking to get by in this way, as I always did when I was in life: in fact, I always had the answer ready, the perfect answer, I always succeed in justifying myself and in defending myself in such a way, that no one discovered that which I did not know. Now I thought to manage in the same way. And I began to say: "The first commandment is: to love God above everything else, and, the neighbor as myself."

"Very well: - he said to me – and you did this? Did you love? Totally confused, I replied: "I yes! Yes, I yes. Yes!" But that wonderful Voice said: "No!!!"

I assure you that when he said to me: "No!", then it was that I felt the strike of the lightning bolt! In fact, I still did not feel on which side it had struck me... But when I heard that "No", I felt all the pain of the lightning bolt!... I felt naked, all my masks fell, and I remained uncovered.

That soft Voice continued to say to me: "No"!!! You did not love your Lord above all things, and even less did you love your neighbor as yourself! You made of yourself a God that you modeled on yourself, on your life! Only in moments of extreme necessity, or in suffering, you remembered your Lord. And then yes, you knelt down, you cried, you asked, you offered novenas, you proposed to yourself to go to Mass, to prayer groups, asking for some graces or a miracle. When you were poor, when your family was humble, when you still desired to become a professional, then yes, every day you used to pray on your knees, whole hours, beseeching your Lord! You would pray, asking me to pull you out of that poverty, that I might permit you to become a professional and to be someone! When you found yourself in need and you needed money, then yes, you promised: I pray the Rosary, but You, Lord, grant me a little money!

This was the relationship that you used to have with your Lord! Never, did you keep one promise made, not even one! And beyond not keeping the promises, you never thanked me!"

And the Lord insisted on this: "You gave your word, you made a promise to your Lord, but you never kept them!"

The Lord showed me one of my many prayers: when I asked Him the grace to have my first car, I would pray, and very humbly I would ask that please, he might grant also only a little car, even an old one, it is not important, just so it works. But as soon as I obtained what I desired, I did not even say a "thanks" to the Lord; and eight days later, not only did I not thank Him, but already I denied Him and I spoke bad about Him. He showed me how, in all the graces that He granted me, not only was I lacking in regards to the made promises, but I did not even give thanks.

I saw the Lord in a truly sad way. You know, my relationship with God was like a "BANK CASH DISPENSER": I put in a Rosary, and He was supposed to give me money, and if he did not give it to me, I rebelled. The Lord showed me all of this. Just as soon as he permitted me to have my profession, - and in consequence, to begin to have a certain prestige and also money - , the name of God was already not comfortable to me. I began to feel I was great, without ever having for Him the least expression of love, or gratitude.

To be grateful, never! Not even a 'thank you' for the new day that he gave me, or for my health, or for having a roof where I lived. Or even a prayer of compassion for those poor little ones who do not have a house, or something to eat. Nothing!!! Ungrateful to the max! More than anything else, I became more incredulous in regard to my Lord, while I believed in Venus and Mercury for fortune; I went blindly after astrology, saying that the stars direct our life. I began to believe in all the doctrines that the world offered me. I believed, for example, in reincarnation: I convinced myself, simply, one would die and would re-begin from the top, and I forgot it cost a price of Blood to my Lord Jesus.

The Lord continued: "All that you had, it was not given to you because you had asked for it, but it was a blessing that you received from Heaven: you, instead,

said to have obtained all by yourself, because you were a worker, a fighter, That everything you had conquered with your hands, and by the force of study. No! Look: how many professionals are there, more qualified than you, who work as much or more than you?"

The Lord gave me an example of the 10 Commandments, showing me that which I was: that what in words I said to adore and love God, but on the contrary I adored Satan. In my outpatients' clinic a lady who read the cards would usually come, and she did some magic in order to set free from bad influences and used to say: "I do not believe in these things. But do it anyway, because one never knows." And she did her devilment. In a corner where no one saw, she put a horseshoe and an aloe plant, in order to keep away bad fortune, and other such things. Do you know what I did, permitting this? I opened the doors to the demons, so that they could enter at their pleasure, and to circulate freely, merrily, in my outpatients' clinic and in my life. You see that all this is shameful. God made an analysis of my whole life, in the light of the 10 Commandments; he showed me that which I was in my relationships with the neighbor, and with Him. I criticized everything and everyone. And everyone pointed with their finger, "holy Gloria"! He showed me when I said to love God and neighbor, but on the contrary I was very envious. Now I saw that, when I deceived someone or lied, it was like committing perjury, because in the moment in which I said: "I am Catholic", I declared that Jesus Christ was my Lord and at the same time I gave testimony to lies and deception! How much evil I did to so many people! As for the rest I was never grateful to my parents, for all their sacrifice and commitment so that I might have a profession and to triumph in life; for all the sacrifices and the efforts that they did. But I did not see them, I ignored them, and as soon as I had my work, they even diminished in my eyes: to the point to be ashamed of my mother, for her humility and poverty.

Jesus continued, showing me what a spouse I was: I passed the whole day grumbling, from when I awoke. My husband said: "Have a nice day!" And I said: "maybe it will be for you!! Look at the rain!" I always grumbled and contradicted everything.

As far as sanctifying the holy days, what fright! What sorrow I felt! Jesus made me see how I would dedicate four and even five hours to my body with gymnastics, and not even ten minutes a day for my Lord, not even a thank you, or a nice prayer, no, nothing! On the contrary, sometimes I even recited the Rosary beginning it real fast, during the interval of the soap opera. I thought to succeed in praying it during the commercials. I began rapidly, without giving attention to what I said, more worried if the soap opera might had already begun or not, and to what point I had arrived.

In short, without elevating the heart to God, Jesus continued to show me how I was in no way grateful in regard to Him, and the laziness that I had in going to Mass. When I still lived with my parents and my mother obliged me to go, I said to her: "But, Mom, if God is everywhere, what need do I have to go to church for the Mass?" Clearly, for me it was very convenient to talk like this. And Jesus showed this to me. I had the Lord twenty-four hours a day for me, all my life God took care of me, and I so lazy to dedicate to Him a little time on Sunday, to show Him my gratitude, my love for Him. But the worst thing was to know that, to

frequent the church, meant to nourish my soul. I, instead, dedicated myself totally to the care of my body, I became a slave to my flesh, and I forgot this particular: that I had a soul! And never did I take care of it.

Regarding the Word of God

I even said, impudently, that the one who read the Bible a lot, became crazy. I arrive to the point to be a blasphemer, and the incoherence of my life brought me to say: "But what Most Holy? And God would be present there, in the ciborium and in the chalice? The priest should add brandy, to give it good flavor!"

To what point did I arrive in degrading my relationship with God! I left my soul without nourishment, and as if that were not enough, the only thing I did was to criticize the priests. If you knew, brothers, how bad I felt about this, before Jesus! The Lord showed me how my soul was reduced due to all these criticisms. Beyond everything else, consider the fact that I declared a priest to be homosexual, and the whole Community came to know this. You cannot imagine the evil that I did to that priest! No, you cannot imagine it! I cannot tell you about it, because it would be too long. I tell you only that, one word only, has the power to kill and destroy souls. Now I saw all the evil that I had done! My shame was so great, that there are no words to describe it! Can I only beg you to not do the same: do not criticize! Pray! I saw that the gravest faults which stained my soul, and that drew more curses in my life, was to speak evil about the priests!

Pray For the Priests

My family always criticized the priests. From when we were small, my father, and everyone in the house, used to criticize and say: "These priests are womanizers, and have more money than us. And they are this, and they are that", and we would repeat this.

Our Lord said to me almost shouting: "Who did you think you are, to make yourself god and judge my consecrated ones?! They are of flesh, and the sanctity is to them given for the benefit of the communities in which I put there as a gift. And the communities have the obligation to pray for him, to love him and to support him". Might you know, brothers, that, when a priest falls, it will be the community to respond regarding his sanctity. The devil hates Catholics, immensely more the priests. He hates our Church, because where there is a priest who consecrates.

I open a parenthesis: you must all know that the priest, even though remaining a man, is a consecrated one of the Lord, recognized by the Eternal Father, so that in a piece of bread happens a miracle, a transubstantiation: by the hands of the priest, it becomes the Body and Blood of Our Lord Jesus Christ. And these hands, the devil hates them intensely, terribly. The devil detests us Catholics due to the Eucharist, because the Eucharist is an open door for Heaven, and it is the only door! Without the Eucharist, no one enters into Heaven. When a person is agonizing, God comes beside this person, independent of the religion that he belongs to or his beliefs; the Lord reveals himself and says to him affectionately, with Love and Mercy: "I am your Lord!" And if the person asks for pardon and accepts this Lord, something happens that is difficult to explain: Jesus

immediately brings this soul to where the Mass is being celebrated in that moment, and the person receives Viaticum, which is a mystical communion, because only the one who receives the Body and Blood of Jesus Christ can enter into Heaven. It is something mystical, it is an immense grace that we have in the Catholic Church, a grace that God has given to our Church; and many people speak badly about this Church, and yet by way of Her they receive salvation and go to Purgatory, and there they continue to benefit by the grace of the Eucharist. They save themselves. They go to Purgatory, but they are saved! Because of this the devil hates very much the priests: because where there is a priest, there are the hands that consecrate the bread and the wine, making them to become for us the Body and the Blood of Jesus Christ. Thus we must pray very much for the priests, because the devil attacks them constantly. Our Lord showed me all of this.

The Sacraments

Only by way of the priest do we have the sacrament of reconciliation, for example! Only by way of him do we obtain the pardon of our faults. Do you know what the confessional is? It is the "bathing of souls"! Not with water and soap, but with the Blood of Christ! When my soul was filthy, black due to sin, if I would have confessed, it would have been washed with the Blood of Christ; furthermore, I would have broken the strings that held me tied to the evil one. Would he not therefore have reason, the devil, to detest the priests?! Also, those who might have been great sinners, have the power to absolve sins. And the Lord showed me how: in the Wound of His Heart. Yes!

You know, there are things which surpass the intellect of man because they are spiritual realities, and yet we are talking about truths more real than ours... Through this Wound, I was saying, a soul rises up to the Divine level, to the level of the Divine Mercy, to the door of Mercy, it rises up to the Heart of Jesus, eternal Priest; and there, Jesus places His Cross, bleeding in His Eternal Present... And that soul returns clean. Now I see how my soul returned clean in the confession and in every sin that I confessed, Our Lord breaks the stings that united me to Satan. (And I, unfortunately, stayed away from confession!)

But all this happens only by way of the priest. Thus we have the obligation and the duty to pray for them, so that God might protect them, might enlighten them, and might guide them.

For all these motives the devil hates terribly the Catholic Church and the priests.

Matrimony

I would like to speak to you about the great grace that is the sacrament of matrimony. When we entered church, the day of our wedding, at the moment in which we say our "yes", promising to be faithful forever, in joy and in sorrow, in health and in sickness, etc., do you know to Whom we promise? Nothing more, nothing less than to God the Father! Our God is enthralled with matrimony! He is the only Witness, when we say these words. Each of us, when we will die, will see this moment precisely in the Book of Life. Then we will catch sight of an

indescribable golden light, an intense splendor: God the Father writes these words in the Book with letters of gold, so beautiful.

In the moment in which we receive the Body and the Blood of Jesus, we form a pact with God, and with the person whom we have chosen to share together a life. When we pronounce these words, we say them to the Most Holy Trinity.

I saw that on the day of my matrimony, when myself and my husband received the Most Holy Eucharist, we were no longer two, but three! We two and Jesus! In fact, as soon as we communicate with Jesus, He unites us as one thing only! He places us in His Heart and we become ONE, forming with Jesus a holy trinity! "Let man not separate what God has united".

Now I ask: who separates this ONE? No one! No one, brothers, can separate it! No one, after the matrimony has been consummated! And if the two spouses arrive virgin to the matrimony, you cannot imagine the blessings that are poured on this matrimony!

I saw also the matrimony of my parents. When my father slipped the ring on the finger of my mother, and the priest declared them husband and wife, Our Lord consigned to my father a staff of wood, shining with Light, which seemed a little bent. We are dealing here with a grace that God gives to the man: it is a gift of authority of God the Father, so that this man might be able to guide this little flock who are his children, born in matrimony, and also to defend the matrimony and the children from so many evils that attack the families.

To my mother, God the Father placed in the heart something that seemed like a sphere of Fire, so beautiful: it signifies the Love of God, the Holy Spirit. I knew that my mother was a very pure woman. God was happy, joyous. You cannot imagine how many unclean spirits seized my father in that moment. These spirits seem like larva, bloodsuckers. You know, when someone has relationships outside of marriage, the evil spirits immediately attach themselves to all the parts of the person; they begin with his sexual organs, they take possession of the flesh, of the hormones; they occupy the brain, they take the pituitary gland and all the neurological parts of the organism of the person, and they begin to produce a quantity of hormones that bring the instincts lower. They transform a child of God into a slave of the flesh, of his own instincts, of his sexual appetite, that which brings the person to be that which, as they say, "they enjoy life".

When a couple is virgin, it gives glory to God. A sacred pact happens with Him, who sanctifies this sexuality. In fact the sexuality is not sin! God has given it as a blessing, because sexuality is God and the couple. Where there is the sacrament of matrimony, (also if the spouses did not arrive there virgins), God is present in this sacramental bed! Because in the wedding bed, blessed by the sacrament of matrimony, there is the Holy Spirit; even in the meals of this couple there is the presence of the Lord God, who blesses the food. God remains enraptured before matrimony; He is happy to accompany the spouses in their new life, in this beginning of a new life together. The couple and the Lord form a Trinity. Unfortunately, many spouses do not know this, they do not have this notion. And they do not even think about God: they marry only because of tradition, and not for faith… They think only to go out of the church to go to have a party, to eat, to drink, to take off on the honeymoon. Keep in mind that in this there

is no evil: the evil lies in leaving the Lord outside of all of this. As I did, who left the Lord on the street; it did not even enter my head to invite Him in my new life, in our new house. He, in fact, has pleasure that we invite Him to enter and to be with us forever, in the joys and in the moments less good; He desires that we feel His presence. Certainly, in the sacrament of matrimony the Lord is present also without being invited. But how much more beautiful it would be if of this presence we might be conscious.

In the matrimony of my parents, the most beautiful thing was that God gave back to my father the gifts and the Grace that he had lost: this because he married my mother, who was a woman very pure in sentiments, and virgin. I looked at my father, his disordered and filthy sexuality. But because he was very "macho", and his friends having begun to put into him poison, telling him not to let the wife charm and dominate him, and that he had to continue his life as before, and so two weeks after matrimony he ended up in a whorehouse, in order to show his friends that he was continuing to be the same, that he did not let himself be dominated by the wife.

Do you know how his staff of authority and protection, that God gave him, ended up? The devil took it away from him! And all those evil spirits, those unclean beings, returned to take him to themselves. From pastor of his flock, my father transformed himself into a wolf of his own family and of his home!

When one is unfaithful to his wedding, he is unfaithful to God. He is lacking in his word, to the oath that he made to God and to the person that he married, in the day of his matrimony. He does not do what he promised. If someone has the intention of not being faithful to his own marriage, it is better not to get married. The Lord tells us: if you are unfaithful, you will condemn yourself! If you will not be faithful, do not get married! Son, daughter, ask me the grace to be faithful to your wife, to your husband, and to God.

How many evils come into a marriage, due to infidelity?! A husband, for example, goes to a whorehouse, or is unfaithful with the secretary. Notwithstanding the precautions, he contracts a virus; and even washing himself afterwards, that virus does not die. So, when later he has relations with the wife, the virus enters the vagina of the woman and it remains there in the bottom and arrives to the uterus. In time it forms an ulcer, of which often the women does not notice. And when, years later, the wife goes to the doctor suffering very much, it is diagnosed cancer. Yes! Cancer! And then, who says that adultery does not kill? Moreover, how many abortions are done due to adultery? For example, how many women, who had been unfaithful and became pregnant, have recourse to abortion so that the husband might not discover it? They kill an innocent one that is not able to speak, nor defend himself! And this is only some examples. Adultery kills in so many and diverse forms! Then, we still have the courage to protest against God, when things do not go well, when we have problems, when sicknesses arrive: while it is we who procured these things with our sins, drawing evil on our life. Behind sin, there is always the evil one! We open the doors to him, when we sin so gravely! And then still we lament that God does not love us. Where is God, who permits this or that?! What nerve we have! May you know that God is the rock that protects marriage? Woe to the one who tries to destroy matrimony!

When someone tries, he collides with this Rock who is Jesus. God defends matrimony, do not ever doubt it!

I desire also to inform you to be very careful with regard to those mother-in-laws who interfere in the marriage of the children, to disturb them, causing problems in their relationships. Also, if the son-in-law or the daughter-in-law, in the right or in the wrong, that they might not be to her liking, they are already married, and there is nothing more to do. The only thing is to pray for them: that they might pray for that marriage and put it aside! Many women have condemned themselves for having interfered in the marriage of their children! This is a grave sin! If you see that something is not going right, that one of them or both are sinning, supplicate God for them, ask help from God. You can also call the couple and speak to the two, inviting them to save the marriage, to think about the children, and reminding them that marriage is for love, to give and to forgive reciprocally. One must fight in favor of the marriage, this yes: but never interfere in another way, and even less to take a position in favor of one or the other.

Honor thy Father and the Mother

Jesus continued to show me everything. I already recounted to you how I was ungrateful to my parents, how I was ashamed of them; I spoke bad about them, and I disavowed them because they were poor and could not give me all that my rich friends had. I was an ungrateful daughter, to the point of saying that that one was not my mother, because she seemed inferior to me. It was frightening to see a summary of a woman without God. She destroys all that she draws near to. And beyond all this, and this is the worst thing, I felt and I believed to be a very good person!

I thought that regarding the 4th commandment I would have passed through well, because my parents had cost me a lot: I spent a lot of money for them, due to their sicknesses, (all the analysis, in fact, were done by payment), because both of them had grave sicknesses before dying. It was my husband who covered the expenses and would say: "Look after a little bit these two shameless ones, they do not leave a penny in heredity and even more it is necessary to spend a fortune for them. The parents of my friends, instead, leave goods and…". And the Lord showed me how I analyzed everything from the point of view of money, because I manipulated even my parents when I had money and power, I even profited from them.

With money I made myself god, and I trampled on even my parents. Do you know what grieved me the most? To see them there… My father was crying, seeing that he had been a good father that he had taught the daughter to be a worker, a fighter, an entrepreneur, to be respected, because only those who work go forward. But I forgot a particular: that I had a soul, and that he was my evangelizer, with his witness. My life began to sink, with the example that he gave me. He saw now, with profound sorrow, the responsibility he had before God, since he was a womanizer, and he used to say happily, boasting to my mother and to everyone, to be very "macho"; because he had many women, and he could conquer all of them. Moreover, he used to drink and smoke. He was also a good person, but had these vices, which according to him were not such, on the contrary he believed them to be virtues. He was very proud. I, who was just a

baby, saw how my mother would cry when he spoke about the other women; I began to fill myself with anger, with resentments of rage. The resentment begins with the spiritual death: I felt a frightening anger in seeing how my father humiliated my mother before people, and how he caused here so many tears... And she did not say anything. There I began my rebellion.

When I was adolescent, I used to say to my mother: "I will never do like you." You throw the dignity of women underfoot. For this we women are not worth anything. The whole fault is due to woman like you, without dignity, without pride, who allow themselves to be trodden underfoot and to be humiliated by men!" And to my father, I used to say: "Dad, listen well: I will never permit a man to do to me what you do to Mom! Never! If one day a man might be unfaithful to me, I will vindicate myself! I do the same thing, so that he might learn!" My father beat me shouting: "How dare you, little girl?!" I do not know why my father was so chauvinist. I said to him: "OK, you can even beat me. But if one day I will marry, and my husband betrays me, I will vindicate myself, I will repay him with the same coin, so that men might understand and experience how a woman suffers, when a man tramples her and humiliated her is such a way!" I filled myself with all this hate and resentment. You know, I felt so much rage, that this made of my life a rebellion: I began to live with the desire to defend the woman. I began to support abortion, euthanasia, divorce, and I counseled all the women who I knew, to vindicate themselves if their husband betrayed them! I was never unfaithful physically, but I did much harm to so many people with these counsels.

When I was finally economically well off, I began to say to my mother: "Mom, get separated from Dad, because it is impossible to put up with such a man! Have a little dignity; give worth to yourself, Mom!" Even though he was like that, I liked my father: do you know that I loved him, despite everything? Because my mother was truly a good woman, who never, never, taught us to hate, neither my father, nor anyone else! And I, you can imagine a little bit! I wanted to get my parents to get divorced! But my mother used to say: "No, my daughter, I cannot; I suffer, it is true, but I sacrifice myself for you, my children. You are seven and I am only one. I sacrifice myself because yours is a good father: I would be incapable of separating myself from him and leaving you without a father. And then, if I separated myself, who would pray so that your father might save himself? It is I that can beseech the Lord for him, so that he might find salvation: in fact, the pain and the suffering that he procures for me, I unite them to the pains that Jesus suffered on the Cross. Every day I go to church, and before the tabernacle I say: "Lord, this suffering is nothing; I unite it to that of Your Cross, so that my husband and my children might save themselves." I entrust your father to Jesus, together with the Rosary. The devil pushes him toward the bottom making him sin, but I push him up with the Rosary, I bring him before the Blessed Sacrament in the tabernacle and I say to Jesus: "Lord, he is here: I confide that you will not let me die without seeing him converted. Lord, I do not pray only for my husband, but also for all the women who are in the same situation, especially for those who, instead of kneeling down to beseech you for their husband and for their children, put themselves into the hands of the enchanters and of the fortune-tellers, or else they betray them, consigning their own soul and the family into the claws of the evil one. Lord, I pray for these women, for these families."

You know, eight years before dying, my father converted! He repented, he asked pardon from God, and the Lord pardoned him. He was in Purgatory, in the lowest part, in great suffering, so that he made reparation for his sins. To make reparation for sin is something that we do not take very seriously, we do not think about it. Certainly, often it is not possible, but precisely for this the Lord grants us the grace to make reparation for our errors through the Eucharist. Every time we participate at a Mass, the Lord gives us the grace to make reparation for the evil that we have committed. God shows us, in the life after, the consequences of our sins, of the evil that we have done to neighbor. Even a bad look, an ugly word. If we could see how terrible it is! And how we cry, there, all these errors!

In the case of my father, my mother said to him to counsel my brothers that they might abandon the life of sin that they were leading. In fact, they were following the footsteps of the father, in infidelity, in drinking. They were his copy. If he might have done as the wife said to him, this would have been reparation. But he always responded to let the kids have fun, that they were only engaged, and that latter they would have time to change! He gave a bad example to my brothers, and he did not repair for his sins. He was crying, there in Purgatory, and he said: "I saved myself thanks to 38 years of prayer of this holy woman, that God gave me as a spouse!" My mother past 38 years of her life praying for him!

Satan and His Strategy

Those who saw the film of the Passion of Christ, will remember that while they scourged Jesus, one sees a devil with a little child, (also he a devil), who looks at Jesus and smiles. Well, may you know that today he is no longer a baby, but a malefic genius, enormous and perverse, who keeps in slavery many peoples, with the pleasures of the flesh, with magic, with erroneous theologies, as for example those which affirm that the devil does not exist. Imagine the astuteness of the devil, who denies himself! He makes us believe that he does not exist, in order to be able to act undisturbed! Yes, he guides the instructions of men in order to make them believe that he does not exist, and so to bring us to destruction. He finds a way to confuse even those who believe in God; when there are true apparitions, for example, he makes to believe that they are false. He confuses the people in thousands and a manner, taking advantage of the weak side of each one. Many Catholics, believers and practicing, go to Mass and to the magician at the same time. Because the evil one makes to believe that there is nothing evil here, and that we go to Heaven all the same, because we certainly do not use magic to do evil to someone! The devil guides, uses and directs all of this with a very well-prepared strategy. You know therefore that, when we have recourse to magic, it does not matter for whatever, the beast imprints his seal. When we go to some enchanter, or diviner, or fortune-teller, or astrologer, or to one who invokes the spirits; in all of these places, the devil places his seal, his stamp.

I found myself in one of these places when I went with a friend, who brought me to an enchanter to consult her, to predict my future: there I was marked by the beast. The evil one put on me his seal. The worst thing was that, beginning from that day, in which by way of that lady I received the stamp of evil, I began to have disturbances: nocturnal agitation, nightmares, anxieties, fears, and even a profound desire to suicide! I did not understand the why of these desires! I

cried, I felt unhappy, and never again did I feel in peace. I prayed, but I felt the Lord far from me: never again did I sense that nearness with Him that instead I had when I was little. Of course! I had opened the doors to the beast, and the evil one had entered with force into my life.

The Lies and the First Confession

Badly Made When I was still little, I learned unfortunately that, in order to avoid the punishments of my mother, rather severe, lies were perfect: so, I began to go with "the father lies"; I formed an alliance with him, and I became such a great liar that, to the measure in which my sins grew, increased also the size of the lies. I knew, for example, that my mother had a great respect for the Lord. For her, the name of the Lord was sacred, it was most holy, so I thought I had the perfect weapon! I used to say to her: "Mom, for beautiful Christ, I swear that I did not do this!" In this way I finally succeeded in avoiding the punishments. With my lies, I put the Most Holy Name of Christ in my rubbish, in my wickedness, in my garbage, filling myself with so much filth and so many sins. I learned that the wind carried them away, and when my mother strongly insisted, I said: "Mom, listen! That a lightning bolt might strike me if what I say is a lie!" These words I used many times. And you see! A lot of time passed, but truly a lightning bolt ended up striking me! And if now I am here, it is only because of the Mercy of God.

One day, my girlfriend Estela said to me: "But look a bit, you are already 13 years old and you still have not lost your virginity?! I looked at her frightened! How would this be? What do you mean by this phrase?!

Virginity

My mother always spoke to me on the importance of virginity; she said that we are dealing with the ring of Matrimony with the Lord. But my girlfriend, with an air of superiority, said to me: "My mother, as soon as I began to menstruate, she took me to the gynecologist, and now I take the pill!" I did not even know what it might be, at that time! And so she explained to me what are contraceptive pills to not have a pregnancy, and she added that she already slept with the cousin, with the friend, with this one and that one. An enormous list! She affirmed that it was a very beautiful thing! My friends said to me: "You really do not know anything?" Since I replied no, they promised to bring me to a place where they all had learned. I was worried: I knew where they would have led me! I began to peep into a new world for me; new and completely unknown.

They brought me to a cinema, rather ugly, which was at the center of the city, to see a pornographic film. Just imagine the fright?! A girl of 13 years, which at that time did not even have a television at home! You can imagine how it was to see such a film! I almost died of fright! It seemed to me to be in hell! I would have wanted to flee at full speed, from there. But I did not, for shame before my girlfriends. But I wanted so bad to get out of there, I was very frightened!

On the same day I went to Mass with my mother. I was so frightened, that I wanted to go to confession. She remained before the tabernacle to pray. In the confessional, I said my usual sins: that I had not done my duties at home, at school, that I was disobedient. These were more or less my habitual sins. I always

went to the same priest; thus he knew more or less already my faults; but that day, I also said that I went to the cinema hidden to my mother. The priest, surprised, almost shouted: "Hidden from who?! Where did you go?!" Dejected, I looked toward my mother and I saw that she was tranquil, at her place. Fortunately, she did not notice anything! Imagine if she had heard! I got up from the confession, angered with the priest, and naturally I did not say what type of a film I had seen! If only to have said to had gone to the cinema in a hidden way, the priest was so scandalized, imagine if I would had said what I saw, what would he had done to me! He would have beaten me?!

Confession

It was then the beginning of the astuteness of Satan! In fact, from that time, I began to make bad confessions. From then on, I selected what I would say in confession: "This I confess, but not this; this sin I tell the priest, but this other one no!" My sacrilegious confessions began! I went to receive the Lord knowing that I did not confess everything! I received Him unworthily! The Lord showed me how terrible was the degradation of my soul, and how grave was this process of spiritual death; to the point that, at the end of life, I did not believe anymore in the devil or in anything. He showed me how, in infancy, I walked hand and Hand with God, I had a deep relationship with Him, and the sin did such that I let go, a step at a time, His hand. Now the Lord said to me that, those who eat and drink His Body and His Blood, eat and drink their condemnation: I ate and I drank my condemnation! I saw, in the Book of Life, how the demon was desperate because at 12 years old I still believed in God, I still went to Eucharistic adoration with my mother… It was terribly despairing, in seeing this.

When I began my life of sin, the Lord made me feel that I was losing the peace in the heart. There began a battle with by conscience, and what did my girlfriends say to me? They told me: "What?! Go to confession?! You are stupid, you are out of fashion! And with who, then? With these priests who are greater sinners than us?!" None of them went to confession; I was the only one who still went. I began a war between that which my girlfriends told me and that which my mother and my conscience told me. Slowly, slowly, the balance began to tilt, and my girlfriends won. So I decided to no longer go to confession: I would no longer confess to those old men, who were scandalized just because I went to the cinema!

See the astuteness of Satan! I distanced myself from confession at 13 years old. He is an expert, you know? He puts mistaken ideas in our head! At 13 years old, Gloria Polo was already a living corpse, in spirit. But for me it was important, it was a motive of pride, to belong to that little group of girlfriends, of refined and expert girls… When we are 13 years old we think we know everything, and everything that has to do with God is out of fashion, or idiotic. What the "in thing" is, instead, is to exploit.

The Voice of Jesus

I have not yet told you that, when the Voice of Jesus was heard, and the demons left from there because they could not stand that Voice, one of them

remained. He had authorization from the Lord to remain. This demon, enormous, shouted with horrible screams: "She is mine! She is mine! She is mine!" Only he remained, because it was that one which led, manipulated, and with his strategy guided, my weaknesses so that I might sin! It was he who pulled me away from confession! For this, the Lord permitted him to remain next to me, and this is why that horrible demon shouted that I belonged to him, and he accused me. He had permission to stay, because I died in mortal sin! From 13 years old when I no longer went to confession, up to then, many times I made bad confessions. I therefore belonged to that demon, and he could remain during my judgment! Just imagine my shame, in seeing with horror my sins so numerous, and even more with that horrible thing to accuse me and to say that I was his! It was horrible!

The devil drew me away from confession, and so in this way he took from me the cure and the cleaning of soul; it was not gratuitous the sin that I was committing. On the spotlessness of my soul, the evil one put his mark, a mark of darkness. And this white soul began to fill itself with darkness. Never did I receive Holy Communion well: only for the First Communion did I make a good confession. From then on, never again: and I received my Lord Jesus Christ unworthily. When we go to confession, we must always, always, ask the Holy Spirit that he might illumine and send His holy Light on the darkness of our mind: because one thing the evil one does, is to obscure our mind, so that we think that nothing is a sin, that all is well, that there is no need to go to the priest to confess ourselves, - and even more, they are greater sinners than we are - , that confession is out of fashion. Clearly, it was more convenient for me not to go to confession.

Abortion

The Abortion of the Girlfriend At 13 years old, my girlfriend Estela became pregnant. When she told me, I asked her: "But were you not taking the pill?" "Yes – she replied – but it did not work!" "And now? What will you do?" She told me that she did not know. She did not know if it happened in that party, or in that walk, or with the fiancée!

In the month of June, she went on holidays with the mother. She was already five months pregnant. When she returned, she was surprised: she did not have any panic, and seemed to be a corpse! She was very pale, and of that extroverted girl that played with everything, nothing was left. By now she was no longer the same.

You know, neither of us liked to go to Mass. But, since our school was run by Religious Sisters, we had to go with them. There was an old priest, who prolonged the celebration, and to us these Masses seemed like eternity, they never would end. For the whole time of the Mass, we played, laughed, without giving the least attention to the celebration. But one day arrived a new priest, very young and nice looking. Our comments were that a young man so attractive was wasted by becoming a priest. We agreed to see which one of us would have succeeded in conquering him! Think about it a little bit!

The Sisters were the first to go to Communion, and immediately after we came up, all of us without going to confession! We went as agreed, to see who would have conquered the priest! We had to unbutton our blouse in front of him, at the moment in which he would give us the Communion, and that the one which

might have succeeded in making him tremble his hand, would be the one who had the better breasts. That was the sign to understand that she had attracted the attention of the priest..

The diabolical things that the evil one made us do! And we were to believe that it was prank! To what point we were!

And so, when my girlfriend Estela returned from vacation, she was no longer the joking one, always playful and cheerful. Now her face was off, sad, very sad. She did not want to tell me anything; but one day when I was at her house, she said to me, lowering the skirt: "When my mother found out that I was pregnant, she got so mad, so much, that she took me immediately by the hand, she put me in the car, and she took me to the gynecologist. Having arrived there, she said to the doctor: She is pregnant! Do me this favor, ask whatever price you want, but I need that you operate on her immediately and resolve for me this problem!" My girlfriend opened the closet of her room, and I saw a glass bottle, with a red cap, full of liquid. There inside was a baby completely formed! I will never forget it! Above the bottle cap, the box of contraceptive pills! Just imagine.

See how sin blinds a sick person, and a spiritually infirm mother, to the point of bringing the daughter to abort, and even to put the fetus in a bottle so that never again one forgets to take the pill. And to leave it in the closet, so that, as soon as she opens the door, she might immediately see that macabre container, and over the cap, the box with the pills! Simply macabre and absurd! It is this what the demon does, when we open the doors with sin, and we do not wash ourselves in confession! When I asked my girlfriend if she suffered from all this, and if she was sad, she replied ironically: "And why should I be sad? On the contrary, it is better now that they have freed me from this problem!"

But it was a lie, because she never returned the same! A little while after, she entered into depression! A terrible depression! Then she began to use LSD, and naturally, I being her best friend, she offered some to me, but I became frightened. On one hand, I would have liked to try it, because she told me that the drug makes you feel very good, that you seem to fly, to be on the clouds, and so many other wonderful things that enticed me to try. But I could not! I remained frightened and I told her no, because certainly the odor of the drug would have remained on me; so, my mother, who had a good sense of smell, would have discovered this, and would have killed me!

I did not try it! The Lord showed me, now, that it was not for fear of my mother that I did not try it, but for the Grace of God, because I had a mother who prayed, and her prayer with the Rosary sustained me, and inhibited me from descending so low.

But my girlfriends were not happy, they began to talk with me, they screamed, and were disgusted for my refusal. But I could not, I could not! This was one of the many graces that I received merited by a mother full of God, who prayed for me, who lived united to the Lord.

The Loss of Virginity

What Abortion Is13 years went by, 14, 15, and I arrived to 16. Unfortunately, at this age I came to know my first fiancée and I went with him! The pressure from my girlfriends began. I was considered the black sheep, for the fact of being still

virgin. Now that I had a fiancée, there began the psychological pressure! I had promised them that, when I would have a boyfriend, and then yes, I would have had relations; but before, no! Now, I no longer had excuses! I said to my girlfriend Estela: "But. And if I get pregnant like you?" She replied that no, do not go and talk about this, because by now there were other methods, like for example condoms. In her time there existed only the pill, but now I would not have problems. She told me that she would give me 5 pills to take all on the same day, and to use the condom. And nothing would happen to me.

I felt bad at the thought of having to maintain this promise, but I did not want to make a scene with them.

When it happened, I realized that my mother was right, when she said that a girl who loses her virginity burns out. I felt exactly this that something died in me. As if I had lost something that I could no longer recuperate. This was the sensation that remained with me, together with an enormous sadness. I do not know why they say that sex is beautiful! I do not know why the youth say they experience pleasure! I do not think it is so good! In my country, Colombia, one sees on the TV so much publicity that speaks of secure sex, with the condom, and it encourages the use of it. There is so much exploitation of sexuality. I feel so much sadness in seeing this! If they only knew! If they only knew!

In my case, I assure you that I felt very sad, and I had a tremendous fear to return home, and that my mother might realize what had happened! Never again would I be able to look at her in the eyes, with the fear that she might see, in mine, that which I did! I felt anger and rebellion, about myself and toward my girlfriends, for having been weak, for having done something that I did not want to do, and that I did it only to please them.

You must know that, notwithstanding the counsels of my girlfriend, and despite all the precautions, during my first relationship I became pregnant!

Try to imagine the fright of a girl of 16 years being pregnant! (She cries). I began to note many changes in my body. Even in the midst of the fear, all the same I began to feel tenderness for this creature that I carried in my womb!

I spoke with my fiancée - later he became my husband - and I told him about this. He was surprised. I hoped that he might say that we would be married! I was 16 years old and he was 17 years old. But he said to me that we could not upset our life, and that I had to abort! Very worried, sad, very sad, I went to my girlfriend Estela, and she said to me: "Do not worry! It is nothing! Remember that I have already gone through it several times! I was a little sad the first time, the second time it was already easier, and the third time by then you do not feel anything!" "But can you imagine when I arrive home, and my mother sees me with such a wound? She will kill me!" "Do not worry, now they do not make wounds so big. The incision that you saw on me was enormous because also the baby was already very large, but in your case it is still very small, do not worry! Nothing will happen to you, your mother will not even notice!"

Oh, brothers, what sadness! What a great pain! How the devil makes us see things! As if it was nothing, as if it were something without importance! As if an abortion provoked the most natural thing in the world! On the contrary, stupid people feel bad! That sex is to be consumed, without remorse, without fault! But do you know why the evil one does this? Why he leads people to this? Because,

among other reasons, he needs human sacrifices! In fact, for every abortion provoked, Satan acquires ever more power.

No one can imagine the consternation, the fear and the sense of guilt when I arrived in that hospital, (a good distance from my house), in order to abort! The doctor gave me an anesthetic. But when I woke up, I was no longer the same! They killed that creature, and I died with her! (She cries).

You know, the Lord showed me in the Book of Life that which we do not see with the eyes of the body, and what happened when the doctor did the abortion. I saw the doctor who, with a type of pincers, grabs the baby and breaks him into pieces. This baby shouts, with so, so much force! Even though there has not passed even a minute from the moment of fecundation, it is already an adult soul. We can use the pill of the day after, or whatever kind of means, but we are always dealing with killing a baby with an adult soul, completely formed: because it does not grow like a body but is created by God in the same instant in which the ovum and the sperm meet, in that precise moment! I saw in fact, in the Book of Life, how our soul, as soon as the two cells touched, form a spark of beautiful light, and this light seemed to be a sun that comes from the Sun of God the Father. In an instant, the soul created by God is adult, mature, in the image and likeness of Him! That baby is immense in the Holy Spirit, who comes out of the Heart of God!

The womb of a mother, immediately after the fecundation, illuminates suddenly from the splendor of this soul, and of its communion with God. When you tear out this baby, this life, I saw how the Lord jumps, when this soul is ripped from His hands. When they kill him, the baby cries out so much; all of Heaven trembles! In my case, when I killed my baby, I heard him cry out a lot, but so strong! I saw Jesus on the Cross who cried out and suffered for this soul, and for all the souls that are aborted! The Lord cries from the Cross, with so much pain, too much sorrow!!! If you might have seen, no one would have the courage, to provoke an abortion (She cries)

Now I ask you, how many abortions are done in the world, how many in one day? In one month? Do you understand the dimensions of our sin, the pain, the suffering that we procure for our God? And how much He is merciful, how much he loves us, notwithstanding the monstrosity of our sins? Do you understand the suffering that we procure to ourselves, and how evil takes possession of our life?

Abortion Is the Gravest Sin

It Is the Most Terrible of All Every time that the blood of a baby is scattered, it is a holocaust to Satan, who acquires in this way still more power. And this soul cries out. I repeat, we are dealing with a mature adult soul, even though it does not yet have eyes, or flesh, or a formed body, It is already completely adult. And his cry so great, while they kill him, devastates all of Heaven. On the contrary, it is a cry of jubilation and of triumph in hell. The only comparison that comes to my mind is the finals of a world soccer championship: imagine all that euphoria, but in an enormous stadium, so immense so as to lose sight of the boundaries, full of devils who cry out like crazy beings their triumph.

They, the devils, threw on me the blood of those babies that I aborted or that I contributed in killing and my soul became black, completely black.

After the abortions, I thought by now that I no longer had sins. The saddest thing was, instead, to see that Jesus showed me how, also in my family planning, I was killing. Do you know why? I was using the IUD (intrauterine device) as a contraceptive. From 16 years old, up to the day that the lightning bolt struck me! I took it out only when I wanted to get pregnant, (once married), to then put it immediately back afterwards.

I want to say to all the women who use these intrauterine devices: yes, they provoke abortions! I know that it happens to many women, - because it happened also to me - , to see often clots of blood rather large during the menstrual period, and to feel pain much stronger than normal. We go to the doctor, who does not give much importance to the fact: he prescribes a painkiller, an injection if the pains are too strong; telling us to not worry, that it is normal, because we are dealing with a foreign body, but there is no problem. Do you know what it is, instead? It is a micro abortion!!! Yes! Micro-abortion! The intrauterine devices provoke micro-abortions, because as soon as the ovum and the sperm unite, as I already told you, right from that moment is formed a soul, that does not need to grow, being already adult: these devices do not let the fertilized ovum to implant itself into the uterus, which thus dies. That soul is expulsed! For this we are dealing with a micro-abortion. A micro-abortion is an adult soul, completely formed, which was not permitted to live. It was very painful to see how many babies were fertilized, but then expulsed. These little suns, originating from the Sun of God the Father, these divine sparks, could not grab on to the uterus due to the IUD. How they cried out, while they were torn out from the hands of God the Father because they could not implant themselves!!! It was a dreadful scene! And the worst is that I could not say that I did not know!

When I would go to Mass, I would not pay attention to what the priest said. I did not even listen, and if they might have asked me which verses of the Gospel had been read, I would not have known what to respond. You must know in fact that the devils are present even at the Mass, in order to distract us, to make us fall asleep, to impede us to listen. Well, in one of these Masses during which I was totally distracted, my Guardian Angel gave me a jolt and she uncorked my ears, so that I might listen to what the priest was saying in that moment: I heard him precisely speaking about intrauterine devices! He said that they provoked abortion, and that all the women who used them to control the births, actually were aborting; that the Church defends life, and that anyone who does not defend life cannot receive Communion! Hence, all the women who are using this method cannot take Communion!

How I heard those words, I became infuriated with the priest! But what kind of things do these priests have in their heads? With what right?! For this the Church does not go forward! It is for this and for that, that the churches are empty! Of course, because it is not with science! But who do they think they are these priests? Do they think that they will give food to eat to all of these children that we might have? I left the church infuriated!

The bad thing was that, while I was being judged before God, I could not say that I did not know! In fact, notwithstanding the words of the priest, I did not give heed, and I continued to use the IUD!

How many babies I had killed? Here is the motive for which I was living so depressed! Because my womb, instead of being a font of life, it was transformed into a cemetery, in a "slaughterhouse" of babies! Think about it: a mother, who God conceded the immense gift of giving life, to take care of her own baby, to protect it from everything and everyone, precisely that mother, with all these gifts, kills her little child!

The devil, with his malefic strategy, has brought humanity to the point of killing their own children. Now I understand the reason why I lived in continual bitterness, depression, always ill tempered, ill-mannered, with ugly ways of doing things, with a bad face, frustrated with everything and with everyone. Of course! I had transformed myself, without knowing it, into a machine to kill babies, and for this reason I was sinking ever more into the abyss. Abortion is the worst of all the sins (those provoked, not when it is spontaneous), because to kill the children still in the womb of the mother, to kill a little innocent and defenseless creature, is to give power to Satan. The devil commands from the depths of the abyss, because we are scattering innocent blood! A baby is like an innocent lamb and without stain… And who is the Lamb without stain? It is Jesus! In that moment, the baby is the image and likeness of Jesus! The fact that it might be the mother herself to kill her own child, determines a profound bond with the darkness, permitting that more devils from hell might come out to destroy and strangle humanity. It is as if one might open the seals… Seals that God has put to impede evil to come out, but that, for every abortion, it opens… And so horrible larvae come out, so that there are more and more devils… They come out to chase and persecute humanity, and then make us slaves of the flesh, of sin, of all the bad things that we see, and we will see always more. It is as if we might give the key of hell to the devils, to let them escape. And so escape more devils, of prostitution, of sexual aberrations, of Satanism, of atheism, of suicide, of indifference. Of all the evils that we see around us, and the world is getting worse every day, think how many babies are killed every day: it is all a triumph of the evil one! That you might know that for the price of this innocent blood, the number of devils outside of hell grows; they circulate freely in our midst! Let us take shelter! We sin without even realizing it! And our life transforms itself into an inferno, with problems of every type, with sicknesses, with so many evils that afflict us; all of this is the pure and simple action of the devil in our life. But it is we, we alone, that open the gates of evil, with our sin, and we permit him to freely circulate in our life. It is not only with abortion that we sin! But it is among the worst sins. And then we have the nerve to blame God for so much misery, so much disgrace, so much sicknesses and so much suffering!

But God, in His infinite Goodness, still gives us the sacrament of Reconciliation, and we have the opportunity to repent and to wash our sin in confession, breaking in this way the strings that tie us to Satan, and his influence in our life. In this way we can wash our soul. But in my case, I did not do it!

Bad Counsels How many times we kill, also spiritually?! How many of us worry about that our own children have cloths to wear, to adequately eat, that they can study? And if they get sick, we run immediately to the doctor. But how many of us, often, kill our children? So many are sad, or full of anger, bitter, because they do not have near them the father or the mother, they do not have the love of the parents. Just imagine a woman who presents herself in church, for example,

and says: “I thank you, my God, for these children so good that you gave me; they are so good, but so good, that from the time that the father left me, they hate him, and they love only me!” Do you know what this mother did? She killed her children spiritually. Because to hate is to kill! How many times we poison our children?! You do not imagine how it makes God sorrowful our upsetting, poisoning the children against the father or the mother! God does not permit it!

Jesus showed me that I was a frightful assassin, because not only did I sin when I aborted, but I also financed many abortions. Here is the power that money gave me! I made myself an accomplice. I used to say, in fact: the woman has the right to remain pregnant or not! I looked at the Book of my life. And how it pained me to see that which I did years later, when I was by then adult! When we have poison inside of us, we cannot give to others anything good, and all those who come to us become ruined. Some girls, three of my cousins and the fiancée of my cousin, came often to my house. Being the one who had money, I invited them, and I spoke to them about fashion, about “glamour”, to how to exhibit their body to be attractive, and I ladled out counsels. See how I prostituted them! I prostituted the little ones! This was another horrible sin, after abortion. I prostituted them, because I gave them these counsels: “Do not be foolish, girls, do not give heed to your mothers, who speak to you about chastity and about virginity: it is old fashioned stuff. They speak about the Bible, which is 2000 years old. And then, these priests, who do not want to update themselves, they speak to you about what the Pope says, but the Pope is also out of fashion”. Consider the poison that I transmitted to these girls. I told them that they could arrange their own body, only they must pay attention not to get pregnant. And I taught with which method.

The fiancée of my cousin, who was 14 years old, arrived one day to my outpatient clinic, crying a lot. He said to me: “Gloria, I am a young girl, I am a young girl, and I am pregnant!” I almost shouted at her: you stupid thing, did I not teach you how to do these things?!” And she replied: “Yes, yes, but it did not work!”

Do you know what God wanted from me, in that moment? That I might have supported that girl so that she might not have fallen into the abyss that she might not have aborted. Abortion is a current that draws one in, that causes suffering, because you will always feel emptiness, pain, to be the assassin of your child. The worst, for this girl, was that, instead of speaking to her about Jesus and helping her, comforting her and supporting her, I gave to her the money to abort! Certainly, in a secure place, to not be harmed physically, but it remained spiritually, and for the whole life.

Like this, I financed so many other abortions. But I still had the courage to say that I did not kill, that I was good, that I was Catholic, that it was not right, that I could not remain in that horrible place!

Moreover, the people who I did not like, I hated and detested them, and I spoke badly about them. I was a false person, hypocrite, and also an assassin: because it is not only with weapons that one kills a person. To hate, calumniate, to envy, do deride, to do evil, also this is killing.

Atone For Our Sins

As I already said, abortion is the gravest sin before the eyes of God. So many people ask me how to atone for abortion. In fact, we cannot restore the life to the baby; but in the Catholic Church we have a blessing so great; the sacrament of Reconciliation. In confession, God forgives us, and that which the priest looses on earth, is loosed also in Heaven. Glory to God, for this! Blessed be the Lord for His Goodness! The Lord forgives us, but remember that which Jesus said to the adulterous woman: that she go in peace, but that she not return to sin! "Go in peace and sin no more".

Another act of reparation is "Baptism of intention". To baptize babies, as the priest did today, in this celebration, so that they can come out of Limbo. See the wisdom of the Catholic Church! These babies enter into the Glory of God! Now they are little Angels, who pray and intercede for our salvation. See the beauty of the "economy" of God! See how God transforms all for our good! Nothing is lost! And when one evangelizes on abortion, and a baby is saved, also this is atonement! When a woman aborts, beyond asking pardon of God in confession, and to not abort ever again, she can also contribute to avoid other abortions, of other women: doing this, she atones for her sin, enormously! This is reparation!

My Lack of Love for God

My relationship with God was very sad. For me, God was the One who I sought out only if I had a problem. Many times, when that happened, I ran to Him to ask help. Almost always it was an economic problem! It was a totally economic relationship, that between me and God! It was a type of "Bank Cash Dispenser"! I put in prayer and supplication, so that God might send me money! I wanted that God might love me and give me everything, but really everything, but on my terms! And that no one might come to tell me that doing like that I was sinning, because I did not appreciate him! The devil put to sleep my conscience! Often, when I found myself in economic difficulty, I would pass before an image of Baby Jesus, while I was going out of church, and I would touch his little hand saying to Him: "Listen to me! Give me money, that I have need of!"

Like some do with Buddha: they scratch the stomach, telling him to give them money! That is how I did with Baby Jesus! Imagine my nerve! What great lack of respect! And the Lord showed me how much my disaffection and my lack of respect pained Him! How much sorrow and shame I felt, now! Money did arrive, yes, but disappeared immediately! It was as if, the more depressed I arrived, the more depressed I remained without anything! In the end I found myself in an economic situation always worse.

Things being like this, a lady recounted to me to have gone through a similar situation, but she went to a protestant pastor that someone had recommended, and everything got better! As soon as I heard this, I asked her immediately where he might be, because I wanted to go there immediately! Look at my infidelity!

I thus went to that pastor, and he prayed for me laying his hands on me, and he made me communicate in their manner. Think about it, I would receive the

Body and the Blood of the Lord, in my Catholic religion. I go there, and they make me do the communion as if it were the first time!

Their celebrations were very animated: they would jump, applaud. I said to myself: what a bore those Catholic priests so dull and disgusting, those Masses so annoying. There is no comparison with these, that they make us feel so good, so joyous!

There they do not believe in images, and they say that that of the images is idolatry. Thus, I no longer knelt down before a Crucifix, because it was idolatry. When I began to go to these evangelic churches, I had a neighbor, an old lady very poor, who lived in front of my house; I helped her by giving the money needed to pay for the light bill, water bill, and at times I did some shopping for her, so that she could eat. As you can imagine, this old lady was very attached to me!

But when we do not have God inside of us, even the good works become rotten, like our sins.

As I said, when I began to go to them, I liked the evangelical churches a lot; in fact, more than being joyous their celebrations, they said to bind the ruining spirits, and similar things.

Now, that old lady was Catholic, but I used the friendship that she felt for me, and I succeeded in convincing her, beginning in this way to destroy her faith. In a few words: due to my counsels and ideas that I put in her head, she died without receiving the sacraments. She did not want to receive them, because she no longer felt they were important. See how we influence those who are near us! When inside of us there is evil, we end up leading others, those who draw near to us, into our same errors. It is enough to see what I did to that old lady!

But when that protestant pastor asked me for the tenth, I became infuriated; in fact, in that period I was already bankrupt and they, to complete my ruin, even asked me for 10% of my earnings! It was like this that the "crush" for Protestantism passed for me completely!

The Sixth Commandment

Adultery On this commandment I thought, still full of pride: here they will not catch me in fault, because I never had a lover, I was always faithful!

As a matter of fact, after matrimony, I never even gave a kiss to others, only to my husband. But the Lord showed me that I exhibited too much of my body, when I went around with my breasts exposed, with the skintight stockings, with the cloths that I used. I thought that men looked at me, simply to admire me. But the Lord showed me how they sinned with me: because we are not dealing with admiration, as I believed, but with provocation, and they were provoked due to me. I committed adultery, for having exhibited my body. I did not understand the male sensibility. I believed that they thought like me, that looking at me they would say: "What a nice body!" Instead they sinned due to my fault. Never was I unfaithful for having thrown myself into the arms of a man, but it was as if I was a prostitute in spirit. More than everything, I thought to vindicate myself, if my husband might have been unfaithful to me, and I counseled other women to do so, when they discovered that the husband had betrayed them. "Do not be a fool! Vindicate yourself, do not forgive. Show your worth! It is for this that we women are so put down by men, so trampled on!" You know, with these counsels, I and

my girlfriends succeeded in separating one of our girlfriends. She had surprised the husband in the office while he was kissing the secretary. We, with our counsels, did not let her reconcile, even though he asked her for pardon, truly repentant. She even wanted to forgive, because she loved him: but we did not permit forgiveness to him. In the end they got divorced, and two years later she got married civilly, with an Argentine. Do you understand? When I counseled in this way, I was inside an adulterer. Jesus showed me, and I saw well, how sins of the flesh are abominable, because the person condemns himself, even if the world affirms that all is well.

In all my life I had only one man, my husband; but the sins are also in the thoughts, in the words, in the actions: it was very sad to see how the sin and the adultery of my father did so much harm to us. In my case, it transformed me into a resentful person; I sunk into rancor against men, while my brothers became faithful copies of my father. Do they think to be happy in feeling themselves very masculine? They are womanizers, they drink, and they do not realize the evil that they do to their own children. For this my father was crying with great suffering, in Purgatory, seeing the consequences of his sin and of his example that he gave them.

We condemn ourselves, with promiscuity, because it is to live as if we were animals: mice, dogs, here and there.

The Seventh Commandment

Do Not Steal Also to calumniate is to steal. Just imagine that I said to have never stolen. I considered myself honest: but I stole from God! Yes, I stole from God. I was created and I was born in order to help create a better world, to contribute to extending the Kingdom of Heaven on the earth. But more than not having fulfilled this mission, I gave bad advice, and I damaged a lot of people. I did not know how to use the talents that God gave to me. Thus, I stole, clearly I stole! How many people I stole their good name, giving rise to calumnies and spreading them? You cannot imagine how terrible the sins of our tongue are! And in what way one repairs!

How to repair the honor of someone, after having spread gossip, or calumny?! How to restore the good name to that person?! Yes, this is difficult! This is why in Purgatory, those who have done evil to someone with words, have much to suffer. Almost everyone uses the tongue to criticize, to destroy, to offend, to devastate the good name of people. These tongues, down there, are the cause of great suffering! They burn!!! How they burn! You cannot imagine! The Lord showed me how we deceive ourselves, in the judgments that we make about others. While we, for example, look with contempt at a prostitute, the Lord looks at her with infinite Love, with infinite Mercy. He sees inside her, he knows her whole life, and knows what led her to prostitution. Might you know that many of them live this way because of our sins, also because of our contempt and because of our lack of love for neighbor? Has anyone ever lent his hand to help a prostitute? Or toward someone caught stealing? We go through life judging and seeing the defects of others, their errors, and condemning. But when we see someone do something mistaken, at least let us shut the mouth, let us bend our knees and pray for that person. At times we are not able to do anything more: but God can. Let us

not judge her, let us not criticize her, otherwise we sin more than her. We absolutely cannot give rise to false witness, or collaborate so that it is spread, nor judge, nor lie, because doing like this we rob the peace from the neighbor. And be careful, because a lie is always a lie, there is not big ones or small ones, green or yellow, or red color: to lie is always grave, and the father of the lie is Satan.

In my case, so many lies, for what? My life was put in the open, to the Light of God. And you? But may you know that on the other side, no one steps up to argue or to demand. There, there is only your conscience and God!

In my judgment, for example, my parents were there to see my lies, but my mother did not accuse me. Only, she looked at me with infinite tenderness. My worst lie, then, was to lie to myself when I said that I did not kill, I did not steal, that I was a good person, that I never did evil to anyone, and that God does not exist; and that I would go to Heaven all the same! What a tremendous shame, I experienced now!

The Lord continued to show me that, while in my house food was wasted, in other houses of the world there was hunger, and he said to me: "Observe: I was hungry and look what you did with what I gave you, you wasted it. I was hungry, and look what you did, slave of fashion, or of what people said about you, about appearances: you bought brand-name goods, jewelry; you came to the point to spend 150,000 pesos for every injection, to be thin, slave of your body, to the point of making of it a god. Look how many do not have anything to cloth themselves, or to eat, or do not know how they can pay the bills."

Jesus showed me the hunger of my brothers, and how I too was responsible for the hunger and for the conditions in which my Country and the world found itself in... Because we are all responsible! He showed me how I had something to do with all this, because when I spoke badly about someone, this person had lost his work and the sustenance for his family, and I robbed from him the honor and good name. And afterwards, how would I be able to restore it to him?! He showed me that it was easier to give back stolen money, because one could give it, and thus repair the sin. But when you rob the good name of a person, after the calumny is already propagated, who can render the honor to this person? One does so much evil to him, in work, or in the relationships with the other people! Marriages are destroyed! So much evil! So much evil!

And still, I stole from my children the grace to have a mother at home, a tender mother, sweet, that might have loved them and accompanied them! Instead! The mother away, the children alone, with the "Mom" television and "Dad" computer, and the video games. And I believed to be the perfect Mom. I left home at 5:00 o'clock in the morning and did not come back before 11:00 pm.

In order to satisfy my conscience, then, I would buy for them brand-name signed things and everything that they wanted.

I was terrified when I saw my mother asking herself where she went wrong. What was she supposed to do or not do, regarding my education! She was a holy woman, who gave us and planted in us the principles according to the Lord; and my father was a good man, with us. So I said to myself: what will become of me, who does not do any of this for my children? Chilled, I asked myself: what will be, when God will judge me in regards to my children? What fright! What an immense sorrow! I robbed the peace from my children: now I see it in the Book of Life. I

experienced a great shame! In the Book of Life we see everything, all of our life like a film. What a pain it was to see my children who were saying: "Let us hope that Mom arrives late! Let us hope that there might be a lot of traffic and she arrives later! Because she is so boring, unpleasant, and when she arrives, she always grumbles and shouts the whole day!" What sadness, brothers! A baby of three years and the other a little bit bigger, to say these things! To hope that the mother might not arrive! I stole from these babies a mother, I robbed from them the peace that I should have given at home, I did not do in such a way that they might know God by way of me and love the neighbor. But, on the other hand, I could not give what I did not have: I did not love the neighbor! And if I do not love the neighbor, I do not even love the Lord, Because God is Love.

To Lie is to Steal

In this I was an expert, you know, because Satan became my father. In fact, you can have for father God, or Satan. If God is Love and I was hate, who was my father? If God speaks to me of pardon and of love for those who do evil to me, while I said that "those who do that to me must pay", I was vindictive, a liar, and if Satan is the father of lies, then who was my father? Lies are lies, and Satan is the father of lies. The sins of the tongue are terrible! I saw all the evil that I had done with my tongue, when I criticized, when I derided, when I gave nicknames to someone. How she felt that person! How the nickname with which I derided hurt the person, creating for her tremendous inferiority complexes, capable of destroying her! For example, I called fat a person who was fat, making her suffer, and because of this word, she ended up destroying herself.

I recount this to you better. At 13 years old, I was part of that little group of girlfriends, to which it was an honor to belong to, a little group of refined and expert girls. The Lord showed me how this company of "very good girls", spiritually killed a school companion. There was in class a fat girl, obese. My girlfriends began to torment her, to make fun of her, calling her with offensive names, like fat seal, elephant, and others. We made fun of her. I did the same, in order not to seem out of step with them. Now, in the Book of Life, I saw how this poor creature always had more complexes because of her obesity. She looked at herself in the mirror, and every time she saw herself as more ugly. So she began to hate us and to hate herself; and the more she looked at herself, the more she hated herself. And hate is death; it is death for the soul. In the jaws of this desperation, the girl one day drank a bottle of iodine, to see if she might lose weight! But do you know what happened? Do you know how she ended up, due to the iodine? Almost blind! She had a strong intoxication, and remained almost blind! For this she did not return to school! We did not care to know about it! We did not see her anymore, and we were not interested in knowing why!

For this I tell you, brothers, that collective sins are very grave, the gravest. Because they are our sins, personal! The sin of that girl was our sin. The sin of the community is also your sin, because you did nothing to avoid it! And this is true not only for individual sin, but also for those of humanity, for which you did nothing so that it could be avoided.

The power of the word! We destroyed that girl, putting on her nicknames; the devil entered and ruined her, and now she can, in her turn, destroy others, with

her hate, in this way the currents of evil go forth forming themselves. Where there is hate, there is the evil one. This is how we assassinated a school companion. We killed her soul!

Twenty years later, I had a very nice looking cousin; I taught her, I counseled her how to dress, how to give value to her body, to use makeup, etc. One day she gravely burned herself, more than 70% of her body. Only the face was not burned. But it was very grave, she could have died.

I became infuriated, I became enraged with God; I went into the chapel of the hospital and said: "God, if you exist, prove it to me! Show me that you exist, save her!" Just imagine my pride! Well, my cousin survived. But she remained completely burned, with grave scares. Her hands remained deformed, very sad. In that period, I was already well off economically, and I took walks with her, at times in the swimming pool. But when I put her in the water, all the people left and protested and said: How gross! But why do you leave home with this creature? She comes to ruin our vacation!"

They said this, the people who saw her! People are bad, perverse, egoists, when they speak like this, seeing the disgrace of others. Consequently, my cousin began to not want to leave home. She came to the point of being afraid of people! And in the end hated them! (She cries). The Lord shows, to each of us, when we have made ridiculous a brother, without a drop of compassion. What right do you have to cause someone to suffer, to give nicknames, and to call with offensive names, without knowing what the person is going through? What right do you have to be so cruel? God will show you how many people you assassinated with the word only! You will see the terrible power that the word has, to kill souls.

And yet, if I would go before the Most Blessed Sacrament, to ask for the grace of atonement for my sins, God would heal the soul of my cousin. Because ours is a God in love, and to the measure in which we close the doors of evil, he opens to us the doors of blessing. When the Lord gave me the examination of the Ten Commandments, he showed me that I said that I loved and adored God, by words, but in reality, I adored Satan. I criticize everything and everyone; and everyone pointed with the finger, "holy Gloria." He showed me when I said that I loved God and neighbor, but I was false and envious. He showed me how I was never grateful to my parents, nor did I ever thank them for their commitment in giving me a profession and to be able to succeed in life, all the efforts and the sacrifices that they did. All this I did not see. As soon as I began my profession, they even became inferior in my eyes; so much so as to be ashamed of my mother, for her humility and poverty. Look how this is base-minded. God gave me an analysis of my whole life, in the light of the Ten Commandments: he showed me how I was in regard to the neighbor, and in regards to Him.

Love of Neighbor

Never did I have love or compassion for my neighbor. I never thought, in the most absolute way, about the sick, about their solitude, about children without a mother, about the orphans. With so many babies who suffer, so much suffering, I could have said: Lord, let me accompany them in their pains, and instead no. Nothing! My heart of rock never remembered the sufferings of others. The worst thing was I never did anything for love of neighbor! For example, I paid the

expenses at the supermarket for a lot of people, who did not have the money and were in need, but I did not do it for love: I had money, and it did not cost me anything. I did it because I liked that all might see my gesture, and that they might say I was good, that I was a saint. And how I know how to profit from the needs of people! I did not give anything gratuitously! In fact I would say: "I do this for you, but you in exchange do me the favor to go, in my place, to the school of my children, to the meetings, because I do not have time. Deliver for me the envelopes of the car bills. Do this for me, do that for me." In this way, I manipulated everyone: I did charitable works in order to have in exchange favors, and never because the person was in need. Moreover, I adored having behind me lots of people, who would say I was good and generous, even, a saint: because there were those who even said this, and they were people who knew me well! In the exam that Jesus gave me on the Ten Commandments, I saw how from greed came forth all my evils. I was blinded by this desire to have money, a lot of money; because I thought I would be happy the more I had money. It is too bad that, precisely the period in which I had a lot of money, was the worst for my soul, to the point that I wanted to commit suicide. In spite of my richness, I felt alone, empty, bitter, frustrated. This avidity, this desire for money, was the way that led me, by the hand of the evil one, to distance myself and to detach myself from the hand of the Lord. He said to me: "You had a god, and this god was money, and due to it you condemned yourself. Due to it, you sank into the abyss, and you went away from your Lord".

When he said to me "god money" We had arrived, yes, to having a lot of money, but more recently we were in the red, full of debts, and we no longer had a penny. And so I cried out: "But what money?! That which I left on earth, are nothing more than debts!"

In my exam on the Ten Commandments, I did not pass one of them! Terrible!!! What fright!!! I was living in an authentic chaos! But how, Me?! I, who had never killed?! Who never did harm to anyone?! This is what I thought. And instead, yes, I had killed so many people!

The Book of Life

After the exam of the Ten Commandments, the Lord showed me the "Book of Life". I would like to be able to have the words in order to describe it. What a marvel! We see our whole life, our actions and their consequences, good or bad that they might be, to ourselves or to others; our sentiments and thoughts and those of others. Everything was like a film. It begins from the moment of fecundation: we see our life to begin from that moment, and from there we are taken by the hand by God, who shows us our entire existence. In the same instant of our fecundation, there is like a spark of Divine Light, a beautiful explosion, and a soul is formed, white. But not like the white that we know! I say this color because it is the one most similar, but it is so stupendous that it is impossible to describe it in words the beauty, the splendor. The soul is so beautiful, full of light, enchanting, radiant and full of Love of God. A startling Love of God. I do not know if you ever noticed how newborns, often, laugh by themselves, and emit those sounds and babblings. Do you know? They are talking with God! Yes, because they are

immersed in the Holy Spirit. Also, we are immersed, but the difference is that they, in their innocence, know how to profit of God and of His Presence.

You cannot imagine what a wonderful thing it was to see the moment in which God created me, in the womb of my mother. My soul carried in the Hand of God the Father! I discover a God and Father so beautiful, wonderful, tender, attentive and affectionate, who cares for me 24 hours a day, who loved me, protected me, and always came to seek me when I distanced myself, with infinite patience. I saw only punishment, while He was only Love, only Love, because He looks not at the flesh but at the soul, and he saw how I was going farther away from salvation.

You know, my mother had been married for seven years and still did not have children. In that moment she was very troubled, due to the unfaithful life of my father: she was very worried and distressed, when she realized she was pregnant. She cried with great affliction. That had such an effect, that it signed me interiorly, so much so that in life I never felt loved by my mother! And yet she was always so affectionate, so good with me; she always gave me love and affection, but I would say and insist that she did not love me, and I always lived with this complex. For this, only the Sacraments are the Grace of God that takes care of us. When they baptized me, you must see the party that there was in Heaven! It is a little creature that receives on the head a seal, the Seal of the children of God! It is a fire; the fire of belonging to Jesus Christ.

But I saw in the Book of Life how, already as a baby, I began to fill myself with the consequences of the sin of my father in matrimony, of the sins that I began to know, for example his lies, the vice of drinking, unfaithfulness, and the suffering of my mother. All of this signed me, and caused in me bad sentiments, emotive and behavioral limits.

The Talents

The Lord said to me: "What did you do with the talents that I gave you? Not those on the outside, it smelled wonderfully, with costly perfumes, with clothing never used!" Talents! I came into the world with a mission: that of defending the reign of Love. But I forgot I had a soul, not to mention to have talents, and even more to be in the Merciful Hands of God. I did not even know that all the good that I had neglected to do, had caused so much sorrow to Our Lord. I saw the talents truly wonderful that God had placed in my life. All of us, brothers, are worth very much to God. He loves all of us and each one in particular. We all have a mission in this world. I saw the devil very worried because these talents that God has placed in us were at the service of the Lord.

Do you know what the Lord asked me the most to render an account for? For my lack of love and charity for neighbor, and he said to me: "Your spiritual death began when you let yourself to not be moved by suffering; and yet you too experience it. You were alive, but dead". If you could see what spiritual death is! A soul that hates is frightfully horrible, ugly, embittered, disgusting, it gives annoyance and hurts everyone. It is painful to see our soul, when it is full of sins, I saw mine and sighed. But inside, a tremendous stink that sunk in the abyss. This is why there was so much depression and bitterness. The Lord said to me: "My spiritual death began when you did not let yourself to be taken up with

compassion for your brothers. It was a notification, when you saw the tribulations of your brothers everywhere, or when you heard by way of the mass media killings, sequestrations. But you remained like a rock! Only you would say, with the mouth: oh, poor people. But you did not grieve, in the heart you did not feel anything, you had the heart of stone, and it was sin that hardened it".

Now I recount to you how the Lord showed me the talents. You must know that I never watched the news on the TV, because it did not go well with me to see so many deaths, so many unpleasant things. I was interested only in the last parts: diet, horoscope, mental power, energies, and messages on these types of things; All the stuff that the devil uses to divert us, to confuse us. Now the Lord showed me, in the Book of Life, how one day, in His Divine strategy, he retarded the programs, and I turned on the TV when the news had not yet finished: I saw a humble peasant woman, who was crying over the body of the husband.

I must tell you, brothers, that the devil habituates us to the sorrows of others, to see the suffering of others thinking that that problem does not regard us: those who are in difficulty might take care of themselves, because it is not my problem. Well, the Lord showed me how it hurts Him when journalists are only preoccupied that the news might make an impression, without being moved; they think only about selling the news, without worrying themselves, in that case, of that woman! When I turned on the TV and I saw that peasant woman crying, I experienced a deep pain for her suffering; I was really grieved, that poor woman. It was the Lord that permitted this! I gave attention to what was being said, and I realized that the place where these events took place was at Venadillo, Tulima: my birthplace! But immediately afterwards, began the daily programs, where they spoke about a phenomenal diet, and I completely forgot about the peasant woman, because I was more interested in the diet. I never thought about her again!

The one who did not forget the peasant woman, was Our Lord! He made me to feel the pain and the suffering of that woman; because he wanted that I might help her. That was the moment to use the talents that He had given me. He said to me: "The pain that you felt for her was I, who cried out to you to help her. It was I to retard the news, so that you might be able to see but you were not capable to bend the knee and pray for her, not even for one minute! You let yourself to be clouded by the diet, and you did not remember her anymore!"

The Lord showed the situation of that woman. It was a family of humble peasants. The first thing was they had asked the husband to abandon the house in which they lived. To which, he replied no, that he would not leave there. And so some men came, to chase him away. That peasant man saw them coming toward him, to send him away, and he realized that they were armed and had the intention to kill him. I saw the whole life of that man: I saw and felt the fright and the anguish that he felt; I saw how he ran to hide his babies and the wife under some things, which seemed like enormous earth ware. I saw him running away from there, but these men followed him. Do you know what his last prayer was? "Lord take care of my wife and my small children: I commend them to you!" And they killed him! He fell dead to the ground. When they shot, the Lord made me feel the pain of that woman and of his small children, who could not cry out. (She cries).

In this way the Lord shows us the pain that He feels, and the suffering of the others. But we, often, we interest ourselves only in our things, and we do not worry even a little bit about our brothers and their needs! (She continues to cry). Do you know what the Lord wanted? He wanted me to kneel down and supplicate Him for that family, for that Mamma and her children! God would have inspired me how I could have helped them! And do you know how! It was enough to take a few steps and go to a priest, who lived in front of my house, and tell him what I saw on TV. This priest was a friend of the pastor of that village, (Venadillo, Tulima), and he had a guest house at Bogotà; he would have helped that woman.

You know, the first thing that we render account to God, even before the sins, are the omissions! They are so grave! You do not imagine how much! One day you will see, as I saw it! These sins make God cry! Yes, God cries, seeing his children suffer for our indifference and lack of compassion for neighbor; for the fact that so many suffer, and we do not do anything for them! The Lord will show us, he will show everyone, the consequences of the sin of our indifference before the suffering of others. So much pain, in the world, is owed to our indifference, unconcern, and hard heart.

To summarize a little: that peasant woman, seeing herself persecuted, (in fact, they sought also to kill her), escaped with her children, and sought out help from the priest of that village. The pastor, desolate, said to her: "My daughter, you must flee, because if they find you, they will kill you!"

In a great hurry, he did what seemed to him the best for her: very worried, he sent her to Bogotà; he gave her a little money, and a few letters of recommendation!

She left in a hurry; she presented herself, with these letters, in the various places that the pastor had indicated to her, by no one took her in! Do you know where she ended up? Do you know who helped, in the end, that woman? Those who forced her into prostitution!!!

The Lord gave me still an opportunity to help her, when years later I saw her again! It was a day that I had to go to the center of the city. I detested going there, because it is a place where you see more misery, and since I felt myself superior, I did not like seeing poverty, indigence, and things like that. But on that day, I really had to go there, and while we were passing there, my son asked me: "Oh! Mamma, why in the world does that lady dress in that way, and wears the skirt so short?" I answered him: "Do not look, my son! These are contemptible women, who sell their body for pleasure, for money: they are prostitutes, they are unclean." Just imagine! To speak like this, and even more poisoning my son! I classified without pity a sister, fallen in this situation due to the indifference of a people. The Lord said to me: "*The indifferent are the tepid, and I vomit them out! An indifferent person will not enter into Heaven ever! The indifferent person is one who passes in the world and nothing is important to him, nothing regards him, if not his house and his interests! Your spiritual death began when you stopped to interest yourself in that which happened to your brothers, when you thought only about yourself and about your wellbeing*!"

The Spiritual Treasures

I was called into existence in order to help to construct a better world, and to use the talents, that the Lord had given to me, in order to contribute to extend the Kingdom of Heaven on the earth. But I did not do it! On the contrary! How many bad counsels I gave, and how many people I drug down and ruined, with my bad advice and bad example! I did not use ever the talents that God had given to me, I never used them! The Lord also asked me: "What spiritual treasures do you bring to me?"

Spiritual treasures: my hands were empty! So, he said to me: "What use to you were two apartments that you had, the houses that you possessed, the outpatient clinics, which you considered as a professional, with great satisfaction? Perhaps you could have brought here one brick only? What use was it to you so much worship of your body, all the money spent for it, all the obsessions to stay in form? To what did it serve to put it under so much diet that it led you to suffer anorexia, bulimia, torturing your body? You made of your body, of yourself, a god? And what good did it do you, now, here? You were very generous, it is true, but you did it so that they would thank you, to be praised, so that they would say that you were good. You manipulated everyone, with money, so that in exchange they would do you favors. Tell me: what have you brought here? When I saw you with the economic ruin, it was not a punishment as you thought, but a blessing. Yes, that bankruptcy was to strip you of that god, that god that you served! It was to make you return to Me! But you rebelled, you refused to come down from your social level, and you cursed, slave of this your god money! You thought to have obtained all this alone, with your forces, with the studies, because you were a worker, a fighter, instead no! Look how many professionals there are, with the academic studies better than yours; how many in work commit themselves as and more than you: observe their conditions. To you was given much, and for this motive much is asked of you; for much you must respond".

Think about it, for every grain of rice that I wasted, I had to render an account to God! For all the times that I threw out food in the garbage!

In my Book of Life

I saw when I was small, and my family was poor. My mother often cooked beans: and I hated them, I detested them. I would say: "And again these cursed beans? One day I will be so rich, that I will never eat them again". I saw that one time I threw out the beans that Mamma had served to me, without her noticing it, and when she sat down to eat she noticed that my plate was empty. She thought that I had eaten in a hurry because I was very hungry, and she served me another time, giving to me the portion reserved for her: so she ended up not eating. You know, the Lord showed me that among the people closest to me, the one who often suffered hunger at that time was my mother. Having seven children, many times she did not eat so that we might eat, because we were very poor. Well, that day she remained hungry in order to give me, without knowing it, that which I had thrown in the garbage. But it also happened, often, that she did not eat because someone knocked on the door to ask for food, and she gave what she was eating. She suffered hunger, but she never made any kind of a show, she never had an

embittered face, much less sad, or any other sign. On the contrary, she always had a smile, and one did not notice anything about her. I have already recounted to you what a jewel of a daughter I was?! I called my father "Peter the rock-breaker" (Fred of the "Flintstones"), and to my mother I said she was old fashion! That she was an old, antiquated lady, and other similar things. Even to the point of denying that she was my mother, because I was ashamed. Just imagine!

And yet, you cannot imagine the graces, the blessings that were scattered over me and on the whole world, due to my mother! Think of the grace to have a mother that goes to church and, before the tabernacle, offers her sufferings and her pain to Jesus, and even more confides! Confides in Him!

The Lord said to me: "Never did anyone love you, and will love you, as your mother! Never! No one will love you so tenderly as her!" Then the Lord showed me all the parties she gave me (after my change in social condition). In those banquets, in those buffets, half of the food ended up in the garbage, without any thought about it.

The Lord continued: "Look at your brothers, suffering from hunger! I was hungry!" he said to me almost shouting. You know how it sorrows the Lord hunger, need, and the suffering of His children! How it saddens Him our egoism and our lack of charity toward neighbor!

And he continued to make me see how in my house there were so many refined and costly things. As a matter of fact, at that time, I had stuff in my house very costly, very elegant cloths, very costly. The Lord said to me: "I was naked, and you had a closet full of expensive cloths, that you did not use." I saw also that, when we lived in a high social level, if my girlfriends bought signed cloths, I had to acquire those even better; if one of them bought a nice car, I had to get a better one... I wanted always something better compared to them, because I was jealous. The Lord said to me: "You were always haughty; you made comparisons with those who were better off than you! Rich people! And you never looked at those who were less economically well off than you. When you were poor, you walked along the way of sanctity, because you even gave that which you were lacking". And he showed me how much it pleased him my gesture, one time that my mother, notwithstanding our poverty, she succeeded in buying for me brand-name tennis shoes. I was very happy, but I met a child on the street that was barefooted, and I felt such a pain for him, that I took off the shoes and gave them to him. I returned home without shoes, and my father almost killed me! And not without reason: with the poverty in which we were in, so much sacrifice in order to buy them, and I gave them along the way, as soon as they had been bought! But the Lord was content about this! How he was happy about the way by which I was walking! Notwithstanding we were a complicated and poor family, God scattered on us many graces and blessings due to the merits of my mother, of her goodness and of her prayers. The Lord continued showing me that, if I had not been closed to the Grace and to the Holy Spirit, I could have helped a lot of people, with the talents that he had given to me. He showed me all of humanity, and how we respond to God, due to how we have lived, holding the heart closed to Him and to the Holy Spirit, and to their divine inspirations. He said to me: "I had inspired you to pray for these people: if you had done this, the evil would not have entered into them, causing so much damage". For example: a little girl was sexually assaulted

by her father: if I had not closed myself to the Holy Spirit, I would had listened to His Divine inspirations, and I would have prayed for them: so that he evil one would not have entered into that father, protected by the prayer, and that violence would not have happened, nor would have cause so much suffering. Or also, that young boy would not have committed suicide. The Lord continued saying to me: "If you might have prayed, that girl would not have aborted, that person would not be dead feeling herself abandoned by Me, in a hospital bed. If you would have prayed, I would have counseled you, so that you might have begun to help your brothers. I would have guided you! I would have led you to these people. So much sorrow in the world, and you could have helped!"

He showed me how many people suffer in the world, and how much I could have helped. Never did I permit that the Holy Spirit touch me, nor ever did I let myself be moved by the suffering of others. The Lord said to me: "Look at the suffering of my people, look how I needed to wound your family with cancer, so that you might be moved for those suffering the same sickness! You were moved for the sequestered; only after your husband himself was sequestered". And almost shouting: "But you, of stone, incapable to feeling love!"

To Conclude

I will try to explain how we see ourselves in the Book of Life.

I was very hypocritical, false. I was one of those who before the person I make eulogies, but behind their back I spoke about them badly; that outside they speak well, but inside you do not hear what they say. For example, I eulogized someone saying: "You are pretty, what a nice dress, it goes very well with you". But inside I was thinking how gross, you are ugly, and you believe to be the queen! In the Book of Life, you see all of this, with the difference that we see also the thoughts. All of my lies came to the light, to "living red", so evident that everyone could see. How many times I left in a hidden way from my mother, because she did not let me go anywhere, how many lies I invented: "Mamma, I have group work to do in the library". She believed me, and I went to see a pornographic film, or to the bar to get a beer with my girlfriends. And there is my mother there, now, seeing everything in the Book of Life. Now nothing was hidden. What shame I felt! What shame! At the time that my parents were poor, I brought to school, for brunch, a little milk and a banana. I ate the banana and I threw the pealing wherever I happened to be; it never came to my mind that someone could hurt themselves due to that banana pealing. The Lord made me to see, as a matter of fact, the consequences: who fell, who was hurt, I could have killed someone, with my recklessness and lack of mercy.

I saw, with great pain and shame, how only one time did I make a good confession, as an adult. It was when a lady gave me 4,500 pesos in change too much, in a supermarket in Bogotà. My father had taught us to be honest, and never to touch not even a penny of someone else's; I realized in the car the error, while I was going to my outpatient clinic, and I said to myself: "But look at this, that stupid person, that animal (it was like that I would talk), she gave me 4,500 pesos too much! Now I must go back! But looking in the rearview mirror, I saw the congested traffic, and said: "No! I am not going back; I do not want to be late and loose time, the worse for her who had been such an idiot." But I had remorse for

that money. Regarding this, my father had educated us well. Sunday I went to confession and said: "I accuse myself of having stolen 4,500 pesos, not having given them back; I kept them for myself!" I did not pay attention to what the priest said to me, but the evil one could not accuse me of being a thief!

But the Lord said to me: "It was a lack of charity to not give back the money, because for you 4,500 pesos was nothing, but for that woman it was food for three days". The saddest thing was to see how that woman suffered hunger for a couple of days, due to my fault, together with her two babies; like this the Lord showed me. When I do something, there are consequences of my acts, and those who suffer because of them: because our acts always have their consequences. That, which we do, but also that which we do not do, brings consequences for us and for the other! Everyone will see these consequences in the Book of Life. When the moment will arrive to appear before God for the judgment, you will see it, as I myself saw it. When my Book of Life was closed, imagine my sadness, my shame, the immense sorrow.

The Book of my life was closed in the most beautiful way. Notwithstanding my behavior, despite my sins, my trash, my indifference, and my horrible sentiments, the Lord sought me out even to the last instant: he always sent me instruments, people, he spoke to me, he shouted at me, he took things from me, he let me fall into disgrace in order to seek me, and that I might seek Him. He followed after me always, even to the last instant. Do you know who is our God and Father? He is a powerful God, in love, who begs next to each of us, so that we might convert. Instead, when things went badly, I would say: "God punished me, he condemned me!" Clearly it is not like that! Never does He condemn us: in fact, of my free arbitrary power, I chose freely who might be my father, and it was not God. I chose Satan as my father!

When I was struck by the lightning bolt, before taking me to the "Social Seguro", they took me to a public hospital, where there were many sick people, so many wounded, so much suffering, and there was not an available stretcher for me. And when those who brought me asked the doctors where they might be able to put me, they just said only: "Down there, down there!" And my rescuers: "But down there, where?" "Down there, on the floor!" But they did not want to leave me on the ground, because I was badly burned, and if I had contracted an infection, I would certainly have died. While I was in a corner, during those hours, the doctors looked at me with a face. It is that they could not leave someone that had a heart attack, for example, or was in a very grave condition, but with more possibility of surviving with respect to me, that I was instead totally burned like a "toast", and in all probability I would die.

But I was conscious, and very irritated, murmuring because the doctors did not come to me. But there was a moment in which I was calm, without complaining, because I saw Our Lord Jesus Christ, who was bent over and was very near to me, he touched my head with His hands, and he consoled me. Are you able to imagine this?! Can you imagine the tenderness?! I thought: is it a hallucination? How is it possible to see Our Lord here?! I closed the eyes, then I reopened them, and I continued to see him there! He said to me, with great tenderness: "You see, my little one, you are about to die! Feel the need of My

Mercy". Just imagine! And so he said: "Mercy! Mercy!", but in the meantime I thought: why mercy? What bad have I ever done?

I was not conscious of my errors, but it was clear to me that I was about to die, this yes! About this I was sad. "Alas, I am about to die!!! Alas, my diamond rings!!!" I immediately remembered my rings. I look, and I see the flesh of my fingers totally burned, as if they had exploded. But I said to myself: "I must take them off, cost what it may cost! Otherwise, they will have to break them, and they will lose their value". I did not think about anything else; I saw my fingers puffed up, and I thought only to take off my rings so that they might not break them! You cannot imagine what an unpleasant smell burnt flesh has. And the more I moved those rings, the more it stank. I felt that I would be crazy from the pain, but I insisted, and I said to myself: "No! No and no! I must succeed in this! I must succeed, because to me, nothing can beat me, and this flesh will not swell, no sir! I am taking off these rings from here, cost what it may, I will not die with them". When in the end I succeed to take them off, I remember suddenly: "Oh, no!!! I am about to die, and these nurses will steal my rings!" In the meantime, my brother-in-law arrives. I, very happy: "Save my rings!!!" I handed them over to him, who is a doctor, and it could not be otherwise: because otherwise he would not have touched them, but he would have thrown them away, and far away! In fact, they were burned, and with fragments of flesh attached. He said he would deliver them to Fernando, my husband, adding: "tell my sisters to take my children because, the poor ones, they will be without Mamma. In fact, I will not make it!" The worst thing was that I did not profit from those moments that Jesus offered to me, to ask Him Mercy and pardon. But how could I ask pardon, if I thought I did not have sins?! I believed myself to be a saint! When we feel we are "saints", it is then that we condemn ourselves.

When I had taken off the rings and had entrusted them to my brother-in-law, so that he might hand them over to my husband, I said to myself relieved: "Finally, now I can die!", and the last thought was: "Alas, with what money will they bury me, given that my banking account was in the red?"

God the Father loves everyone and each one, independently of the fact that we are good or bad; and with such intensity that, even to the last moment, he comes even to us with so much tenderness; he embraces us with all of His Love. He wants to save us, but if we do not welcome Him, if we do not ask Him pardon and mercy, recognizing our faults, he leaves us free to follow that which we have chosen. If ours had been a life without God, most likely in that moment we will refuse Him, and He will respect us. He does not oblige us to accept Him, and so one closes my Book of Life.

The Return

But when my Book of Life was closed, you cannot imagine how I felt: I was truly terrorized. I see myself with the head down, and I feel as if falling toward a pit. Then that thing is opened that seems like a hole, I fall inside, and terrorized I begin to cry out to all the saints to save me. You would not believe the quantity of saints that I began to name: St. Ambrose, St. Isidore, St. Augustine, etc. I did not even know how to recognize so many, as bad a Christian as I was! But when I finished the list of saints, I remained in silence... I felt an immense emptiness, a

pain and an enormous shame, and I realized that no one could help me! And I said to myself and all the people on the earth, "to think that I was a saint." To hope that I might die, in order to ask from me a grace. Where am I going, now?" I lifted up my eyes, and I met those of my mother. I felt so much sadness, a profound sorrow, because she would have wanted so much to carry me into the hands of God. With great confusion and suffering, I cried out to her: "Mamma, what a shame! I have condemned myself! Where am I going, I will never see you again!"

But in that moment, Jesus grants her a very beautiful grace: my mother was motionless, and God permits her to move the fingers, pointing them upwards, and inviting me to look up there: I look, and behold to come out of myself from the eyes of the crusts, frightfully painful. It was spiritual blindness which went away, and in that instant I saw there: a wonderful moment.

One day, one of my patients, said to me: "Doctor, I feel very, very much pain, much sadness, for you because you are too much of a materialist. But one day that you might find yourself in some affliction, or in a dangerous situation, whatever it might be, ask Jesus Christ that he might cure you with His Blood, and that you might ask Him for pardon: because never, never, will He abandon you, having paid the price of his own Blood for you".

And so, with great shame and immense sorrow, I began to cry out: "Lord! Jesus Christ, have compassion on me! Forgive me, Lord, forgive me! Give me a second chance!"

It was the most beautiful moment, most wonderful! I do not have words to describe it. Because Jesus bent down and pulled me out of that pit! He lifted me and brought me to a level place, and he said to me, with much love: "Yes, you will return, and you will have your second chance. Not because of the prayer of your family, because it is normal that they cry and shout out for you, but because of the intercession of all the people unrelated to your flesh and to your blood, that have cried, prayed, and lifted up their own heart with so much love for you". Do you know what I saw? I saw the great power of the prayer of intercession, brothers! Do you know how to be able to be always in the presence of the Lord? Pray every day for your children but pray also for the children of the people of the whole world! Pray for the others! In this way you will be in the presence of God, every day.

I saw how thousands and thousands of little flames of light went up, so beautiful, to the presence of the Lord; they were little white flames, stupendous, full of love. They were the prayers of so many, so many people, that were praying for me, that had been moved after having seen on TV and in the newspapers, what had happened to me, and that they were crying and offering Masses. The greatest gift that you can offer to someone is the Holy Mass. Nothing exists more efficacious, that can help someone, than a Holy Mass. It is also what God appreciates the most: to see His children intercede for their neighbors, and to help their own brother. The Holy Mass is not the work of man, but of God.

Among those little lights, though, there was an enormous one, very beautiful: a light much greater than all the others. You know, brothers, why I am now here? Why have I returned? Because in my land exists a saint. I looked with curiosity, in order to know who that person might be that loved me so much, and the Lord said to me: "That man that you see there is a person that loves you, much, and he does not even know you". He showed me that it had to do with a

poor peasant man, who lived in the mountains, in the Sierra Nevada of Saint Martha. This man was very poor; he did not have anything to eat. All of his harvest was burned, even the chickens that he had, had been stolen by the men of the "guerrilla warfare". These last ones, wanted even to take into their service his older son. This peasant man went all the way down to the village to go to Mass. The Lord made me pay attention to the words with which he prayed: "Lord, I love you! Thank you for health, thank you for my children! Thank you for all that you give me! Be praised, Glory to You Oh Lord!"

His prayer was only praise and rendering thanks to God! The Lord made me see how in the wallet he had a 5,000 pesos bill, and a 10,000 pesos bill, and this was all that he possessed! Do you know what he did? He gave the 10,000 bill at the offertory! I would put only a 5,000 pesos bill and that when someone gave me a false bill, at work!

He, instead, did not give the 5,000 bill, but the 10,000 bill, even though this money was all that he had! And he was not discontented, nor did he grumble due to his poverty, but he thanked and praised God! What an example, brothers! Afterwards, he went out of the church, he went to buy a piece of blue soap (washing soap); he wrapped it in a piece of newspaper ("O Spectator"), of the day before. There was the news of my accident, and the photograph where I appeared totally burned.

When this man sees the news, as he reads it slowly, being moved he cries so much, as if I were someone very dear to him, and prostrate with the face to the ground, he beseeches God with all of his heart, saying: "Father, my Lord, have compassion on this my little sister, save her, save her Lord! Lord, if you save her, if you save my little sister, I promise you to go to the "Sanctuary of Buda" to release the vow, but save her. Please, Lord, save her!" Think about it, that man so poor, who was not cursing, nor lamenting for suffering hunger with his family, but on the contrary was praising and thanking God. And with a capacity to love the neighbor so great that, even having nothing to eat, he was disposed to cross the Country in order to fulfill a promise, in favor of someone he did not even know!

The Lord said to me: "This is true love of neighbor! It is like this that you must love the neighbor." And it was there that he gave me this mission: "You will go back, to give your testimony, that you will repeat not 1000 times, but a 1000 x 1000. Woe to the one, listening to you, who will not change, because he will be judged with greater severity. And this applies also to you, in your second return, for the religious who are my priests, and for whoever else that does not listen to you: because there is no greater deaf person than the one who does not want to hear, nor a worse blind person than the one who does not want to see".

This, my dear brothers, is not a threat, on the contrary! The Lord does not need to threaten us. This is a second chance that I have, and it is also for you. This shows that God is in love with us, and puts before our eyes this mirror, which is I, Gloria Polo. Because God does not want that we condemn ourselves, but rather that we live with Him, in Paradise. But for this, we must let ourselves be transformed by Him. When our hour will arrive, to leave this world, also to each one of you will be opened the "Book of Life"; when you will die, all of you will pass through this moment, just as I passed through it. There, we will see exactly as now, with the difference that we will also see our thoughts and our sentiments,

our acts and their consequences, our omissions and consequences of them, all in the presence of God. But the most beautiful thing is that each one will see the Lord face to Face, that he asks us to convert ourselves: up to the last moment he asks us this, so that in truth we begin to be new creatures with Him, because without Him we could not do it!

Physical Recovery

When the Lord made me return, my kidneys did not function, nor did they do for me the dialysis because it was not worth the effort, from the moment that I was about to die. But suddenly, they began to function; the same for the lungs, and also the heart began to beat strongly. You can imagine the astonishment of the doctors! By then I did not need the machines!

I began my physical recovery, but I did not feel anything alive below, and after a month the doctors said to me: "Gloria, God is doing a miracle with you, because your skin has grown back over all the wounds. But as for your legs we cannot do anything. We must amputate them!" When they said this to me, I, who was a sportswoman, I remembered: 4 hours of daily acrobatics, for what? I thought only of fleeing from there, but I did not succeed, because the legs did not hold me up, and I fell. I was hospitalized on the 5th floor, and they took me to the 7th floor to stay there until the surgery; I found there a lady who had her legs already amputated, but they had to amputate them again, higher up. Seeing her, I thought that not even all the money in the world was sufficient to buy those wonderful things which are the legs. When they told me that they would amputate them, I felt a great sadness! Never had I thanked God for my legs, on the contrary: with the tendency that I had to get fat, I suffered hunger as a fool and I spent fortunes to be elegant. And now, I see my black legs, burned, without flesh, but for the first time I thank God to have them yet. "Lord, I thank you for my legs, and I ask you for the grace to leave them for me, so that I might be able to walk. I beg you, Lord, leave to me the legs!" And I immediately began to feel them: they were very black, without circulation, and from Friday to Monday, when they arrived, the doctors were surprised, because they were red and the circulation was back in place! Astonished, they touched me and they did not want to believe. I said to them: "Doctors, my legs hurt terribly, but I believe that there is no one in the world, so happy to feel pain in the legs, as I am in this moment!" The doctor on the 7th floor replied to me that never, in 38 years of service, had he seen anything similar.

The other two miracles that the Lord did for me, was the breasts and the ovaries. The doctor had said that I could no longer have babies. I was happy, because I thought that God had given me a natural method to not get pregnant. But, one and a half years later, I see that my breasts began to grow, to expand and to be reformed. I was amazed, and when I went to the doctor, he said to me that I was expecting a baby! And with these breasts I nursed my daughter!!! To God nothing is impossible!

Conclusion

May the Lord Bless everyone, immensely; Glory to God and Glory to Our Lord Jesus Christ. May God bless you! I present to you my daughter. This child is a miracle! She is the daughter that God gave me, with the burned ovaries! That which for the doctors was totally impossible! But for God, nothing is impossible!!! Here she is, her name is Maria José!

Gloria Polo actually lives in Colombia and continues to exercise her profession. She was left with enormous scares, but she leads a normal life, and now she is a woman of great faith! She travels much; she transmits her testimony to thousands of people and fulfills the mission that God had confided to her. (She has the authorization of the Church to do so). This is a translation from the Italian translation of this testimony. The Italian translation is a translation of a CD (in Spanish), in which is engraved the testimony that she gave in a church in Caracas (Venezuela), May 5, 2005.

http://testimony-polo.blogspot.com/
Friday, November 20, 2009 The Testimony of Gloria Polo
If you would like something nice and spiritual each month, send me an Email. Rev. Joseph Dwight: josephdwight57@gmail.com.
To see the DOCUMENTS REGARDING ECCLESIAL APPROVAL of the TESTIMONY OF GLORIA POLO, or to read other articles such as:
"A DAMNED PRIEST WARNS ABOUT HELL"
"LIKES AND DISLIKES OF THE DEVIL" Visit: http://josephdwight.blogspot.com

Mary's Call to Repentance

- Be reconciled with the Lord: go to confession at least once a month
- Attend mass as often as possible: at least every Sunday
- Say the Rosary and the Chaplet of Divine Mercy daily
- Fast twice a week on Wednesday and Friday
- Spend time with Jesus in the Blessed Sacrament
- Read the Scripture daily
- Perform acts of Charity and Mercy daily
- Consecrate your life to Jesus through Mary

At the Hour of Your Death

Ref. MMP:481

"How many times, as you recite the holy rosary, have you repeated this prayer to me: 'Holy Mary, Mother of God, pray for us sinners, now and at the hour of our death!' This is an invocation which I listen to with great joy, and it is always heard by me. If, as Mother, I am close to each one of my children at the hour of death, I am especially close to you who, through your consecration, have always lived in the secure refuge of my Immaculate Heart.

At the hour of your death, I am close to you, with the splendor of my glorified body; I receive your souls into my motherly arms, and I bring them before my Son, Jesus, for his particular judgment.

Think of how joyful must be the meeting of Jesus with those souls who are presented to Him by his very own Mother! This is because I cover them with my beauty; I give them the perfume of my holiness, the innocence of my purity, the white robe of my charity; and where there remains some stain, I run my motherly hand over it to wipe it away and to give you that brightness which makes it possible for you to enter into the eternal happiness of paradise.

Blessed are those who die close to your heavenly Mother. Yes, blessed, because they die in the Lord, they will find rest from their labors, and their good deeds will follow them.

My beloved ones and children consecrated to my Immaculate Heart, today I invite you to enter into a great intimacy with me during your life, if you wish to experience the great joy of seeing me close to you and of welcoming your souls into my motherly arms, at the hour of your death."

An act of Consecration to Jesus through Mary

According to: Saint Louis Marie de Montfort

Eternal and incarnate Wisdom, most lovable and adorable Jesus, true God and true man, only Son of the eternal Father and of Mary always Virgin, I adore you profoundly, dwelling in the splendor of your Father from all eternity, and in the virginal womb of Mary, you're most worthy Mother, at the time of your Incarnation.

I thank you for having emptied yourself in assuming the condition of a slave to set me free from the cruel slavery of the evil one.

I praise and glorify you for having willingly chosen to obey Mary, your holy Mother, in all things, so that through her I may be your faithful slave of love.

But I must confess that I have not kept the vows and promises which I made to you so solemnly at my baptism. I have not fulfilled my obligations, and I do not deserve to be called your child or even your slave.

Since I cannot lay claim to anything except what merits your rejection and displeasure, I dare no longer approach the holiness of your majesty on my own. That is why I turn to the intercession and the mercy of your holy Mother, whom you yourself have given me to mediate with you. Through her I hope to obtain from you contrition and pardon for my sins, and that Wisdom, whom I desire, to dwell in me always. _

I turn to you, then, Mary immaculate, living tabernacle of God, in whom Eternal Wisdom willed to receive the adoration of both men and angels. I greet you as Queen of Heaven and Earth, for all this is under God has been made subject to your sovereignty. I called upon you, the unfailing refuge of sinners, confident in your mercy that has never forsaken anyone.

Grant my desire for divine Wisdom and, in support of my petition, accept the promises and the offering of myself which I now make, conscious of my unworthiness.

I_____(your name) an unfaithful sinner, renew and ratify today _____(date) through you my baptismal promises. I renounce forever Satan, his empty promises, and his evil designs, and I give myself completely to Jesus Christ, the incarnate Wisdom, to carry my cross after him for the rest of my life, and to be more faithful to him than I have been till now.

This day, the whole court of heaven as witness, I choose you, Mary, as my Mother and Queen. I surrender and consecrate myself to you, body and soul, as your slave, with all that I possess, both spiritual and material, even including the value of all my good actions, past, present, and to come. I give you the full right to dispose of me and all that belongs to me, without any reservations, in whatever way you please, for the greater glory of God in time and throughout eternity.

Accept, gracious Virgin, this little offering of my slavery to honor and imitate the obedience which Eternal Wisdom willingly chose to have towards you, his Mother. I wish to acknowledge the authority which both of you have over this pitiful sinner. By it, I wish also to thank God for the privileges bestowed on you by the Blessed Trinity. I declared that for the future, I will try to honor and obey you in all things, as your true slave of love.

O admirable Mother, present me to your dear Son as his slave, now and for always, so that he who redeemed me through you, will now receive me through you.

Mother of Mercy, grant me the favor of obtaining the true wisdom of God, and so make me one of those whom you love, teach and guide, whom you nourish and protect as your children and slaves.

Virgin most faithful, make me in everything so committed a disciple, imitator, and slave of Jesus, your Son, incarnate Wisdom, that I may become, through your intercession and example, fully mature with the fullness which Jesus possessed on earth, and with the fullness of his glory in heaven. Amen.

Note: Once you have made this consecration, always try to remember the date so that you can renew the consecration each year on your anniversary. It is also recommended to use a feast day of our Lady which falls on: Feb 2nd, March 25th, April 28th, May 31st, Aug 15th, Dec 8th.

References:

Bertha Dudde

At the request of many friends Bertha Dudde wrote the following biography in 1953: I have been writing messages received through the inner Word since June 15, 1937. In answer to the many requests of my friends I will give you a picture of my earthly life, a short explanation of what I received spiritually, and my own feelings about all this.

I was born April 1, 1891, the second oldest daughter of an artist of Liegnitz in Silesia, today's Poland. I had a normally peaceful childhood, with six sisters in our parent's home. I learned the cares of life at an early age. The desire to make money to help my parents made me learn the trade of a seamstress. As the financial needs of my parents continued, so did the burden, and in this way, I made myself useful.

My parents belonged to different denominations. Father was a Protestant - Mother a Catholic. We children were brought up in the Catholic faith but never experienced pressure or force to follow the practices of the church so that each child in later years was able to pursue their own chosen course.

I myself was religious but could not accept the doctrine of the Catholic system although I respected the church. I could not represent something on the outside that my inner conscience had not accepted. So, I did not continue to attend church, heard little preaching and had no knowledge of the Bible. I did not read any religious books or scientific literature and did not join any other group or religious sect.

Anyone knowing the Catholic teaching knows what a conscious struggle one finds himself in when he wants to release himself from it. I was not spared from this either. But the question as to what is the Truth and where it is to be found, remained.

Often when I prayed the Lord's Prayer, I would beseech the Lord to allow me to find His kingdom. This prayer was answered in June 15, 1937, as I prayed quietly and waited for the inner voice. In this attitude I persisted often, for a wonderful peace came over me and thoughts which came to my heart, not my head, gave me comfort and strength….

Jesus Christ says, "I am the way, the truth and the life". The way we humans should take is the way of love which was exemplified by Jesus Christ, and which leads to eternal life in His presence. The truth we should know is given to us through the Word of God where God Himself in Jesus Christ imparted to us through his disciples and through His present-day messengers. He says Himself 'I will pour out My Spirit on all flesh; and servants and handmaidens shall prophesy'.

One of these present-day servants and handmaidens is Bertha Dudde, through whom God 'pours out His Spirit', that is, through whom we receive His

Word in its purest form in order to recognize the meaning and purpose of earthly life and His plan of Salvation. It is now our wish to share and distribute the "Word of God" received through Bertha Dudde. For this reason, we are making the transcripts of the individual messages available to you for reading and to inform you where you can order copies of the texts.

These texts have been printed in book-format since 1993 with the help of many friends and were passed on to everyone who is interested. Over the years they have demonstrated that people following the way of Christ have found them particularly helpful. But it also becomes evident that it is not a feasible path without the Commandments of Love given to us by Jesus Christ. Why? Because we are only able to understand His language if we live a life of love; with the two volumes 'Return to God' we offer you a small overview of the complete works. After that, anyone who sincerely would like to take the path of return should let himself be guided by the messages in the books that were given to us by the Father through Bertha Dudde.

Note: In God's grace people are led anew to the Gospel which emphatically points out the purpose of man's being for the merciful love of God seeks to save all who still can be saved before the turning point comes, And it will come. The end-time which seers and prophets have proclaimed is now here. According to the revelations given to me, the Lord does not differentiate between His children. 'Come ye all to Me' sounds His call and blessed is he who hears His call and follows Him. God loves His children. He wants to make them all happy, even when they do not want to know Him.

Ref: wed-site- http://en.bertha-dudde.org/index.php?id=138
Recorded November 22, 1953
Bertha Dudde

Jakob Lorber

Jakob Lorber was a Christian mystic and visionary from the Duchy of Styria, who promoted liberal Universalism. He referred to himself as "God's scribe". He wrote that on 15 March 1840 he began hearing an "inner voice" from the region of his heart and thereafter transcribed what it said. By the time of his death 24 years later he had written manuscripts equivalent to more than 10,000 pages in print.

Very few people know that from 1851 to 1864 Jesus gave a much more complete story of the events that happened during His last 3 years before His crucifixion. A much more complete Gospel than what we can find in the Bible. This was revealed by Jesus Christ Himself to a man He choose, namely the Austrian musician Jakob Lorber who dedicated the last 24 years of his life in the service of our Lord by writing down what He dictated to him through the inner word. He heard the words very clearly in the region of his heart and wrote them faithfully down. The Great Gospel of John revealed to Jakob Lorber consists of 10 volumes with about 250 chapters each. Interrupted in 1864 by the death of Jakob Lorber the work was completed in 1894 by Leopold Engel whom the Lord called to

write volume 11. The last volume covers the period from the Last Supper to the Resurrection. Library AH (abundanthope.org)

Maria Valtorta

Her activity as a writer reached intensity from 1943 to 1947, and continued, diminishing progressively, until 1953. Maria wrote in time of war and in very difficult conditions, including evacuation, whereby on the 24th of April 1944 she was obliged to move to St. Andrew of Compito (section of the borough of Capannori in the province of Lucca). She returned to her dear home at Viareggio on the 23rd of December that same year.

She used to write in an almost sitting position in bed, in ordinary school notebooks, which she supported with a piece of cardboard held on her bent knees. She would write at any time, by day or by night, even when she was exhausted by fatigue or tormenting pains. She wrote effortlessly, naturally, and without revision. If interrupted, she could leave off writing and then resume later on with ease. She did not consult books, except for the Bible; and the catechism of Pope Pius X.

During her continuous work, her living and constant prayer, her suffering embraced with the joy of the redeemers, Maria begged God not to concede her external signs of intense participation in Christ, Who used her as faithful "spokesman" and "pen" manifesting Himself in the richness of the "visions" and in the depth of the "dictations."

The notebooks written by Maria Valtorta include almost fifteen thousand pages. Little less than two-thirds of this astounding literary production concerns the monumental work on the Life of Jesus Christ (THE POEM OF THE MAN-GOD, five hardcover volumes in English, approximately 4,200 pages. The current new work in Italian, French, and Spanish is THE GOSPEL AS REVEALED TO ME, in ten smaller volumes). The minor works include extensive commentaries on biblical texts, doctrinal lessons, histories of the first Christians and martyrs, and pious compositions. This work was given to us out of love for those who love the Lord, and to provide us with a river of truth in a world saturated with heresies. Maria Valtorta (born on March 14, 1897, died Oct 12, 1961)

[Note: Bishop Roman Danylak, Bishop of Titula Nyssa, makes the following comment: Valtorta is one of the most outstanding manifestations of the prophetic charism in our own times. Many consider her to be one of the greatest mystics in the history of the Church. Ref: www.sacredheartofjesus.ca/MariaValtorta]

Referance Material

Reference Key

MV - Maria Valtorta
MV PMG – Maria Valtorta - Poem of the Man God
MV N 1943, 1944, 1945-50 – Maria Valtorta Note Books
MV ET – Maria Valtorta, End Times
MV ESP – Maria Valtorta, Lessons on the Epistle of St Paul to the Romans
MV Vol. 1-5 Maria Valtorta - Poem of the Man God
MMP (chapter) – Marian Movement of Priest, Rev Don Stefano Gobbi
MVVS – Maria Valtorta, Victim Souls
MDM - Maria of Divine Mercy
TLIG – True Life in God, Vassula Ryden
BD – Bertha Dudde
JL – Jakob Lorber

Reference Books

•David Carlin, **The Decline & Fall of the Catholic Church in America**, Sophia Institute Press 2003
•David Michael Lindsey, **The Woman and the Dragon Apparitions of Mary**, Pelican Publishing Company 2000
•Eduardo Siguenza, **John Paul II, The Pope Who Understood Fatima**, Queenship Publishing Company 2007
•Francis Johnston, **Fatima The Great Sign**, Tan Books and Publishers, Inc.1980
•John R. Willis, S.J., **The Teachings of the Church Fathers**, Ignatius Press 2002
•James P. Mahoney, D.D. Vicar General, NY, **The Liturgy of the Hours,** Catholic Book Publication 1975
•Maria Valtorta, **The Book of Azariah**, Centro Editorial Valtortiano srl., 1993
•Maria Valtorta, **The End Times**, Editions Paulines 1994
•Maria Valtorta, **Lessons on the Epistle of St. Paul to the Romans**, Centro Editoriale Valtortiano 2007
•Maria Valtorta, **The Poem of the Man God Vol 1-5**, Centro Editorial Valtortiano srl, 1986
•Maria Valtorta, **Note books 1943,1944,1945-1950**, Centro Editorial Valtoriano srl. 1985
•Rev. Albert J. Hebert, S. M., **Mary, Why Do You Cry?,** Rev. Albert J Hebert, S.M., 1985
•Rev. Don Stefano Gobbi, **To The Priests, Our lady's Beloved Sons,** The Marian Movement of Priests 1998
•Rev. Francis C. Kelley, D.D., Bishop of Oklahoma - **The Primitive Church**- Tan Books And Publishing, Inc 1980
•Rev. Gabriel M. Roschini, O.S.M., **The Virgin Mary in the Writings of Maria Valtorta**, Kolbe's Publications Inc. (Canada) and Centro Editorials Valtortiano Srl. (Italy) 1989, 1990
•Rev. George W. Kosicki, CSB, **Now is the Time for Mercy**, Marian Press 2005
•Rev. Herman Bernard Kramer – The Book of Destiny, Tan Books and Publishers, Inc. Rockford, Ill 61105
•Rev. J.L. Menezes, **The Life and Religion of Mohammed,** Roman Catholic Books, Harrison, NY. 1912
•Rev. Joseph Cardinal Ratzinger, **Catechism of the Catholic Church**, Costello Publishing Company 1992
•Rev. John Laux, M.A., **Church History**, Tan Books and Publishers, Inc. 1989
•Rev. George W. Kosicki, CSB, **Now is the Time for Mercy**, Marian Press 2005
•Roy H. Schoeman, **Salvation is from The Jews**, Roy Schoeman 2003
•Saint John of the Cross, **The Collected Works of Saint John of the Cross**, ICS Publications

Institute of Carmelite Studies 1991
•Saint Louis-Marie Grignion DeMontfort, **True Devotion To Mary**, Tan Books and Publishers,
Inc.1985
•Saint Maria Faustina, **Divine Mercy in My Soul Diary**, Congregation of Marians 1987
•Saint Thomas Aquinas, **Summa Theologiae**, Ave Maria Press, Inc. 1991
•Vassula Ryden, **True Life in God**, The Foundation for True Life in God 2006
• Steve Erwin, **The Boy who met Jesus,** Segatashya of Kibeho**,** Immaculee Illbagiza 2011.

Reference Web-Sites

www.tlig.org True Life in God, Vassula Ryden
www.thedivinemercy.org Divine Mercy HQ
www.mmp-usa.net Marian Movement of Priest USA HQ
www.fathercorapi.com Father John Corapi SOLT Catholic teachings/letters
www.christinagallagher.org Christine Gallagher messages
www.medjugorje.com Medjugorje activity center and messages
www.vatican.va Vatican web-site for Catholic information
www.michaeljurnal.org Michael published news letters - signs of the times
www.garabandal.org End time secrets will be revealed in Garabandal
www.circleofprayer.com God the Father Devotions
www.divinewill.org Lucia Piccarreta Divine Will messages and teachings
www.johnleary.com Warnings and Prophesies
www.thewarningsecondcoming.com Maria Divine Mercy
www.wordsfromjesus.com Jennifer
http://en.bertha-dudde.org The Word of God
www.conchiglia.us/UK/UK_C_lettere/UK_Conchiglia_VATICANO.htm Conchiglia

About the Work

MV Vol5: 951

Jesus is speaking: "Rise, Come to My Gift. 'Take and eat, Take and drink,' I said to the apostles.

If you only knew the gift of God and who it is that is saying to you: 'give me a drink', you would have been the one to ask, and He would have given you living water, I said to the Samaritan woman.

I tell you these words. I offer you this food and drink of living water. My Word is Life. And I want you in the Life, with me. And I multiply My word to counterbalance the miasmata of Satan as they destroy the vital strength of the spirit.

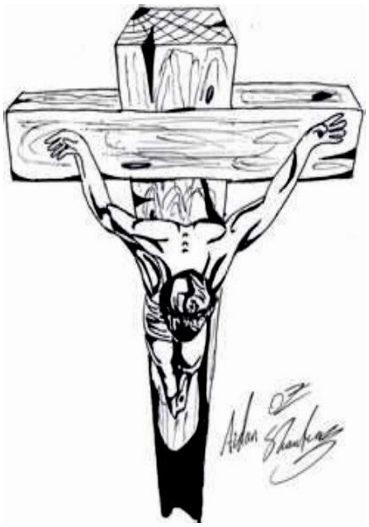
Do not reject Me. I am anxious to give Myself to you, because I love you. And My anxiety is inextinguishable. I ardently wish to communicate Myself to you to make you ready for the banquet of the celestial nuptials. And you need Me in order not to languish, to dress yourselves with dresses adorned for the Wedding of the Lamb, for the great feast of God after overcoming the afflictions in this desert full of snares, of brambles and snakes, which is the Earth, to pass through flames without suffering damage, to tread on reptiles and have to take poisons without dying, as you have Me in you.

And I also say to you: 'Take,' do take this work and '*do not seal it'* but read it and have it read '*because the time is close*' and let those who are holy become holier. (John, Revelation, 22:10)

May the grace of your Lord Jesus Christ be with all those who in this book see an approach of Mine and urge it to be accomplished, to their defense, with the cry of Love: 'Come, Lord Jesus.'

I will always be with you because it is pleasant to Me to be with those who love Me."

"I am with you always, even unto the end of the world"



"All the strands of this Mission are being drawn together to form a pattern. Then, when the various parts are linked and fitted together, like the pieces of a jigsaw, when all the pieces begin to merge, the final picture will become clear."

Ref: MDM message Jan 24th, 2014

Jesus is speaking: "And I say to you: 'Take,' do take this work and '*do not seal it'* but read it and have it read '*because the time is close*' and let those who are holy become holier. (John, Revelation, 22:10)

May the grace of your Lord Jesus Christ be with all those who in this book see an approach of Mine and urge it to be accomplished, to their defense, with the cry of Love: 'Come, Lord Jesus.'

I will always be with you because it is pleasant to Me to be with those who love Me." MV Vol5: 951

JMJ